

THE ATHENÆUM
PRESS SERIES

1.20

11

Library of Marjorie Wright Armstrong
Tufts 1907.

Nov. 22, 1905.

THE ATHENÆUM PRESS SERIES

G. L. KITTRIDGE AND C. T. WINCHESTER

GENERAL EDITORS

Series Announcement



THE "Athenæum Press Series" includes the choicest works of English literature in editions carefully prepared for the use of schools, colleges, libraries, and the general reader. Each volume is edited by some scholar who has made a special study of an author and his period. The Introductions are biographical and critical. In particular they set forth the relation of the authors to their times and indicate their importance in the development of literature. A Bibliography and Notes accompany each volume.

Athenæum Press Series

SPECIMENS

OF THE

PRE-SHAKSPEREAN DRAMA

With an Introduction, Notes, and a Glossary

BY

JOHN MATTHEWS MANLY

PROFESSOR IN BROWN UNIVERSITY

VOL. II

Tragedy, comedy, history, pastoral, pastoral-comical,
historical-pastoral, tragical-historical, tragical-
comical-historical-pastoral, scene individable,
or poem unlimited.

GINN & COMPANY

BOSTON · NEW YORK · CHICAGO · LONDON

PR

1261

M3

v.2

COPYRIGHT, 1897, BY

JOHN MATTHEWS MANLY

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

55.10

The Athenæum Press

GINN & COMPANY, PROPRIETORS, BOSTON, U.S.A.

PREFATORY NOTE.

THE principles followed in printing these texts have already been stated in the Preface to vol. I, but it seems desirable to repeat some of them here.

Aside from the use of modern conventions in typography, punctuation, and capitals, and the general disregard of long *s* (which is reproduced only occasionally, and then in a footnote), no alteration of the original texts has been admitted without a definite indication. The most general of these indications are the use of italics for expanded contractions (which are not very common in this volume) and the use of square brackets to enclose letters or words added to the original text. In instances in which these general indications are inappropriate the alteration is recorded in a footnote.

The titlepages of the plays, it will be seen, preserve the old spelling, line division, and variation of typography, but none of them is a facsimile in the proper sense of the word. One of them, in fact, — *Cambises*, — may possibly bear little resemblance to the original in typographical appearance, though in other respects it is believed to be correct. The others I believe to be essentially correct in even this respect; but the only ones for which I can vouch with the confidence derived from comparing them myself with the originals are *Campaspe* and *David and Bethsabe*, and they are not exactly facsimiles, but, as it were, translations of ancient typography into modern. Elsewhere in the book no attempt is made to follow the original in the choice of type, except in certain passages of which special mention is made in the footnotes.

The square brackets mentioned above are most frequently used to enclose headings, stage-directions, and lists of *dramatis personae*. The page-headings of the volume, however, though not

enclosed in brackets, are not the original headings, as may be learned more definitely from the statements accompanying *Cam-paspe* and *David and Bethsabe*. In view of the importance of the original stage-directions for the study of the practice of the ancient stage, special pains has been taken to secure accuracy in printing these original directions and in placing the brackets, which indicate additions from whatever source. Between my indications and those of some of those preceding editors who use the same convention a good many discrepancies exist. In only a few instances has it seemed desirable to affirm in a footnote that I have observed the discrepancy; but the benevolent reader may be assured that I have not neglected, as an aid to accuracy in this respect, to read the proof-sheets with the editions of previous editors as well as with the copies made for me from the originals. As the brackets indicate, the old copies usually do not contain a list of *dramatis personae*. But, as the making of such a list is a purely mechanical matter, performed usually by the first modern editor who happened to print the play, I have not credited these lists to their makers, even when adopted by me without modification. In like manner, I have usually omitted to record the authors of bracketed stage-directions.

In recording emendations I have not added to the name of the originator the names of his followers, except for special reasons, as, for instance, when it is proper that the reader should be informed as to the balance of authority. In recording the statements of previous editors in regard to the readings of the original, I have, except in cases of disagreement, omitted as of no authority the name of an editor who clearly follows one of his predecessors without collating or with a merely perfunctory collation. The extent to which variants of spelling are recorded is determined by such various reasons that the reader must be referred to the notes themselves for information. Occasionally, in notes in which variation of spelling is not the matter of record, I have coupled a modern edition with an old one, giving the spelling of the old edition only, and leaving the reader to modernize.

In some instances I shall certainly seem to many to have been over-conservative in refusing to admit to the text various emenda-

tions in metre, spelling, syntax, and vocabulary. I may plead, in general, that these emendations are easily accessible in the footnotes, and that I feared to overstep the bound separating the functions of an editor of texts from those of literary adviser to the authors. More specifically, I should reply that by far the larger part of the emendations here in question belong either to the class of the unnecessary or to that of the dangerous. The practice of normalizing Elizabethan spelling, syntax, and blank verse has been almost as great a hindrance to students of language and versification as the introduction of unindicated alterations in stage-directions has been to students of stage history; and occasionally it has given rise to misconceptions in literary questions as well. As to vocabulary, experience has amply demonstrated that there exist in the limbo of the footnote enough examples of more than one word and form discarded as corruptions to establish their legitimacy and propriety. And, finally, a reason, perhaps of itself sufficient, for keeping the original text in these doubtful cases is that few readers will consult footnotes so long as the text presents no difficulty or irregularity, whereas almost every one will heed the warning of the index figure when the text halts; and thus, in the long run, the student will by this method become acquainted with the arguments on both sides and competent to judge whether such irregularities ought to be retained or removed.

To Professor Kittredge I am again indebted for aid in reading the proofs, in establishing and punctuating the text, and in interpreting obscure passages. The footnotes record only a small part of my obligations to him.

J. M. M.

PROVIDENCE, Nov. 15, 1897.

CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

PART VII.

	PAGE
ROISTER DOISTER. By Nicholas Udall	3
GAMMER GURTONS NEDLE. By Mr. S., Master of Arts	93

PART VIII.

CAMBISES. By Thomas Preston	159
GORBODUC; OR, FERREX AND PORREX. By Thomas Sackville and Thomas Norton	211
CAMPASPE. By John Lyly	273
JAMES THE FOURTH. By Robert Greene	327
DAVID AND BETHSABE. By George Peele	419
THE SPANISH TRAGEDIE. By Thomas Kyd	487

PART VII.

Up to 15 yrs. ago this play supposed to have been given in Eton.

Plays were acted here during Thomas holidays.

The play is letter which can be read two different ways, according as you punctuate it.

Thos. Wilson who wrote Rhetoric printed it in Rhet. and said W. wrote it. 1st. edition of Rhet. 1550-2, didn't appear. ^{2nd. edition, 1551-2} 3rd. edition, 1553-4, letter appears.

Date of play betw. 1550-1554.

Date and play seems to be W. School. At close of play an address to Queen. Price. characters each say two lines.

1553-59 Queen Mary ruled.

Some say ending written by some one else than Hall. If play all written at once, Queen was Mary. 3rd. Edit. of Rhet. 1553-4.

This play was given here. also at Rhye Manor and Rotherbury High School.

Play not very dramatic.

Sources of play.

I st. Eng. Comedy. One original
copy of play, Eton college.

Given during time of author's
connection with Eton, 1534-1541,
Head master.

John Leyland + Udall, pageant.
next year, another play.

Dismissed from Eton.

Pleased reigning dynasty, whether
Catholic or Protestant.

ROISTER DOISTER.

BY

NICHOLAS UDALL.

This play presented when he was
perveyor of dramatic entertainment
to Queen Mary. Presented in school
written under exceptional circumstances
to be given to scholars.

After time he was head master
of Westminster School. 1555. (1553?)

1556 died.

This play written 1554.

3

Decided by play itself.

The text is based on Arber's reprint of the unique copy of the old edition. In the footnotes, A. indicates this reprint; C. indicates the edition by W. D. Cooper (Shakespeare Society, 1847). As in vol. I, I have disregarded the punctuation and capitals of the original.

This play seems to have been first printed in 1566, ten years after the death of the author. Whether the extant copy belongs to the first edition cannot be determined, as it lacks both titlepage and colophon.

[*Dramatis Personae.*

RALPH ROISTER DOISTER, *a vain-glorious gull.*

MATHEW MERYGREEKE, *a parasite.*

GAWYN GOODLUCK, *affianced to Dame Custance.*

TRISTRAM TRUSTIE, *his friend.*

DOBINET DOUGHTIE }
HARPAX } *servants to Roister Doister.*

TOM TRUPENIE, *servant to Dame Custance.*

SYM SURESBY, *servant to Goodluck.*

A Scrivener.

Musicians.

DAME CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE, *a widow.*

MARGERIE MUMBLECRUST, *her nurse.*

TIBET TALKAPACE }
ANNOT ALYFACE } *her maids.*

SCENE: *England. A street or field near Dame Custance's house.*]

[ROISTER DOISTER.]

The Prologue.

What creature is in health, eyther yong or olde,
But som mirth with modestie wil be glad to vse?
As we in thys enterlude shall now vnfolde,
Wherin all scurilitie we vtterly refuse,
Auoiding such mirth wherin is abuse,
Knowing nothing more comendable for a mans recreation
Than mirth which is vsed in an honest fashion : 7

For mirth prolongeth lyfe and causeth health ;
Mirth recreates our spirites and voydeth pensiuenesse ;
Mirth increaseth amitie, not hindring our wealth ;
Mirth is to be vsed both of more and lesse,
Being mixed with vertue in decent comlynesse, —
As we trust no good nature can gainsay the same :
Which mirth we intende to vse, auoidyng all blame. 14

The wyse poets long time heretofore
Vnder merrie comedies secretes did declare,
Wherein was contained very vertuous lore,
With mysteries and forewarnings very rare.
Suche to write neither Plautus nor Terence dyd spare,
Whiche among the learned at this day beares the bell :
These with such other therein dyd excell. 21

Our comedie, or enterlude, which we intende to play
Is named Royster Doyster in-deede,
Which against the vayne-glorious doth inuey,
Whose humour the roysting sort continually doth feede.
Thus by your pacience we intende to procede
In this our enterlude by Gods leaue and grace ;
And here I take my leaue for a certaine space. 28

FINIS.

Actus j. Scæna j.

MATHEWE MERYGREEKE. *He entreth singing.*

[M. MERY.] As long lyueth the mery man, they say,
 As doth the sory man, and longer by a day.
 Yet the grassehopper, for all his sommer pipyng,
 Sterueth in winter wyth hungrie gripyng.
 Therefore an-other sayd sawe doth men aduise 5
 That they be together both mery and wise.
 Thys lesson must I practise, or else ere long
 Wyth mee, Mathew Merygreeke, it will be wrong.
 In-deede men so call me, for, by Him that vs bought,
 What-euer chaunce betide, I can take no thought. 10
 Yet wisdom woulde that I did my-selfe bethinke
 Where to be prouided this day of meate and drinke ;
 For know ye, that, for all this merie note of mine,
 He might appose me now that should aske where I dine.
 My lyuing lieth heere and there, of Gods grace, — 15
 Sometime wyth this good man, sometye in that place,
 Sometime Lewis Loytrer biddeth me come neere,
 Somewhyles Watkin Waster maketh vs good cheere,
 Sometime Dauy Diceplayer, when he hath well cast,
 Keepeth reuell-route as long as it will last, 20
 Sometime Tom Titiuile maketh vs a feast,
 Sometime with Sir Hugh Pye I am a bidden gueast,
 Sometime at Nichol Neuerthriues I get a soppe,
 Sometime I am feasted with Bryan Blinkinsoppe,
 Sometime I hang on Hankyn Hoddydodies sleeue ; 25
 But thys day on Ralph Royster Doysters, by hys leeu,
 For truely of all men he is my chiefe banker,
 Both for meate and money, and my chiefe shootanker.
 For, sooth Roister Doister in that he doth say,
 And, require what ye will, ye shall haue no nay. 30
 But now of Roister Doister somewhat to expresse,
 That ye may esteeme him after hys worthinesse!

In these twentie townes, and seke them throughout,
 Is not the like stocke, whereon to graffe a loute.
 All the day long is he facing and craking 35
 Of his great actes in fighting and fraymaking ;
 But, when Roister Doister is put to his prooffe,
 To keepe the Queenes peace is more for his behoofe.
 If any woman smyle or cast on hym an eye,
 Vp is he to the harde eares in loue by-and-by, 40
 And in all the hotte haste must she be hys wife,
 Else farewell hys good days, and farewell his life!
 Maister Raufe Royster Doister is but dead and gon
 Excepte she on hym take some compassion.
 Then chiefe of counsell must be Mathew Merygreeke : 45
 "What if I for mariage to suche an one seeke?"
 Then must I sooth it, what-euer it is ;
 For what he sayth or doth can not be amisse.
 Holde vp his yea and nay, be his nowne white sonne,
 Praysè and rouse him well, and ye haue his heart wonne ; 50
 For so well liketh he his owne fonde fashions
 That he taketh pride of false commendations.
 But such sporte haue I with him as I would not leese
 Though I should be bounde to lyue with bread and cheese.
 For exalt hym, and haue hym as ye lust, in-deede, — 55
 Yea, to hold his finger in a hole for a neede.
 I can with a worde make him fayne or loth,
 I can with as much make him pleased or wroth,
 I can, when I will, make him mery and glad,
 I can, when me lust, make him sory and sad, 60
 I can set him in hope and eke in dispaire,
 I can make him speake rough, and make him speake faire.
 But I maruell I see hym not all thys same day,
 I wyll seke him out. — But, loe! he commeth thys way!
 I haue yond espied hym sadly comming, 65
 And in loue, for twentie pounce, by hys glommyng!

Actus j. Scæna ij.

[Enter] RAFE ROISTER DOISTER. MATHEW MERYGREEKE [*pretends not to see him*].

R. ROYSTER. Come, death, when thou wilt, I am weary
of my life!

M. MERY. I tolde you, I, we should wowe another wife!

R. ROYSTER. Why did God make me suche a goodly
person?

M. MERY. He is in by the weke, we shall haue sport
anon.

R. ROYSTER. And where is my trustie friende, Mathew
Merygreeke? 5

M. MERY. I wyll make as I sawe him not; he doth me
seeke.

R. ROISTER. I haue hym espyed, me thinketh; yond is
hee.

Hough, Mathew Merygreeke, my friend, a worde with thee!

M. MERY. I wyll not heare him, but make as I had
haste.—

Farewell, all my good friendes, the tyme away doth waste, 10
And the tide, they say, tarieth for no man!

R. ROISTER. Thou must with thy good counsell helpe me
if thou can.

M. MERY. God keepe thee, worshypfull Maister Roister
Doister!

And fare-well the¹ lustie Maister Roister Doister!

[*Pretending to go.*]

R. ROYSTER. I muste needes speake with thee a worde or
twaine. 15

M. MERY. Within a month or two I will be here againe;
Negligence in greate affaires, ye knowe, may marre all.

R. ROISTER. Attende vpon me now, and well rewarde
thee I shall.

¹ *Qy.* the[e].

M. MERY. I haue take my leaue, and the tide is well spent.

R. ROISTER. I die except thou helpe; I pray thee, be content!

20

Doe thy parte wel nowe, and aske what thou wilt,
For without thy aide my matter is all spilt.

M. MERY. Then to serue your turne I will some paines take

And let all myne owne affaires alone for your sake.

R. ROYSTER. My whole hope and trust resteth onely in thee.

25

M. MERY. Then can ye not doe amisse, what-euer it bee.

R. ROYSTER. Gramercies, Merygreeke! most bounde to thee I am.

M. MERY. But vp with that heart, and speake out like a ramme!

Ye speake like a capon that had the cough now.

Bee of good cheere, anon ye shall doe well ynow!

30

R. ROYSTER. Vpon thy comforte, I will all things well handle.

M. MERY. So, loe, that is a breast to blowe out a candle!

But what is this great matter? I woulde faine knowe.

We shall fynde remedie therefore, I trowe.

Doe ye lacke money? Ye knowe myne olde offers,

35

Ye haue always a key to my purse and coffers.

R. ROYSTER. I thanke thee! Had euer man suche a frende?

M. MERY. Ye gyue vnto me; I must needes to you lende.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, I haue money plentie all things to discharge.

M. MERY. [*aside*] That knewe I ryght well when I made offer so large.

40

*R. ROYSTER.¹ But it is no suche matter.

M. MERY.

What is it, than?

Are ye in daunger of debte to any man?

If ye be, take no thought nor be not afraide;

¹ Omitted in A., apparently by oversight; it is found in C.

Let them hardly take thought how they shall be paid.

R. ROYSTER. Tut! I owe nought.

M. MERY. What then? fear ye imprisonment? 45

R. ROYSTER. No.

M. MERY. No, i-wist, ye offende not, so to be shent.

But if ye ¹ had, the Toure coulde not you so holde

But to breake out at all times ye would be bolde.

What is it? hath any man threatned you to beate?

R. ROYSTER. What is he that durst haue put me in that
heate? 50

He that beateth me — by His armes! — shall well fynde,

That I will not be farre from him nor runne behinde.

M. MERY. That thing knowe all men euer since ye ouer-
threwe

The fellow of the lion which Hercules slewe.

But what is it, than?

R. ROYSTER. Of loue I make my mone. 55

M. MERY. Ah, this foolishe (a!) loue! wilt neare let vs
alone?

But, bicause ye were refused the last day,

Ye sayd ye woulde nere more be intangled that way.

I would medle no more, since I fynde all so vkinde.

R. ROYSTER. Yea, but I can not so put loue out of my
minde. 60

MATH. MER. But is your loue — tell me first, in any
wise! —

In the way of mariage, or of merchandise?

If it may otherwise than lawfull be founde,

Ye get none of my helpe for a hundred pounde.

R. ROYSTER. No, by my trowth, I would haue hir to my
wife. 65

M. MERY. Then are ye a good man, and God saue your
life!

And what or who is she with whome ye are in loue?

R. ROYSTER. A woman whome I knowe not by what
meanes to moue.

¹ A. he; C. ye.

M. MERY. Who is it?

R. ROYSTER. A woman yond!

M. MERY. What is hir name?

R. ROYSTER. Hir yonder.

M. MERY. Whom?

R. ROYSTER. Mistresse — ah —

M. MERY. Fy, fy, for shame! 70

Loue ye, and know not whome, but “hir yonde,” “a woman”?

We shall then get you a wyfe — I can not tell whan!

R. ROYSTER. The faire woman, that supped wyth vs
yesternyght,

And I hearde hir name twice or thrice, and had it ryght.

M. MERY. Yea, ye may see ye nere take me to good
cheere with you; 75

If ye had, I coulede haue tolde you hir name now.

R. ROYSTER. I was to blame in-deede, but the nexte tyme
perchaunce —

And she dwelleth in this house.

M. MERY. What, Christian Custance?

R. ROYSTER. Except I haue hir to my wife, I shall runne
madde.

M. MERY. Nay; vnwise perhaps, but I warrant you for
madde! 80

R. ROYSTER. I am vtterly dead vnlesse I haue my de-
sire.

M. MERY. Where be the bellowes that blewe this sodeine
fire?

R. ROYSTER. I heare she is worthe a thousande pounce
and more.

M. MERY. Yea, but learne this one lesson of me afore: 85

An hundred pounce of marriage-money, doubtlesse,

Is euer thirtie pounce sterlyng, or somewhat lesse.

So that hir thousande pounce, yf she be thirtie,

Is muche neere about two hundred and fiftie.

Howebeit, wowers and widowes are neuer poore!

R. ROYSTER. Is she a widowe? I loue hir better there-
fore. 90

M. MERY. But I heare she hath made promise to another.

R. ROYSTER. He shall goe without hir, and he were my brother!

M. MERY. I haue hearde say, I am right well aduised,
That she hath to Gawyn Goodlucke promised.

R. ROYSTER. What is that Gawyn Goodlucke?

M. MERY. A merchant man. 95

R. ROYSTER. Shall he speede afore me? Nay, sir, by
sweete Saint Anne!

Ah, sir, "Backare," quod Mortimer to his sowe;
I wyll haue hir myne owne selfe, I make God a-vow;
For, I tell thee, she is worthe a thousande pounce.

M. MERY. Yet a fitter wife for your maship might be
founde: 100

Suche a goodly man as you might get one wyth lande,
Besides poundes of golde a thousande and a thousande,
And a thousande, and a thousande, and a thousande,
And so to the summe of twentie hundred thousande;
Your most goodly personage is worthie of no lesse. 105

R. ROYSTER. I am sorie God made me so comely, doubt-
lesse,

For that maketh me eche-where so highly fauoured,
And all women on me so enamoured.

M. MERY. "Enamoured," quod you? haue ye spied out
that?

Ah, sir, mary, nowe I see you know what is what. 110

"Enamoured," ka? mary, sir, say that againe!

But I thought not ye had marked it so plaine.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, eche-where they gaze all vpon me and
stare.

M. MERY. Yea, Malkyn, I warrant you, as muche as they
dare.

And ye will not beleue what they say in the streete, 115

When your mashyp passeth by, all such as I meete,

That sometimes I can scarce finde what aunswere to make:

"Who is this?" sayth one, "Sir Launcelot du Lake?"

"Who is this? greate Guy of Warwike?" sayth an-other;

"No," say I, "it is the thirteenth Hercules brother;" 120

"Who is this? noble Hector of Troy?" sayth the thirde;

"No, but of the same nest," say I, "it is a birde;"

"Who is this? greate Goliah, Sampson, or Colbrande?"

"No," say I, "but it is a brute of the Alie Lande;"

"Who is this? greate Alexander? or Charle le Maigne?" 125

"No, it is the tenth Worthie," say I to them agayne.

I knowe not if I sayd well?

R. ROYSTER. Yes, for so I am.

M. MERY. Yea, for there were but nine Worthies before
ye came.

To some others, the thirde Cato I doe you call;

And so, as well as I can, I aunswere them all. 130

"Sir, I pray you, what lorde or great gentleman is this?"

"Maister Ralph Roister Doister, dame," say I, ywis.

"O Lorde!" sayth she than, "what a goodly man it is!

Woulde Christ I had such a husbände as he is!"

"O Lorde," say some, "that the sight of his face we lacke!" 135

"It is inough for you," say I, "to see his backe;

His face is for ladies of high and noble parages.

With whome he hardly scapeth great mariages," —

With muche more than this, and much otherwise.

R. ROYSTER. I can thee thanke that thou canst suche
answers deuise. 140

But I perceyue thou doste me throughly knowe.

M. MERY. I marke your maners for myne owne learnyng,
I trowe.

But suche is your beautie, and suche are your actes,

Suche is your personage, and suche are your factes,

That all women, faire and fowle, more and lesse, 145

That eye you, they lubbe you, they talke of you doubtlesse;

Your p[le]asant looke maketh them all merie;

Ye passe not by but they laugh till they be werie;

Yea, and money coulde I haue, the truthe to tell,

Of many, to bryng you that way where they dwell. 150

R. ROYSTER. Merygreeke, for this thy reporting well of
mee —

M. MERY. What shoulde I else, sir? it is my duetie,
pardee!

R. ROYSTER. I promise thou shalt not lacke, while I
haue a grote.

M. MERY. Faith, sir, and I nere had more nede of a newe
cote.

R. ROYSTER. Thou shalte haue one to-morowe, and golde
for to spende. 155

M. MERY. Then I trust to bring the day to a good
ende;

For, as for mine owne parte, hauing money inowe,
I could lyue onely with the remembrance of you.

But nowe to your widowe whome you loue so hotte!

R. ROYSTER. By Cocke, thou sayest truthe! I had almost
forgotte. 160

M. MERY. What if Christian Custance will not haue you,
what?

R. ROYSTER. Haue me? yes, I warrant you, neuer doubt
of that;

I knowe she loueth me, but she dare not speake.

M. MERY. In-deede meete it were some-body should it
breake.

R. ROYSTER. She looked on me twentie tymes yester-
night, 165

And laughed so —

M. MERY. That she coulde not sitte vpright?

R. ROYSTER. No, faith, coulde she not.

M. MERY. No, euen such a
thing I cast.

R. ROYSTER. But, for wowyng, thou knowest, women are
shamefast.

But, and she knewe my minde, I knowe she would be glad,
And thinke it the best chaunce that euer she had. 170

M. MERY. Too hir then like a man, and be bolde forth
to starte!

Wowers neuer speede well that haue a false harte.

R. ROYSTER. What may I best doe?

M. MERY. Sir, remaine ye a while [here];¹
 Ere long one or other of hir house will appere.
 Ye knowe my minde.

R. ROYSTER. Yea, now, hardly, lette me alone! 175

M. MERY. In the meane-time, sir, if you please, I wyll
 home,
 And call your musitions, for in this your case
 It would sette you forth, and all your wowyng grace;
 Ye may not lacke your instrumentes to play and sing.

R. ROYSTER. Thou knowest I can doe that.

M. MERY. As well as
 any-thing. 180

Shall I go call your folkes, that ye may shewe a cast?

R. ROYSTER. Yea, runne, I beseeche thee, in all possible
 haste.

M. MERY. I goe. *Exeat.*

R. ROYSTER. Yea, for I loue singyng out of measure,
 It comforteth my spirites and doth me great pleasure.
 But who commeth forth yond from my swete hearte Custance? 185
 My matter frameth well, thys is a luckie chaunce.

Actus j. Scæna iij.

MAGE MUMBLE-CRUST, *spinning on the distaffe.* TIBET TALK-APACE,
sowyng. [*The two enter together.*] [*To them later² comes*] ANNOT
 ALYFACE, *knittyng.* R. ROYSTER [*remains*].

M. MUMBL. If thys distaffe were spoonne, Margerie Mum-
 blecrust!

TIB. TALK. Where good stale ale is, will drinke no water,
 I trust.

M. MUMBL. Dame Custance hath promised vs good ale
 and white bread.

TIB. TALK. If she kepe not promise, I will beshrewe hir
 head!

But it will be starke nyght before I shall haue done. 5

¹ *Supplied by C.*

² *See l. 27.*

R. ROYSTER. I will stande here a-while, and talke with
them anon.

I heare them speake of Custance, which doth my heart
good;

To heare hir name spoken doth euen comfort my blood.

M. MUMBL. Sit downe to your worke, Tibet, like a good
girle.

TIB. TALK. Nourse, medle you with your spyndle and
your whirle!

10

No haste but good, Madge Mumblecrust; for, whip and
whurre,

The olde prouerbe doth say, neuer made good furre.

M. MUMBL. Well, ye wyll sitte downe to your worke
anon, I trust.

TIB. TALK. Soft fire maketh sweete malte, good Madge
Mumblecrust.

M. MUMBL. And swete malte maketh ioly good ale for
the nones.

15

TIB. TALK. Whiche will slide downe the lane without
any bones.

Cantet:

Old browne bread crustes must haue much good mumblyng,
But good ale downe your throte hath good easie tumbling.

R. ROYSTER. The iolyest wenche that ere I hearde, little
mouse!

May I not reioyce that she shall dwell in my house?

20

TIB. TALK. So, sirrha, nowe this geare beginneth for to
frame.

M. MUMBL. Thanks to God, though your work stand
stil, your tong is not lame!

TIB. TALK. And, though your teeth be gone, both so
sharpe and so fine,

Yet your tongue can renne on patins as well as mine.

M. MUMBL. Ye were not for nought named Tyb Talke-
apace.

25

TIB. TALK. Doth my talke grieue you? Alack, God
saeue your gráce!

M. MUMBL. I holde a grote ye will drinke anon for this
geare.

[Enter ANNOT ALYFACE, knitting.]

TIB. TALK. And I wyll pray you the stripes for me to
beare.

M. MUMBL. I holde a penny, ye will drink without a
cup.

TIB. TALK. Wherein-so-ere ye drinke, I wote ye drinke
all vp. 30

AN. ALYFACE. By Cock! and well sowed, my good Tibet
Talke-apace!

TIB. TALK. And een as well knitte, my nowne Annot
Alyface!

R. ROYSTER. See what a sort she kepeth that must be
my wife!

Shall not I, when I haue hir, leade a merrie life?

TIB. TALK. Welcome, my good wenche, and sitte here
by me iust! 35

AN. ALYFACE. And howe doth our old beldame here,
Mage Mumblecrust?

TIB. TALK. Chyde, and finde faultes, and threaten to
complaine.

AN. ALYFACE. To make vs poore girles shent, to hir is
small gaine.

M. MUMBL. I dyd neyther chyde, nor complaine, nor
threaten.

R. ROYSTER. It woulde grieue my heart to see one of
them beaten. 40

M. MUMBL. I dyd nothyng but byd hir worke and holde
hir peace.

TIB. TALK. So would I, if you coulde your clattering
ceasse;

But the deuill can not make olde trotte holde hir tong.

AN. ALYFACE. Let all these matters passe, and we three
sing a song!

So shall we pleasantly bothe the tyme beguile now 45

And eke dispatche all our workes ere we can tell how.

TIB. TALK. I shrew them that say nay, and that shall not
be I!

M. MUMBL. And I am well content.

TIB. TALK. Sing on, then, by-and-by.

R. ROYSTER. And I will not away, but listen to their
song.

Yet Merygreeke and my folkes tary very long. 50

TIB, AN, and MARGERIE, doe singe here.

Pipe, mery Annot, etc.¹

Trilla, trilla, trillarie!

Worke, Tibet; worke, Annot; worke, Margerie!

Sewe, Tibet; knitte, Annot; spinne, Margerie!

Let vs see who shall winne the victorie. 55

TIB. TALK. This sleue is not willyng to be sewed, I trowe;
A small thing might make me all in the grounde to throwe! 57

Then they sing agayne.

Pipe, merrie Annot, etc.

Trilla, trilla, trillarie!

What, Tibet? what, Annot? what, Margerie?

Ye sleepe, but we doe not, that shall we trie.

Your fingers be nombde, our worke will not lie. 62

TIB. TALK. If ye doe so againe, well, I would aduise you
nay.
In good sooth, one stoppe more, and I make holy-day. 64

They singe the thirde tyme.

Pipe, mery Annot, etc.

Trilla, trilla, trillarie!

Nowe, Tibbet; now, Annot; nowe, Margerie!

Nowe whippet apace for the maystrie!

But it will not be, our mouth is so drie. 69

TIB. TALK. Ah, eche finger is a thombe to-day, me thinke!
I care not to let all alone, choose it swimme or sinke! 71

¹ I suppose etc. is to be expanded as Pipe, Tibet; pipe, Margerie!

They sing the fourth tyme.

Pipe, mery Annot, etc.

Trilla, trilla, trillarie!

When, Tibet? when, Annot? when, Margerie?

I will not! I can not! No more can I!

Then giue we all ouer, and there let it lye! 76

Lette hir caste downe hir vvorke.

TIB. TALK. There it lieth; the worste is but a curried cote!

Tut, I am vsed therto, I care not a grote!

AN. ALYFACE. Hauē we done singyng since? then will I in againe;

Here I founde you, and here I leaue both twaine. *Exeat.* 80

M. MUMBL. And I will not be long after. Tib Talke-
apace!

TIB. TALK. What is the¹ matter?

M. MUMB. Yond stode a man al this space,
And hath hearde all that euer we spake togyther.

TIB. TALK. Mary, the more loute he for his comming
hither!

And the lesse good he can, to listen maidens talke! 85

I care not and I go byd him hence for to walke;

It were well done to knowe what he maketh here-away.

R. ROYSTER. Nowe myght I speake to them, if I wist
what to say.

M. MUMBL. Nay, we will go both off, and see what he is.

[They approach him.]

R. ROYSTER. One that hath hearde all your talke and
singyng, ywis. 90

TIB. TALK. The more to blame you! A good thriftie
husbande

Woulde elsewhere haue had some better matters in hande.

R. ROYSTER. I dyd it for no harme; but for good loue I
beare

To your dame, Mistresse Custance, I did your talke heare.
And, mistresse nource, I will kisse you for acquaintance.

95

M. MUMBL. I come anon, sir.

TIB. TALK. Faith, I would our dame Custance
Sawe this geare.

M. MUMBL. I must first wipe al cleane, yea, I must!

TIB. TALK. Ill chieue it, dotyng foole, but it must be
cust!

[ROISTER DOISTER *kisses* MADGE.]

M. MUMBL. God yelde you, sir! chad not so much ichotte
not whan,

Nere since chwas bore, chwine, of such a gay gentleman! 100

R. ROYSTER. I will kisse you, too, mayden, for the good
will I beare you.

TIB. TALK. No, forsoth, by your leaue, ye shall not
kisse me.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, be not afearde, I doe not disdayne
you a whit!

TIB. TALK. Why shoulde I feare you? I haue not so little
wit;

Ye are but a man, I knowe very well.

R. ROYSTER. Why, then? 105

TIB. TALK. Forsooth, for I wyll not, I vse not to kisse
men.

R. ROYSTER. I would faine kisse you too, good maiden,
if I myght.

TIB. TALK. What shold that neede?

R. ROYSTER. But to honor you, by this light!
I vse to kisse all them that I loue, to God I vowe.

TIB. TALK. Yea, sir? I pray you, when dyd ye last kisse
your cowe? 110

R. ROYSTER. Ye might be proude to kisse me, if ye were
wise.

TIB. TALK. What promotion were therein?

R. ROYSTER. Nourse is not so nice.

TIB. TALK. Well, I haue not bene taught to kissing and
licking.

R. ROYSTER. Yet I thanke you, mistresse nourse, ye
made no sticking.

M. MUMBL. I will not sticke for a kosse with such a man
as you. 115

TIB. TALK. They that lust! I will againe to my sewyng
now.

[Enter ANNOT ALYFACE.]

AN. ALYFAC[E].¹ Tidings, hough! tidings! Dame Cus-
tance greeteth you well!

R. ROYSTER. Whome? me?

AN. ALYFACE. You, sir? no, sir; I do no
suche tale tell.

R. ROYSTER. But and she knewe me here —

AN. ALYFACE. Tybet Talke-apace,
Your mistresse Custance and mine must speake with your
grace. 120

TIB. TALK. With me?

AN. ALYFACE. Ye muste come in to hir, out of all
doutes.

TIB. TALK. And my work not half done! A mischief on
all loutes!

R. ROYSTER. Ah, good sweet nourse! *Ex[eant] am[bo].*

M. MUMB. A, good sweete gentleman!

R. ROYSTER. What?

M. MUMBL. Nay, I can not tel, sir, but what
thing would you?

R. ROYSTER. Howe dothe sweete Custance, my heart of
gold, tell me how? 125

M. MUMBL. She dothe very well, sir, and commaunde me
to you.

R. ROYSTER. To mè?

M. MUMBL. Yea, to you, sir.

R. ROYSTER. To me? nurse, tel
me plain, —

To me?

¹ So A.

M. MUMB. Ye!

R. ROYSTER. That word maketh me aliue again.

M. MUMBL. She commaunde me to one last day, who-ere
it was.

R. ROYSTER. That was een to me and none other, by
the masse!

130

M. MUMBL. I can not tell you surely, but one it was.

R. ROYSTER. It was I and none other; this commeth to
good passe.

I promise thee, nourse, I fauour hir.

M. MUMB. Een so, sir.

R. ROYSTER. Bid hir sue to me for mariage.

M. MUMBL. Een so, sir.

R. ROYSTER. And surely for thy sake she shall speede.

M. MUMB. Een so, sir. 135

R. ROYSTER. I shall be contented to take hir.

M. MUMB. Een so, sir.

R. ROYSTER. But at thy request and for thy sake.

M. MUMB. Een so, sir.

R. ROYSTER. And come hearke in thine eare what to say.

M. MUMB. Een so, sir.

Here lette him tell hir a great long tale in hir eare.

Actus j. Scæna iiij.

[Enter] MATHEW MERYGREEKE, DOBINET DOUGHTIE, HARPAX [and MUSI-
CIANS to] RALPH ROYSTER [and] MARGERIE MUMBLECRUST.

M. MERY. Come on, sirs, apace, and quite your-selues
like men,

Your pains shalbe rewarded.

D. DOU. But I wot not when.

M. MERY. Do your maister worship' as ye haue done in
time past.

D. DOUGH. Speake to them; of mine office he shall haue
a cast.

M. MERY. Harpax, looke that thou doe well, too, and thy
fellow!

HARPAX.¹ I warrant, if he will myne example folowe.

M. MERY. Curtsie, whooresons, douke you and crouche
at euery worde!

D. DOUGH. Yes, whether our maister speake earnest or
borde.

M. MERY. For this lieth vpon his preferment indeede.

D. DOUGH. Oft is hee a wower, but neuer doth he speede. 10

M. MERY. But with whome is he nowe so sadly round-
yng yond?

D. DOUGH. With *Nobs nicebecetur miserere* fonde.

[M.]² MERY. God be at your wedding, be ye spedde alredie?
I did not suppose that your loue was so greedie.

I perceiue nowe ye haue chose of deuotion; 15

And ioy haue ye, ladie, of your promotion!

R. ROYSTER. Tushe, foole, thou art deceiued, this is not
she.

M. MERY. Well mocke muche of hir, and keepe hir well,
I vise ye.

I will take no charge of such a faire piece keeping.

M. MUMBL. What ayleth thys fellowe? he driueth me to
weeping. 20

M. MERY. What, weepe on the weddyng day? be merrie,
woman!

Though I say it, ye haue chose a good gentleman.

R. ROYSTER. Kocks nownes, what meanest thou man?
tut a whistle!

[M. MERY.]² Ah, sir, be good to hir, she is but a gristle!
Ah, sweete lambe and coney!

R. ROYSTER. Tut, thou art deceiued! 25

M. MERY. Weepe no more, lady, ye shall be well re-
ceiued.

Vp wyth some mery noyse, sirs, to bring home the bride!

R. ROYSTER. Gogs armes, knaue! art thou madde? I
tel thee thou art wide.

¹ In A. this name is not printed in black-letter like the others, but in italics.

² Supplied by A.

M. MERY. Then ye entende by nyght to haue hir home
brought?

R. ROYSTER. I tel thee no.

M. MERY. How then?

R. ROYSTER. Tis neither ment ne thought. 30

M. MERY. What shall we then doe with hir?

R. ROYSTER. Ah, foolish harebraine,

This is not she!

M. MERY. No is? why then, vnsayde againe!

And what yong girle is this with your maship so bolde?

R. ROYSTER. A girle?

M. MERY. Yea; I dare say, scarce yet three-
score yere old.

R. ROYSTER. This same is the faire widowes nourse of
whome ye wotte. 35

M. MERY. Is she but a nourse of a house? hence home,
olde trotte!

Hence at once!

R. ROYSTER. No, no!

M. MERY. What, an please your maship,

A nourse talke so homely with one of your worship?

R. ROYSTER. I will haue it so: it is my pleasure and will.

M. MERY. Then I am content. Nourse, come againe,
tarry still. 40

R. ROYSTER. What! she will helpe forward this my sute
for hir part.

M. MERY. Then ist mine owne pygs-nie, and blessing on
my hart!

R. ROYSTER. This is our best friend, man!

M. MERY. Then teach hir what to say.

M. MUMBL. I am taught alreadie.

M. MERY. Then go, make no delay!

R. ROYSTER. Yet hark one word in thine eare.

M. MERY. Back, sirs from his taile! 45

[Pushing them upon him.]

R. ROYSTER. Backe, vilaynes! will ye be priuie of my
counsaile?

M. MERY. Backe, sirs! so! I tolde you afore ye woulde be shent!

[Another push.]

R. ROYSTER. She shall haue the first day a whole pecke of argent.

M. MUMBL. A pecke! *Nomine Patris*, haue ye so much spare?

R. ROYSTER. Yea, and a carte-lode thereto, or else were it bare,

50

Besides other mouables, housholde stuffe and lande.

M. MUMBL. Haue ye lands too?

R. ROYSTER. An hundred marks.

M. MERY. Yea, a thousand.

M. MUMBL. And haue ye cattell too? and sheepe too?

R. ROYSTER. Yea, a fewe.

M. MERY. He is ashamed the numbre of them to shewe.

Een rounde about him as many thousande sheepe goes

55

As he and thou and I too haue fingers and toes.

M. MUMBL. And how many yeares olde be you?

R. ROYSTER. Fortie at lest.

M. MERY. Yea, and thrice fortie to them!

R. ROYSTER. Nay, now thou dost iest:

I am not so olde, thou misreckonest my yeares.

M. MERY. I know that; but my minde was on bullockes and steeres.

60

M. MUMBL. And what shall I shewe hir your masterships name is?

R. ROYSTER. Nay, she shall make sute ere she know that, ywis!

M. MUMBL. Yet let me somewhat knowe.

M. MERY. This is hee, vnderstand,

That killed the Blewe Spider in Blanchepouder Lande.

M. MUMBL. Yea, Iesus, William! zee law! dyd he zo, law? 65

M. MERY. Yea, and the last elephant that euer he sawe, As the beast passed by, he start out of a buske, And een with pure strength of armes pluckt out his great tuske.

M. MUMBL. Iesus! *nomine Patris!* what a thing was
that!

R. ROYSTER. Yea, but, Merygreke, one thing thou hast
forgot. 70

M. MERY. What?

R. ROYSTER. Of thother elephant.

M. MERY. Oh, hym that fledde away?

R. ROYSTER. Yea!

M. MERY. Yea, he knew that his match was in
place that day.

Tut, he bet the King of Crickets on Christmasse-day,
That he crept in a hole, and not a worde to say!

M. MUMBL. A sore man by zembletee!

M. MERY. Why, he wrong a club 75

Once, in a fray, out of the hande of Belzebug.

R. ROYSTER. And how when Mumfision?

M. MERY. Oh, your coustrelyng

Bore the lanterne a-fielde so before the *gozelyng* —

Nay, that is to long a matter now to be tolde!

Neuer aske his name, nurse! I warrant thee, be bolde, 80

He conquered in one day from Rome to Naples,

And woonne townes, nourse, as fast as thou canst make
apples.

M. MUMBL. O Lorde, my heart quaketh for feare! he is
to sore!

R. ROYSTER. Thou makest hir to much afearde; Mery-
greeke, no more!

This tale woulde feare my sweete heart Custance right euill. 85

M. MERY. Nay, let hir take him, nurse, and feare not
the deuill!

But thus is our song dasht. Sirs, ye may home againe.

R. ROYSTER. No, shall they not! I charge you all here
to remaine.

The villaine slaues! a whole day ere they can be founde!

M. MERY. Couche! On your marybones, whooresons!
Down to the ground! 90

[The MUSICIANS kneel.]

Was it meete he should tarie so long in one place
 Without harmonie of musike, or some solace?
 Who-so hath suche bees as your maister in hys head
 Had neede to haue his spirites with musike to be fed.
 By your maisterships licence!

[*Striking him.*]

R. ROYSTER. What is that? a moate? 95

M. MERY. No; it was a fooles feather had light on your
 coate.

R. ROYSTER. I was nigh no feathers since I came from
 my bed.

M. MERY. No, sir, it was a haire that was fall from your
 hed.

R. ROYSTER. My men com when it plesethem.

M. MERY. By your leue!

[*Striking him.*]

R. ROYSTER. What is that?

M. MERY. Your gown was foule spotted with the foot of
 a gnat. 100

R. ROYSTER. Their maister to offende they are nothing
 afearde.

[*MERYGREEKE strikes him.*]

What now?

M. MERY. A lousy haire from your masterships beard.

SERVANTS.¹ And, sir, for nurses sake pardon this one
 offence!

We shall not after this shew the like negligence.

R. ROYSTER. I pardon you this once; and come sing nere
 the wurse! 105

M. MERY. How like you the goodnesse of this gentle-
 man, nurse?

M. MUMBL. God saue his maistership that so can his
 men forgeue!

And I wyll heare them sing ere I go, by his leaue.

R. ROYSTER. Mary, and thou shalt, wenche! Come, we
 two will daunce!

¹ A. C. Omnes famulæ.

M. MUMBL. Nay, I will by myne owne selfe foote the
song perchaunce.

R. ROYSTER. Go to it, sirs, lustily!

M. MUMBL. Pipe vp a mery note :
Let me heare it playde, I will foote it, for a grote! 112

Content :

¹ Who-so to marry a minion wife
Hath hadde good chaunce and happe,
Must loue hir and cherishe hir all his life,
And dandle hir on his lappe. 116

If she will fare well, yf she wyll go gay,
A good husbände euer styll,
What-euer she lust to doe or to say,
Must lette hir haue hir owne will. 120

About what affaires so-euer he goe,
He must shewe hir all his mynde ;
None of hys counsell she may be kept froe,²
Else is he a man vnkynde. 124

R. ROYSTER. Now, nurse, take thys same letter here to
thy mistresse,
And, as my trust is in thee, plie my businesse.

M. MUMBL. It shalbe done.

M. MERY. Who made it?

R. ROYSTER. I wrote it ech whit.

M. MERY. Then nedes it no mending.

R. ROYSTER. No, no!

M. MERY. No ; I know your wit ;

I warrant it wel.

M. MUMBL. It shal be deliuered.

But, if ye speede, shall I be considered? 130

M. MERY. Whough! dost thou doubt of that?

¹ *This song is printed at the end of the volume, under the general heading: "Certaine Songs to be song by / those which shall vse this Comedie or Enterlude"; and is called: "The Seconde Song."*

² C. froe; A. free.

MADGE. What shal I haue?

M. MERY. An hundred times more than thou canst deuise
to craue.

M. MUMBL. Shall I haue some newe geare? for my olde
is all spent.

M. MERY. The worst kitchen wench shall goe in ladies
rayment.

M. MUMBL. Yea?

M. MERY. And the worst drudge in the house
shal go better

35

Than your mistresse doth now.

[M. MUMBL.]¹ Then I trudge with your letter.

[*Exeat.*]

R. ROYSTER. Now may I repose me: Custance is mine
owne.

Let vs sing and play homeward, that it may be knowne.

M. MERY. But are you sure that your letter is well
enough?²

R. ROYSTER. I wrote it my-selfe.

M. MERY. Then sing we to dinner! 140

Here they sing, and go out singing.

Actus j. Scæna v.

CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE. MARGERIE MUMBLECRUST.

C. CUSTANCE. Who tooke thee thys letter, Margerie
Mumblecrust?

M. MUMBL. A lustie, gay bachelor tooke it me of trust;
And, if ye seeke to him, he will lowe your doing.

C. CUSTANCE. Yea, but where learned he that manner of
wowing?

M. MUMBL. If to sue to hym you will any paines take,
He will haue you to his wife, he sayth, for my sake. 5

¹ A. MAR.; C. M. Mumbl.

² *One would expect the line to read:* But are you sure that your letter
will win her?

C. CUSTANCE. Some wise gentleman, belike! I am be-
spoken;
And I thought verily thys had bene some token
From my dere spouse, Gawin Goodluck, whom, when him
please,
God luckily sende home to both our heartes ease! 10

M. MUMBL. A ioyly man it is, I wote well by report,
And would haue you to him for marriage resort;
Best open the writing, and see what it doth speake.

C. CUSTANCE. At thys time, nourse, I will neither reade
ne breake.

M. MUMBL. He promised to giue you a whole pecke of
golde. 15

C. CUSTANCE. Perchance lacke of a pynte, when it shall
be all tolde!

M. MUMBL. I would take a gay, riche husbände, and I
were you!

C. CUSTANCE. In good sooth, Madge, een so would I, if
I were thou.

But no more of this fond talke now; let vs go in;
And see thou no more moue me folly to begin, 20
Nor bring mee no mo letters for no mans pleasure
But thou know from whom.

M. MUMBL. I warrant ye, shall be sure!

[*Exeant.*]

Actus ij. Scæna j.

[*Enter*] DOBINET DOUGHTIE.

D. DOUGH. Where is the house I goe to? before or be-
hinde?

I know not where nor when nor how I shal it finde.
If I had ten mens bodies and legs and strength,
This trotting that I haue must needes lame me at length.
And nowe that my maister is new set on wowyng, 5
I trust there shall none of vs finde lacke of doying;
Two paire of shoes a day will nowe be too litle

To serue me, I must trotte to and fro so mickle.
 “Go beare me thys token, carrie me this letter,” —
 Nowe this is the best way, nowe that way is better ! 10
 “Vp before day, sirs, I charge you, an houre or twaine !
 Trudge, do me thys message, and bring worde quicke
 againe !”

If one misse but a minute, then “His armes and woundes,
 I woulde not haue slacked for ten thousand poundes !
 Nay, see, I beseeche you, if my most trustie page, 15
 Goe not nowe aboute to hinder my mariage !”
 So feruent hotte wowyng, and so farre from wiuing,
 I trowe neuer was any creature liuyng.
 With euery woman is he in some loues pang ;
 Then vp to our lute at midnight, twangledome twang ; 20
 Then twang with our sonets, and twang with our dumps,
 And heyhough from our heart, as heauie as lead lumpes ;
 Then to our recorder with toodleloodle poope,
 As the howlet out of an yuie bushe should hoope ;
 Anon to our gitterne, thrumpledum, thrumpledum thrum, 25
 Thrumpledum, thrumpledum, thrumpledum, thrumpledum
 thrum !

Of songs and balades also he is a maker,
 And that can he as finely doe as Iacke Raker ;
 Yea, and *extempore* will he ditie compose, —
 Foolishe Marsias nere made the like, I suppose ! 30
 Yet must we sing them ; as good stuffe, I vndertake,
 As for such a pen-man is well-fyttyng to make.
 “Ah, for these long nights, heyhow ! when will it be day?
 I feare, ere I come, she will be wowed away.”
 Then, when aunswere is made that it may not bee, 35
 “O death, why comdest thou not by-and-by ?” sayth he.
 But then, from his heart to put away sorowe,
 He is as farre in with some newe loue next morowe.
 But in the meane season we trudge and we trot ;
 From dayspring to midnyght I sit not nor rest not. 40
 And now am I sent to Dame Christian Custance,
 But I feare it will ende with a mocke for pastance.

I bring hir a ring, with a token in a cloute ;
 And, by all gesse, this same is hir house, out of doute.
 I knowe it nowe perfect, I am in my right way. 45
 And loe yond the olde nourse that was wyth vs last day!

Actus ij. Scæna ij.

MAGE MUMBLECRUST. DOBINET DOUGHTIE.

M. MUMBL. I was nere so shoke vp afore since I was
 borne!

That our mistresse coulde not haue chid, I wold haue sworne.
 And I pray God I die if I ment any harme ;
 But for my life-time this shall be to me a charme!

D. DOUGH. God you saue and see, nurse! and howe is it
 with you? 5

M. MUMBL. Mary, a great deale the worse it is, for suche
 as thou!

D. DOUGH. For me? Why so?

M. MUMBL. Why, wer not thou one of them, say,
 That song and playde here with the gentleman last day?

D. DOUGH. Yes; and he would know if you haue for him
 spoken;

And prayes you to deliuer this ring and token. 10

M. MUMBL. Nowe, by the token that God tokened,
 brother,

I will deliuer no token, one nor other!

I haue once ben so shent for your maisters pleasure

As I will not be agayne for all hys treasure.

D. DOUGH. He will thank you, woman.

M. MUMBL. I will none of his thanke. 15

Ex[eat.]

D. DOUGH. I weene I am a prophete, this geare will
 proue blanke!

But what, should I home againe without answeere go?

It were better go to Rome on my head than so.

I will tary here this moneth but some of the house
 Shall take it of me, and then I care not a louse. 20
 But yonder commeth forth a wenche — or, a ladde ;
 If he haue not one Lumbardes touche, my lucke is bad.

Actus ij. Scæna iij.

[*Enter*] TRUPENIE. D. DOUGH[TIE *remains*]. TIBET T[ALK-APACE *and*]
 ANOT AL[VFACE *enter later*].

TRUPENY. I am cleane lost for lacke of mery companie,
 We gree not halfe well within, our wenches and I ;
 They will commaunde like mistresses, they will forbyd ;
 If they be not serued, Trupeny must be chyd.
 Let them be as mery nowe as ye can desire, 5
 With turnyng of a hande our mirth lieth in the mire!
 I can not skill of such chaungeable mettle,
 There is nothing with them but ‘in docke, out nettle!’

D. DOUGH. Whether is it better that I speake to him
 furst,
 Or he first to me? It is good to cast the wurst. 10
 If I beginne first, he will smell all my purpose ;
 Otherwise, I shall not neede any-thing to disclose.

TRUPENY. What boy haue we yonder? I will see what
 he is.

D. DOUGH. He commeth to me. It is hereabout, ywis.

TRUPENY. Wouldest thou ought, friende, that thou look-
 est so about? 15

D. DOUGH. Yea ; but whether ye can helpe me or no, I
 dout.

I seeke to one Mistresse Custance house, here dwellyng.

TRUPENY. It is my mistresse ye seeke too, by your tell-
 ing.

D. DOUGH. Is there any of that name heere but shee?

TRUPENY. Not one in all the whole towne that I knowe,
 pardee. 20

D. DOUGH. A widowe she is, I trowe?

TRUPENIE. And what and she be?

D. DOUGH. But ensured to an husbnde?

TRUPENIE. Yea, so thinke we.

D. DOUGH. And I dwell with hir husbnde, that trusteth
to be.

TRUPENIE. In faith, then must thou needes be welcome to
me;

Let vs for acquaintance shake handes together, 25
And, what-ere thou be, heartily welcome hither!

[Enter TIBET and ANOT.]

TIB. TALK. Well, Trupenie, neuer but flinging?

AN. ALYFACE. And frisking?

TRUPENIE. Well, Tibet and Annot, still swingyng and
whiskyng?

TIB. TALK. But ye roile abroad.

AN. ALYFACE. In the streete euere-where.

TRUPENIE. Where are ye twaine, in chambers, when ye
mete me there? 30

But come hither, fooles; I haue one nowe by the hande,
Seruant to hym that must be our mistresse husbnde.
Byd him welcome.

AN. ALYFACE. To me, truly, is he welcome!

TIB. TALK. Forsooth, and, as I may say, heartily wel-
come!

D. DOUGH. I thank you, mistresse maides.

AN. ALYFACE. I hope we shal better know. 35

TIB. TALK. And when wil our new master come?

D. DOUGH. Shortly, I trow.

TIB. TALK. I would it were to-morow; for, till he resorte,
Our mistresse, being a widow, hath small comferte.
And I hearde our nourse speake of an husbnde to-day,
Ready for our mistresse, a riche man and a gay; 40
And we shall go in our Frenche hoodes euery day,
In our silke cassocks, I warrant you, freshe and gay,
In our tricke ferdegews¹ and billiments of golde,

¹ A. ferdegews.

Braue in our sutes of chaunge seuen double folde ;
 Then shall ye see Tibet, sirs, treade the mosse so trimme,—
 Nay, why sayd I treade? ye shall see hir glide and swimme, 46
 Not lumperdee clumperdee like our spaniell Rig.

[*She illustrates the modes.*]

TRUPENY. Mary, then, prickmedaintie, come taste me a
 fig!

Who shall then know our Tib Talke-apace, trow ye?

AN. ALYFACE. And why not Annot Alyface as fyne as
 she? 50

TRUPENY. And what, had Tom Trupeny a father or none?

AN. ALYFACE. Then our prety newe-come man will looke
 to be one.

TRUPENY. We foure, I trust, shall be a ioily, mery knot!
 Shall we sing a fitte to welcome our friende, Annot?

AN. ALYFACE. Perchance he can not sing.

D. DOUGH. I am at all assayes.

TIB. TALK. By Cocke, and the better welcome to vs
 alwayes! 56

Here they sing:

A thing very fitte
 For them that haue witte,
 And are felowes knitte,
 Seruants in one house to bee,
 Is fast¹ for to sitte,
 And not oft to flitte,
 Nor varie a whitte,
 But louingly to agree. 64

No man complainyng,
 Nor other disdayning,
 For losse or for gainyng,
 But felowes or friends to bee;
 No grudge remainyng,
 No worke refrainyng,

¹ A. Is fast fast; C. As fast..

Nor helpe restraining,
But louingly to agree. 72

No man for despite
By worde or by write
His felowe to twite,
But further in honestie ;
No good turnes entwite,
Nor olde sores recite,
But let all goe quite,
And louingly to agree. 80

After drudgerie,
When they be werie,
Then to be merie,
To laugh and sing they be free ;
With chip and cherie
Heigh derie derie,
Trill on the berie,
And louingly to agree. 88

Finis.

TIB. TALK. Wyll you now in with vs vnto our mistresse
go?

D. DOUGH. I haue first for my maister an errand or two.
But I haue here from him a token and a ring ;
They shall haue moste thanke of hir that first doth it bring.

TIB. TALK. Mary, that will I !

TRUPENY. See and Tibet snatch not now !

TIB. TALK. And why may not I, sir, get thanks as well
as you? *Exeat.*

AN. ALYFACE. Yet get ye not all, we will go with you
both, 95

And haue part of your thanks, be ye neuer so loth !

Exeant omnes.

D. DOUGH. So my handes are ridde of it, I care for no
more.

I may now return home ; so durst I not afore. *Exeat.*

Actus ij. Scæna iiij.

C. CUSTANCE. TIBET. ANNOT ALYFACE. TRUPENY.

C. CUSTANCE. Nay, come forth all three! and come
hither, pretie mayde!

Will not so many forewarnings make you afrayde?

TIB. TALK. Yes, forsoth.

C. CUSTANCE. But stil be a runner vp and downe?

Still be a bringer of tidings and tokens to towne?

TIB. TALK. No, forsoth, mistresse!

C. CUSTANCE. Is all your delite and ioy 5

In whiskyng and ramping abroad like a tom-boy?

TIB. TALK. Forsoth, these were there too, — Annot and
Trupenie.

TRUPENIE. Yea, but ye alone tooke it, ye can not denie.

ANNOT ALY. Yea, that ye did!

TIBET. But if I had not, ye twaine would.

C. CUSTANCE. You great calfe, ye should haue more
witte, so ye should! 10

But why shoulde any of you take such things in hande?

TIBET. Because it came from him that must be your
husbande.

C. CUSTANCE. How do ye know that?

TIBET. Forsoth, the boy
did say so.

C. CUSTANCE. What was his name?

AN. ALYFACE. We asked not.

C. CUSTANCE. No did?

AN. ALIFACE. He is not farre gone, of likelyhod.

TRUPENY. I will see. 15

C. CUSTANCE. If thou canst finde him in the streete,
bring him to me.

TRUPENIE. Yes. *Exeat.*

C. CUSTANCE. Well, ye naughty girles, if euer I per-
ceiue

That henceforth you do letters or tokens receiue

To bring vnto me from any person or place,
 Except ye first shewe me the partie face to face, 20
 Eyther thou or thou, full truly abyee thou shalt.

TIBET. Pardon this, and the next tyme powder me in salt!

C. CUSTANCE. I shall make all girles by you twaine to
 beware.

TIBET. If euer I offende againe, do not me spare.
 But if euer I see that false boy any more, 25
 By your mistreshyps licence, I tell you afore,
 I will rather haue my cote twentie times swunged
 Than on the naughtie wag not to be auenged.

C. CUSTANCE. Good wenches would not so rampe abroad
 ydelly,
 But keepe within doores, and plie their work earnestly. 30
 If one would speake with me that is a man likely,
 Ye shall haue right good thanke to bring me worde quickly;
 But otherwyse with messages to come in post,
 From henceforth, I promise you, shall be to your cost.
 Get you in to your work!

TIB. AN. Yes, forsooth.

C. CUSTANCE. Hence, both twaine; 35
 And let me see you play me such a part againe!

[*Exeant* MAIDS; *enter* TRUPENY.]

TRUPENY. Maistresse, I haue runne past the farre ende
 of the streete,
 Yet can I not yonder craftie boy see nor meete.

C. CUSTANCE. No?

TRUPENY. Yet I looked as farre beyonde the
 people
 As one may see out of the toppes of Paules steeple. 40

C. CUSTANCE. Hence in at doores, and let me no more be
 vext!

TRUPENY. Forgeue me this one fault, and lay on for the
 next! [Exeat.]

C. CUSTANCE. Now will I in too, for I thinke, so God
 me mende,
 This will proue some foolishe matter in the ende! Exeat.

.

Actus [i]ij.¹ Scæna j.

MATHEWE MERYGREEKE.

M. MERY. Nowe say thys againe : he hath somewhat to
doing
Which followeth the trace of one that is wowing,
Specially that hath no more wit in his hedde
Than my cousin Roister Doister withall is ledde.
I am sent in all haste to espie and to marke 5
How our letters and tokens are likely to warke.
Maister Roister Doister must haue aunswere in haste,
For he loueth not to spende much labour in waste.
Nowe, as for Christian Custance, by this light,
Though she had not hir trowth to Gawin Goodluck plight, 10
Yet rather than with such a loutishe dolte to marie,
I dare say, woulde lyue a poore lyfe solitarie.
But fayne would I speake with Custance, if I wist how,
To laugh at the matter. Yond commeth one forth now!

Actus iij. Scæna ij.

[Enter] TIBET [to] M. MERYGREEKE. CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE [enters later].

TIB. TALK. Ah, that I might but once in my life haue a
sight
Of him that made vs all so yll-shent, by this light !
He should neuer escape if I had him by the eare,
But euen from his head, I would it bite or teare.
Yea, and if one of them were not inowe, 5
I would bite them both off, I make God auow !
M. MERY. What is he whome this little mouse doth so
threaten?
TIB. TALK. I woulde teache him, I trow, to make girles
shent or beaten!
M. MERY. I will call her. Maide, with whome are ye so
hastie?

¹ Brackets in A.

TIB. TALK. Not with you, sir, but with a little waggastie, 10
A deceiuer of folkes, by subtill craft and guile.

M. MERY. I knowe where she is ; Dobinet hath wrought
some wile.

TIB. TALK. He brought a ring and token which he sayd
was sent

From our dames husbunde, but I wot well I was shent ;
For it liked hir as well, to tell you no lies, 15
As water in hir shyppe, or salt cast in hir eies ;
And yet whence it came neyther we nor she can tell.

M. MERY. We shall haue sport anone ; I like this very
well!—

And dwell ye here with Mistresse Custance, faire maide?

TIB. TALK. Yea, mary, doe I, sir ; what would ye haue
sayd? 20

M. MERY. A little message vnto hir by worde of mouth.

TIB. TALK. No messages, by your leaue, nor tokens, for-
soth!

M. MERY. Then help me to speke with hir.

TIBET. With a good
wil that.

Here she commeth forth. Now speake : ye know best what.

[Enter CUSTANCE.]

C. CUSTANCE. None other life with you, maide, but
abrode to skip? 25

TIB. TALK. Forsoth, here is one would speake with your
mistresship.

C. CUSTANCE. Ah, haue ye ben learning of mo messages
now?

TIB. TALK. I would not heare his minde, but bad him
shewe it to you.

C. CUSTANCE. In at dores!

TIB. TALK. I am gon. *Ex[eat].*

M. MERY. Dame Custance, God ye saue!

C. CUSTANCE. Welcome, friend Merygreeke! and what
thing wold ye haue? 30

M. MERY. I am come to you a little matter to breake.

C. CUSTANCE. But see it be honest, else better not to speake.

M. MERY. Howe feele ye your-selfe affected here of late?

C. CUSTANCE. I feele no maner change; but after the
olde rate.

But wherby do ye meane?

M. MERY. Concerning mariage. 35

Doth not loue lade you?

C. CUSTANCE. I feele no such cariage.

M. MERY. Doe ye feele no pangues of dotage? aunswere
me right.

C. CUSTANCE. I dote so, that I make but one sleepe all
the night.

But what neede all these wordes?

M. MERY. Oh Iesus! will ye see

What dissemblyng creatures these same women be? 40

The gentleman ye wote of, whome ye doe so loue

That ye woulde fayne marrie him, yf ye durst it moue,

Emong other riche widowes, which are of him glad,

Lest ye for lesing of him perchaunce might runne mad,

Is nowe contented that, vpon your sute making, 45

Ye be as one in election of taking.

C. CUSTANCE. What a tale is this! that I wote of?
whome I loue?

M. MERY. Yea, and he is as louing a worme, againe, as a
doue.

Een of very pitie he is willyng you to take,

Bicause ye shall not destroy your-selfe for his sake. 50

C. CUSTANCE. Mary, God yelde his mashyp! What-euer
he be,

It is gentmanly spoken!

M. MERY. Is it not, trowe ye?

If ye haue the grace now to offer your-self, ye speede.

C. CUSTANCE. As muche as though I did! This time it
shall not neede.

But what gentman is it, I pray you tell me plaine, 55

That woweth so finely?

M. MERY. Lo where ye be againe,
As though ye knewe him not!

C. CUSTANCE. Tush, ye speake in iest!

M. MERY. Nay, sure, the partie is in good knocking
earnest;

And haue you he will, he sayth, and haue you he must.

C. CUSTANCE. I am promised duryng my life; that is iust. 60

M. MERY. Mary, so thinketh he, vnto him alone.

C. CUSTANCE. No creature hath my faith and trowth but
one,

That is Gawin Goodlucke; and, if it be not hee,

He hath no title this way, what-euer he be,

Nor I know none to whome I haue such worde spoken. 65

M. MERY. Ye, knowe him not you by his letter and
token?

C. CUSTANCE. In-dede, true it is that a letter I haue,
But I neuer reade it yet, as God me saue!

M. MERY. Ye a woman? and your letter so long vnredde?

C. CUSTANCE. Ye may therby know what hast I haue to
wedde. 70

But now who it is for my hande, I knowe by gesse.

M. MERY. Ah well, I, say!

C. CUSTANCE. It is Roister Doister, doubtlesse.

M. MERY. Will ye neuer leaue this dissimulation?
Ye know hym not?

C. CUSTANCE. But by imagination;
For no man there is but a very dolt and loute 75
That to wowe a widowe woulde so go about.

He shall neuer haue me hys wife while he doe liue.

M. MERY. Then will he haue you if he may, so mote I
thriue!

And he biddeth you sende him worde by me,
That ye humbly beseech him ye may his wife be, 80
And that there shall be no let in you, nor mistrust,
But to be wedded on Sunday next, if he lust;
And biddeth you to looke for him.

C. CUSTANCE. Doth he byd so?

M. MERY. When he commeth, aske hym whether he dyd
or no.

C. CUSTANCE. Goe say that I bid him keepe him warme
at home ; 85

For, if he come abroade, he shall cough me a mome.
My mynde was vexed, I shrew his head, sottish dolt !

M. MERY. He hath in his head —

C. CUSTANCE. As much braine as a burbolt !

M. MERY. Well, Dame Custance, if he heare you thus
play choploge.

C. CUSTANCE. What will he?

M. MERY. Play the deuill in the horologe. 90

C. CUSTANCE. I defye him, loute !

M. MERY. Shall I tell hym what ye say?

C. CUSTANCE. Yea, and adde what-so-euer thou canst, I
thee pray,

And I will auouche it, what-so-euer it bee.

M. MERY. Then let me alone ; we will laugh well, ye shall
see ;

It will not be long ere he will hither resorte. 95

C. CUSTANCE. Let hym come when hym lust, I wishe no
better sport.

Fare ye well, I will in, and read my great letter ;

I shall to my wower make answere the better. *Exeat.*

Actus iij. Scæna iij.

MATHEW MERYGREEKE. [*Enter*] ROISTER DOISTER.

M. MERY. Nowe that the whole answere in my deuise
doth rest,

I shall paint out our wower in colours of the best ;

And all that I say shall be on Custances mouth,

She is author of all that I shall speake, forsoth.

But yond commeth Rojster Doister nowe, in a traunce. 5

R. ROYSTER. Iuno sende me this day good lucke and good
chaunce!

I can not but come see how Merygreeke doth speede.

M. MERY. I will not see him, but giue him a iutte, in-deede.

[Runs over him.]

I crie your mastershyps mercie!

R. ROYSTER. And whither now?

M. MERY. As fast as I could runne, sir, in poste against
you.

10

But why speake ye so faintly, or why are ye so sad?

R. ROYSTER. Thou knowest the prouerbe, — bycause I
can not be had.

Hast thou spoken with this woman?

M. MERY. Yea, that I haue!

R. ROYSTER. And what, will this geare be?

M. MERY. No, so God me saue!

R. ROYSTER. Hast thou a flat answer?

M. MERY. Nay, a sharp answer.

R. ROYSTER. What? 15

M. MERY. Ye shall not, she sayth, by hir will marry hir
cat,

Ye are such a calfe, such an asse, such a blocke,
Such a lilburne, such a hoball, such a lobcocke;
And, bicause ye shoulde come to hir at no season,
She despised your maship out of all reason.

20

“Bawawe what ye say,” ko I, “of such a ientman!”
“Nay, I feare him not,” ko she, “doe the best he can.

He vaunteth him-selfe for a man of prowesse greate,
Where-as a good gander, I dare say, may him beate.

And, where he is louted and laughed to skorne

25

For the veriest dolte that euer was borne,

And veriest lubber, slouen and beast,

Liuing in this worlde from the west to the east,

Yet of himselfe hath he suche opinion

That in all the worlde is not the like minion.

30

He thinketh eche woman to be brought in dotage

With the onely sight of his goodly personage;

Yet none that will haue hym; we do hym loute and flocke,

And make him, among vs, our common sporting-stocke;
 And so would I now," ko she, " saue onely bicause 35
 Better nay, ko I, I lust not medle with dawes."

"Ye are happy," ko I, " that ye are a woman;
 This would cost you your life in case ye were a man."

R. ROYSTER. Yea, an hundred thousand pound should not
 saue hir life!

M. MERY. No, but that ye wowe hir to haue hir to your wife. 40
 But I coulede not stoppe hir mouth.

R. ROYSTER. Heigh how, alas!

M. MERY. Be of good cheere, man, and let the worlde
 passe!

R. ROYSTER. What shall I doe or say, nowe that it will
 not bee?

M. MERY. Ye shall haue choise of a thousande as good
 as shee;

And ye must pardon hir, it is for lacke of witte. 45

R. ROYSTER. Yea, for were not I an husbände for hir fitte?
 Well, what should I now doe?

M. MERY. In faith, I can not tell.

R. ROYSTER. I will go home and die.

M. MERY. Then shall I bidde toll the bell?

R. ROYSTER. No.

M. MERY. God haue mercie on your soule! ah,
 good gentleman,

That er ye shuld th[u]s¹ dye for an vnkinde woman! 50
 Will ye drinke once ere ye goe?

R. ROYSTER. No, no, I will none.

M. MERY. How feele your soule to God?

R. ROYSTER. I am nigh gone.

M. MERY. And shall we hence streight?

R. ROYSTER. Yea.

M. MERY. *Placebo dilexi.*

vt infra.²

¹ Brackets in A.

² The other version of this burial service is printed in the old copy at the end of the play, among other songs belonging to the play. For convenience I print it at the foot of the next two pages.

Maister Roister¹ Doister will streight go home and die.

R. ROYSTER. Heigh how, alas, the pangs of death my
hearte do breake!

55

M. MERY. Holde your peace! for shame, sir! a dead man
may not speake!

Nequando: What mourners and what torches shall we haue?

R. ROYSTER. None.

M. MERY. *Dirige*: He will go darklyng to his graue, —
Neque lux, neque crux, neque mourners, *neque* clinke;
He will steale to heauen, vnknowing to God, I thinke.

60

A porta inferi: Who shall your goodes possesse?

R. ROYSTER. Thou shalt be my sectour, and haue all,
more and lesse.

M. MERY. *Requiem æternam*: Now God reward your
mastershyps!

And I will crie halfepenie-doale for your worshyp.

Come forth, sirs, heare the dolefull newes I shall you tell!

65

Euocat SERUOS MILITIS. [Enter four SERVANTS.]

Our good maister here will no longer with vs dwell!
But, in spite of Custance, which hath hym weried,
Let vs see his mashyp solemnely buried;
And, while some piece of his soule is yet hym within,

THE PSALMODIE.

Placebo dilexi,

Maister Roister Doister wil streight go home and die,
Our Lorde Iesus Christ his soule haue mercie vpon:
Thus you see to day a man, to morrow Iohn.

Yet sauing for a womans extreeme crueltie,
He might haue lyued yet a moneth or two or three,
But in spite of Custance which hath him weried,
His mashyp shall be worshipfully buried.
And while some piece of his soule is yet hym within,
Some parte of his funeralls let vs here beginne.

Dirige. He will go darklyng to his graue.
Neque lux, neque crux, nisi solum clinke,
Neuer gentman so went toward heauen I thinke.

Yet sirs as ye wyll the blisse of heauen win,
When he commeth to the graue lay hym softly in,

¹ A. Doister; C. Roister.

Some part of his funeralls let vs here begin.

70

Audiui vocem: All men, take heede by this one gentleman

Howe you sette your loue vpon an vnkinde woman ;

For these women be all suche madde, pieuishe elues,

They will not be wonne except it please them-selues.

But, in fayth, Custance, if euer ye come in hell,

75

Maister Roister Doister shall serue you as well.

And will ye needes go from vs thus, in very deede?

R. ROYSTER. Yea, in good sadnesse.

M. MERY. Now Iesus Christ be your speede!

Good night, Roger, olde knaue! farewell, Roger, olde knaue!

Good night, Roger, old knaue! knaue, knap!

vi infra. 80

Pray for the late Maister Roister Doisters soule!

And come forth, parish clarke, let the passing bell toll.

[*Enter PARISH CLERK.*]

Pray for your mayster, sirs, and for hym ring a peale ;¹

Ad SERUOS MILITIS.

He was your right good maister while he was in heale.

And all men take heede by this one Gentleman,

How you sette your loue vpon an vnkinde woman :

For these women be all suche madde pieuish elues,

They wyll not be woonne except it please them selues.

But in faith Custance if euer ye come in hell,

Maister Roister Doister shall serue you as well.

Good night Roger olde knaue, Farewel Roger olde knaue.

Good night Roger olde knaue, knaue, knap.

Nequando. Audiui vocem. Requiem æternam.

¹ *At the end of the play is printed:*

THE PEALE OF BELLES RONG BY THE PARISH CLERK AND ROISTER

DOISTERS FOURS MEN.

The first Bell a Triple.

When dyed he? When dyed he?

The seconde.

We haue hym! We haue hym!

The thirde.

Royster Doyster! Royster Doyster!

The fourth Bell.

He commeth! He commeth!

The greate Bell.

Our owne! Our owne!

*Qui Lazarum.*¹

R. ROYSTER. Heigh how!

M. MERY. Dead men go not so fast. 85

In Paradisum.

R. ROYSTER. Heihow!

M. MERY. Soft, heare what I haue cast!

R. ROYSTER. I will heare nothing, I am past.

M. MERY. Whough, wellaway!

Ye may tarie one houre, and heare what I shall say.

Ye were best, sir, for a-while to reuiue againe

And quite them er ye go.

R. ROYSTER. Trowest thou so?

M. MERY. Ye, plain. 90

R. ROYSTER. How may I reuiue, being nowe so farre
past?

M. MERY. I will rubbe your temples, and fette you againe
at last.

R. ROYSTER. It will not be possible.

M. MERY. Yes, for twentie ponde.

[*Rubs his head violently.*]

R. ROYSTER. Armes! what dost thou?

M. MERY. Fet you again out of your sound.

By this crosse, ye were nigh gone in-deede; I might feele 95

Your soule departing within an inche of your heele.

Now folow my counsell.

R. ROYSTER. What is it?

M. MERY. If I wer you,

Custance should eft seeke to me ere I woulde bowe.

R. ROYSTER. Well, as thou wilt haue me, euen so will
I doe.

M. MERY. Then shall ye reuiue againe for an houre or
two. 100

R. ROYSTER. As thou wilt; I am content, for a little space.

M. MERY. Good happe is not hastie; yet in space
comth² grace.

¹ C. assigns this to ROYSTER DOISTER.

² A. com[e]th.

To speake with Custance your-selfe, shoulde be very well ;
 What good therof may come, nor I nor you can tell.
 But, now the matter standeth vpon your mariage, 105
 Ye must now take vnto you a lustie courage.

Ye may not speake with a faint heart to Custance,
 But with a lusty breast and countenance,
 That she may knowe she hath to answeere to a man.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, I can do that as well as any can. 110

M. MERY. Then, bicause ye must Custance face to face
 wowe,

Let vs see how to behaue your-selfe ye can doe.

Ye must haue a portely bragge, after your estate.

R. ROYSTER. Tushe, I can handle that after the best rate.

[*He swaggers.*]

M. MERY. Well done! so loe! vp, man, with your head
 and chin! 115

Vp with that snoute, man! so loe! nowe ye begin!

So, that is somewhat like! but, prankie cote, nay, whan!

That is a lustie brute! handes vnder your side, man!

So loe! now is it euen as it should bee!

That is somewhat like for a man of your degree! 120

Then must ye stately goe, ietting vp and downe.

Tut! can ye no better shake the taile of your gowne?

There, loe! suche a lustie bragge it is ye must make!

R. ROYSTER. To come behind, and make curtsie, thou
 must som pains take.

M. MERY. Else were I much to blame, I thanke your
 mastershyp, 125

The Lorde one day all-to begrime you with worshyp!

Backe, sir sauce! let gentlefolkes haue elbowe roome!

Voyde, sirs! see ye not Maister Roister Doister come?

Make place, my maisters!

[*Shoving him about.*]

R. ROYSTER. Thou iustlest nowe to nigh.

M. MERY. Back, al rude loutes!

R. ROYSTER. Tush!

M. MERY. I crie your maship mercy! 130
Hoighdagh! if faire, fine Mistresse Custance sawe you now,
Ralph Royster Doister were hir owne, I warrant you.

R. ROYSTER. Neare an M, by your girdle?

M. MERY. Your Good Mastershypps
Maistershypp were hir owne Mistreshypps Mistreshypps!
Ye were take vp for haukes, ye were gone, ye were gone! 135
But now one other thing more yet I thinke vpon.

R. ROYSTER. Shewe what it is.

M. MERY. A wower, be he neuer so poore,
Must play and sing before his bestbeloues doore ;
How much more, than, you!

R. ROYSTER. Thou speakest wel, out of dout.

M. MERY. And perchaunce that woulde make hir the
sooner come out. 140

R. ROYSTER. Goe call my musitiens, bydde them high apace.

M. MERY. I wyll be here with them ere ye can say trey
ace. *Exeat.*

R. ROYSTER. This was well sayde of Merygreeke ; I lowe
hys wit.

Before my sweete hearts dore we will haue a fit,
That if my loue come forth, that I may with hir talke, 145
I doubt not but this geare shall on my side walke.
But lo, how well Merygreeke is returned sence!

[*Enter MERYGREEKE with MUSICIANS.*]

M. MERY. There hath grow'n no grasse on my heele
since I went hence,
Lo, here haue I brought that shall make you pastance.

R. ROYSTER. Come, sirs, let vs sing, to winne my deare
loue Custance! 150

*Cantent:*¹

I mun be maried a Sunday ;
I mun be maried a Sunday ;
Who-soeuer shall come that way,
I mun be maried a Sunday. 154

¹ *This song is printed at the end of the play in the old copy, and is headed: "The fourth Song."*

Royster Doyster is my name ;
 Royster Doyster is my name ;
 A lustie brute, I am the same,
 I mun be married a Sunday. 158

Christian Custance haue I founde ;
 Christian Custance haue I founde,
 A wydowe worthe a thousande pounce ;
 I mun be married a Sunday. 162

Custance is as sweete as honey ;
 Custance is as sweete as honey ;
 I hir lambe and she my coney,
 I mun be married a Sunday. 166

When we shall make our weddyng-feast ;
 When we shall make our weddyng-feast,
 There shall bee cheere for man and beast ;
 I mun be married a Sunday.
 I mun be married a Sunday, etc. 171

M. MERY. Lo, where she commeth ! Some countenance
 to hir make,
 And ye shall heare me be plaine with hir for your sake.

Actus iij. Scæna iiij.

CUSTANCE. MERYGREEKE. ROISTER DOISTER.

C. CUSTANCE. What gaudyng and foolyng is this afore
 my doore?

M. MERY. May not folks be honest, pray you, though
 they be pore?

C. CUSTANCE. As that thing may be true, so rich folks
 may be fooles !

R. ROYSTER. Hir talke is as fine as she had learned in
 schooles.

M. MERY. Looke partly towarde hir, and drawe a little
 nere.

C. CUSTANCE. Get ye home, idle folkes.

M. MERY. Why may not we be here?

Nay, and ye will haze, haze; otherwise, I tell you plaine,
And ye will not haze, then giue vs our geare againe.

C. CUSTANCE. In-deede I haue of yours much gay things,
God saue all!

R. ROYSTER. Speake gently vnto hir, and let hir take all. 10

M. MERY. Ye are to tender-hearted; shall she make vs
dawes?

Nay, dame, I will be plaine with you in my friends cause.

R. ROYSTER. Let all this passe, sweete heart, and accept
my seruice!

C. CUSTANCE. I will not be serued with a foole, in no
wise;

When I choose an husbände, I hope to take a man. 15

M. MERY. And where will ye finde one which can doe
that he can?

Now, thys man towarde you being so kinde,

You not to make¹ him an answere somewhat to his minde!

C. CUSTANCE. I sent him a full answere by you, dyd I
not?²

M. MERY. And I reported it.

C. CUSTANCE. Nay, I must speake it againe. 20

R. ROYSTER. No, no, he tolde it all.

M. MERY. Was I not metely plaine?

R. ROYSTER. Yes.

M. MERY. But I would not tell all; for, faith, if I had,
With you, Dame Custance, ere this houre it had been bad;

And not without cause, for this goodly personage

Ment no lesse than to ioyne with you in mariage. 25

C. CUSTANCE. Let him wast no more labour nor sute
about me.

M. MERY. Ye know not where your preferment lieth, I
see,

He sending you such a token, ring and letter.

¹ C. Why not make.

² Possibly a line rhyming with this has fallen out.

C. CUSTANCE. Mary, here it is, ye neuer sawe a better.

M. MERY. Let vs see your letter.

C. CUSTANCE. Holde, reade it, if ye can, 30
And see what letter it is to winne a woman.

M. MERY. [*reads*] "To mine owne deare coney¹ birde,
swete heart, and pigsny
Good Mistresse Custance present these by and by."

Of this superscription do ye blame the stile?

C. CUSTANCE. With the rest as good stuffe as ye redde a
great while! 35

M. MERY. [*reads*] "Sweete mistresse where as I loue you
nothing at all,
Regarding your substance and richesse chiefe of all,
For your personage, beautie, demeanour and wit,
I commende me vnto you neuer a whit.
Sorie to heare report of your good welfare. 40
For (as I heare say) suche your conditions are,
That ye be worthie fauour of no liuing man,
To be abhorred of euery honest man.
To be taken for a woman enclined to vice.
Nothing at all to Vertue gyuing hir due price. 45
Wherfore concerning mariage, ye are thought
Suche a fine Paragon, as nere honest man bought.
And nowe by these presentes I do you aduertise
That I am minded to marrie you in no wise.
For your goodes and substance, I coulede bee content 50
To take you as ye are. If ye mynde to bee my wyfe,
Ye shall be assured for the tyme of my lyfe,
I will keepe ye ryght well, from good rayment and fare,
Ye shall not be kepte but in sorowe and care.
Ye shall in no wyse lyue at your owne libertie, 55
Doe and say what ye lust, ye shall neuer please me,
But when ye are mery, I will be all sadde,
When ye are sory, I will be very gladde.

¹ Apparently a comma is needed after coney; but, considering the peculiar character of the letter, it seems best to print it without any emendation, even in punctuation.

When ye seeke your heartes ease, I will be vnkinde,
 At no tyme, in me shall ye muche gentlenesse finde. 60
 But all things contrary to your will and minde,
 Shall be done: otherwise I wyll not be behinde
 To speake. And as for all them that woulde do you wrong
 I will so helpe and mainteyne, ye shall not lyue long.
 Nor any foolishe dolte, shall cumbre you but I. 65
 I, who ere say nay, wyll¹ sticke by you tyll I die,
 Thus good mistresse Custance, the lorde you saue and kepe,
 From me Roister Doister, whether I wake or slepe,
 Who fauoureth you no lesse, (ye may be bolde)
 Than this letter purporteth, which ye haue vnfolde." 70

C. CUSTANCE. Howe by this letter of loue? is it not fine?

R. ROYSTER. By the armes of Caleys, it is none of myne!

M. MERY. Fie! you are fowle to blame! this is your owne hand!

C. CUSTANCE. Might not a woman be proude of such an husbände?

M. MERY. Ah, that ye would in a letter shew such despite! 75

R. ROYSTER. Oh, I would I had hym here, the which did it endite!

M. MERY. Why, ye made it your-selfe, ye tolde me, by this light!

R. ROYSTER. Yea, I ment I wrote it myne owne selfe, yesternight.

C. CUSTANCE. Ywis, sir, I would not haue sent you such a mocke.

R. ROYSTER. Ye may so take it, but I ment it not so, by Cocke! 80

M. MERY. Who can blame this woman to fume and frette and rage?

Tut, tut, your-selfe nowe haue marde your owne marriage!
 Well, yet, Mistresse Custance, if ye can this remitte,
 This gentleman other-wise may your loue requitte.

¹ A. uyll.

C. CUSTANCE. No, God be with you both! and seeke no
more to me. *Exeat.* 85

R. ROYSTER. Wough! she is gone for-euer! I shall hir
no more see!

M. MERY. What, weepe? fye, for shame! and blubber?
For manhods sake,

Neuer lette your foe so muche pleasure of you take!

Rather play the mans parte, and doe loue refraine.

If she despise you, een despise ye hir againe! 90

R. ROYSTER. By Gosse, and for thy sake I defye hir, in-
deede!

M. MERY. Yea, and perchaunce that way ye shall much
sooner speede;

For one madde propretie these women haue, in fey:

When ye will, they will not; will not ye, then will they.

Ah, foolishe woman! ah, moste vnluckie Custance! 95

Ah, vnfortunate woman! ah, pieuishe Custance!

Art thou to thine harmes so obstinately bent

That thou canst not see where lieth thine high preferment?

Canst thou not lub dis man, which coulde lub dee so well?

Art thou so much thine own foe?

R. ROYSTER. Thou dost the truth tell. 100

M. MERY. Wel, I lament.

R. ROYSTER. So do I.

M. MERY. Wherfor?

R. ROYSTER. For this thing:

Bicause she is gone.

M. MERY. I mourne for an-other thing.

R. ROYSTER. What is it, Merygreeke, wherfore thou dost
griefe take?

M. MERY. That I am not a woman myselfe, for your sake.

I would haue you my-selfe, and a strawe for yond Gill! 105

And mocke much of you though it were against my will.

I would not, I warrant you, fall in such a rage

As so to refuse suche a goodly personage.

R. ROYSTER. In faith, I heartily thanke thee, Merygreeke.

M. MERY. And I were a woman—

R. ROYSTER. Thou wouldest to me seeke. 110

M. MERY. For, though I say it, a goodly person ye bee.

R. ROYSTER. No, no.

M. MERY. Yes, a goodly man as ere I dyd see.

R. ROYSTER. No, I am a poore homely man, as God
made mee.

M. MERY. By the faith that I owe to God, sir, but ye bee!
Woulde I might, for your sake, spende a thousande pound
land. 115

R. ROYSTER. I dare say thou wouldest haue me to thy
husbande.

M. MERY. Yea; and I were the fairest lady in the shiere,
And knewe you as I know you and see you nowe here, —
Well, I say no more!

R. ROYSTER. Gramercies, with all my hart!

M. MERY. But, since that can not be, will ye play a wise
parte? 120

R. ROYSTER. How should I?

M. MERY. Refraine from Custance a-while now,
And I warrant hir soone right glad to seeke to you;
Ye shall see hir anon come on hir knees creeping,
And pray you to be good to hir, salte teares weeping.

R. ROYSTER. But what and she come not?

M. MERY. In faith, then, farewell she! 125
Or else, if ye be wroth, ye may auenged be.

R. ROYSTER. By Cocks precious potsticke, and een so I
shall!

I wyll vtterly destroy hir and house and all!
But I woulde be auenged, in the meane space,
On that vile scribler, that did my wowyng disgrace. 130

M. MERY. "Scribler," ko you? in-deede, he is worthy no
lesse!

I will call hym to you and ye bidde me, doubtlesse.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, for although he had as many liues
As a thousande widowes, and a thousande wiues,
As a thousande lyons, and a thousand rattes, 135
A thousande wolues, and a thousande cattes,

A thousande bulles, and a thousande calues,
 And a thousande legions diuided in halues,
 He shall neuer scape death on my swordes point, —
 Though I shoulde be torne therfore ioynt by ioynt! 140

M. MERY. Nay, if ye will kyll him, I will not fette him ;
 I will not in so muche extremitie sette him.
 He may yet amende, sir, and be an honest man ;
 Therefore pardon him, good soule, as muche as ye can!

R. ROYSTER. Well, for thy sake, this once with his lyfe
 he shall passe ; 145

But I wyll hewe hym all to pieces, by the masse !

M. MERY. Nay, fayth, ye shall promise that he shall no
 harme haue,
 Else I will not fet him.

R. ROYSTER. I shall, so God me saue!
 But I may chide him a good?

M. MERY. Yea, that do, hardely.

R. ROYSTER. Go, then.

M. MERY. I returne, and bring him to you
 by-and-by. 150

Ex[eat].

Actus iij. Scæna v.

ROISTER DOISTER. MATHEWE MERYGREEKE [*enters with*] SCRUIENER
 [*during first speech*].

R. ROYSTER. What is a gentleman but his worde and his
 promise?

I must nowe saue this vilaines lyfe in any wise,
 And yet at hym already my handes doe tickle, —
 I shall vneth holde them, they wyll be so fickle.
 But lo and Merygreeke haue not brought him sens! 5

[*Enter MERYGREEKE and SCRIVENER, talking angrily.*]

M. MERY. Nay, I woulde I had of my purse payde fortie
 pens!

SCRUIENER. So woulde I, too; but it needed not that
 stounde.

M. MERY. But the ientman had rather spent fwe thou-
sande pounde ;

For it disgraced him at least fwe tymes so muche.

SCRIUENER. He disgraced hym-selfe, his loutishnesse is
suche. 10

R. ROYSTER. Howe long they standè prating! Why
comst thou not away?

M. MERY. Come nowe to hymselfe, and hearke what he
will say.

SCRIUENER. I am not afrayde in his presence to appeere.

R. ROYSTER. Arte thou come, fellow?

SCRIUENER. How thinke you? am I not here?

R. ROYSTER. What hindrance hast thou done me, and
what villanie? 15

SCRIUENER. It hath come of thy-selfe if thou hast had any.

R. ROYSTER. All the stocke thou comest of, later or
rather,

From thy fyrst fathers grandfathers fathers father,
Nor all that shall come of thee, to the worlde's ende,
Though to three-score generations they descende,
Can be able to make me a iust recompense 20

For this trespasse of thine and this one offense!

SCRIUENER. Wherin?

R. ROYSTER. Did not you make me a letter, brother?

SCRIUENER. Pay the like hire, I will make you suche an-
other.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, see and these whooreson Phariseys
and Scribes 25

Doe not get their liuyng by polling and bribes!

If it were not for shame —

SCRIUENER. Nay, holde thy hands still!

M. MERY. Why, did ye not promise that ye would not
him spill?

SCRIUENER. Let him not spare me.

R. ROYSTER. Why, wilt thou strike me again?

SCRIUENER. Ye shall haue as good as ye bring, of me,
that is plaine! 30

M. MERY. I can not blame him, sir, though your blowes
wold him greue,
For he knoweth present death to ensue of all ye geue.

R. ROYSTER. Well, this man for once hath purchased thy
pardon.

SCRIUENER. And what say ye to me? or else I will be
gon.

R. ROYSTER. I say the letter thou madest me was not
good. 35

SCRIUENER. Then did ye wrong copy it, of likelyhood.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, out of thy copy worde for worde I
wrote.

SCRIUENER. Then was it as ye prayed to haue it, I wote,
But in reading and pointyng there was made some faulte.

R. ROYSTER. I wote not; but it made all my matter to
haulte. 40

SCRIUENER. Howe say you, is this mine originall or no?

R. ROYSTER. The selfe-same that I wrote out of, so mote
I go!

SCRIUENER. Loke you on your owne fist, and I will looke
on this,

And let this man be iudge whether I reade amisse :

“To myne owne dere coney birde, sweete heart, and pigsny,¹ 45
Good mistresse Custance, present these by and by.”

How now? doth not this superscription agree?

R. ROYSTER. Reade that is within, and there ye shall the
fault see.

SCRIUENER. [*reads*] Sweete mistresse, where as I loue you,
nothing at all

Regarding your riches and substance : chiefe of all 50

For your personage, beautie, demeanour and witte

I commende me vnto you : Neuer a whitte

Sory to heare reporte of your good welfare.

For (as I heare say) suche your conditions are,

That ye be worthie fauour : Of no liuing man 55

To be abhorred : of euery honest man

¹ *This word omitted by mistake in A.*

To be taken for a woman enclined to vice
 Nothing at all : to vertue giuing hir due price.
 Wherefore concerning mariage, ye are thought
 Suche a fine Paragon, as nere honest man bought. 60
 And nowe by these presents I doe you aduertise,
 That I am minded to marrie you : In no wyse
 For your goodes and substance : I can be content
 To take you as you are : yf ye will be my wife,
 Ye shall be assured for the time of my life, 65
 I wyll keepe you right well : from good raiment and fare,
 Ye shall not be kept : but in sorowe and care
 Ye shall in no wyse lyue : at your owne libertie,
 Doe and say what ye lust : ye shall neuer please me
 But when ye are merrie : I will bee all sadde 70
 When ye are sorie : I wyll be very gladde
 When ye seeke your heartes ease : I will be vnkinde
 At no time : in me shall ye muche gentlenesse finde.
 But all things contrary to your will and minde
 Shall be done otherwise : I wyl not be behynde 75
 To speake : And as for all they that woulde do you wrong,
 (I wyll so helpe and maintayne ye) shall not lyue long.
 Nor any foolishe dolte shall cumber you, but I,
 I, who ere say nay, wyll sticke by you tyll I die.
 Thus good mistresse Custance, the lorde you saue and
 kepe. 80

From me Roister Doister, whether I wake or slepe,
 Who faouureth you no lesse, (ye may be bolde)
 Than this letter purporteth, which ye haue vnfolde."
 Now, sir, what default can ye finde in this letter?

R. ROYSTER. Of truth, in my mynde, there can not be a
 better. 85

SCRUIENER. Then was the fault in readyng, and not in
 writyng, —

No, nor, I dare say, in the fourme of endityng.
 But who read this letter, that it sounded so nought?

M. MERY. I redde it, in-deede.

SCRUIENER.

Ye red it not as ye ought.

R. ROYSTER. Why, thou wretched villaine! was all this
same fault in thee? 90

M. MERY. I knocke your costarde if ye offer to strike me!

[*Strikes him.*]

R. ROYSTER. Strikest thou in-deede? and I offer but in
iest.

M. MERY. Yea, and rappe you againe, except ye can sit
in rest.

And I will no longer tarie here, me beleue.

R. ROYSTER. What, wilt thou be angry, and I do thee
forgeue? 95

Fare thou well, scribler, I crie thee mercie, in-deede!

SCRIUENER. Fare ye well, bibbler, and worthily may ye
speede! [*Exeat.*]

R. ROYSTER. If it were an-other but thou, it were a
knaue.

M. MERY. Ye are an-other your-selfe, sir, the Lorde vs
both saue!

Albeit, in this matter I must your pardon craue. 100

Alas! woulde ye wyshe in me the witte that ye haue?

But, as for my fault, I can quickly amende;

I will shewe Custance it was I that did offende.

R. ROYSTER. By so doing, hir anger may be reformed.

M. MERY. But, if by no entreatie she will be turned, 105

Then sette lyght by hir and bee as testie as shee,

And doe your force vpon hir with extremitie.

R. ROYSTER. Come on, therefore, lette vs go home, in
sadnesse.

M. MERY. That if force shall neede, all may be in a
readinesse.

And, as for thys letter, hardely let all go, 110

We will know where she refuse you for that or no.

Exeant am[bo].

Actus iiiij. Scæna j.

SYM SURESBY.

SIM SURE. Is there any man but I, Sym Suresby, alone,
 That would haue taken such an enterprise him vpon,
 In suche an outrageous tempest as this was,
 Suche a daungerous gulfe of the sea to passe?
 I thinke verily Neptunes mightie godshyp 5
 Was angry with some that was in our shyp,
 And, but for the honestie which in me he founde,
 I thinke for the others sake we had bene drownde.
 But fye on that seruant which for his maisters wealth
 Will sticke for to hazarde both his lyfe and his health! 10
 My maister, Gawyn Goodlucke, after me a day,
 Bicause of the weather, thought best hys shyppe to stay;
 And, now that I haue the rough sources so well past,
 God graunt I may finde all things safe here at last!
 Then will I thinke all my trauaile well spent. 15
 Nowe, the first poynt wherfore my maister hath me sent
 Is to salute Dame Christian Custance, his wife
 Espoused, whome he tendreth no lesse than his life.
 I must see how it is with hir, well or wrong,
 And whether for him she doth not now thinke long. 20
 Then to other friendes I haue a message or tway.
 And then so to returne and mete him on the way.
 Now wyll I goe knocke, that I may dispatche with speede;
 But loe, forth commeth hir-selfe, happily, in-deede!

Actus iiiij. Scæna ij.

CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE. SIM SURESBY.

C. CUSTANCE. I come to see if any more stirryng be here;
 But what straunger is this, which doth to me appere?

SYM SURS. I will speake to hir: Dame, the Lorde you
 saue and see!

- C. CUSTANCE. What? friende Sym Suresby? Forsoth,
right welcome ye be!
- Howe doth mine owne Gawyn Goodlucke, I pray the tell? 5
- S. SURESBY. When he knoweth of your health, he will
be perfect well.
- C. CUSTANCE. If he haue perfect helth, I am as I would
be.
- SIM SURE. Suche newes will please him well; this is as
it should be.
- C. CUSTANCE. I thinke now long for him.
- SYM SURE. And he as long for you.
- C. CUSTANCE. When wil he be at home?
- SYM SURE. His heart is here een now; 10
His body commeth after.
- C. CUSTANCE. I woulde see that faine.
- SIM SURE. As fast as wynde and sayle can cary it a-maine.
But what two men are yonde comming hitherwarde?
- C. CUSTANCE. Now I shrew their best Christmasse
chekes, both togetherward!

Actus iiij. Scæna iiij.

[To] CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE [and] SYM SURESBY [enter] RALPH ROISTER
[and] MATHEW MERYGREKE. TRUPENY [enters later].

- C. CUSTANCE. What meane these lewde felowes thus to
trouble me stil?
- Sym Suresby here, perchance, shal therof deme som yll,
And shall suspect in me some point of naughtinesse
And they come hitherward.
- SYM SURE. What is their businesse?
- C. CUSTANCE. I haue nought to them, nor they to me, in
sadnesse. 5
- SIM SURE. Let vs hearken them; somewhat there is, I
feare it.
- R. ROYSTER. I will speake out aloud, best that she may
heare it.

M. MERY. Nay, alas, ye may so feare hir out of hir wit!

R. ROYSTER. By the crosse of my sworde, I will hurt hir
no whit!

M. MERY. Will ye doe no harme, in-deede? shall I trust
your worde? 10

R. ROYSTER. By Roister Doisters fayth, I will speake but
in borde!

SIM SURE. Let vs hearken them; somewhat there is, I
feare it.

R. ROYSTER. I will speake out aloude, I care not who
heare it:

Sirs, see that my harnesse, my tergat and my shield
Be made as bright now as when I was last in fielde, 15

As white as I shoulde to warre againe to-morrowe;

For sicke shall I be but I worke some folke sorow.

Therefore see that all shine as bright as Sainct George,

Or as doth a key newly come from the smiths forge.

I woulde haue my sworde and harnesse to shine so bright 20

That I might therwith dimme mine enimies sight;

I would haue it cast beames as fast, I tell you playne,

As doth the glittryng grasse after a showre of raine.

And see that, in case I shoulde neede to come to arming,

All things may be ready at a minutes warning; 25

For such chaunce may chaunce in an houre, do ye heare?

M. MERY. As perchance shall not chaunce againe in
seuen yeare.

R. ROYSTER. Now draw we neare to hir, and here what
shall be sayde!

M. MERY. But I woulde not haue you make hir too muche
afrayde.

R. ROYSTER. Well founde, sweete wife, I trust, for al
this your soure looke! 30

C. CUSTANCE. Wife? why cal ye me wife?

SIM SURE. Wife? this gear goth acrook!

M. MERY. Nay, Mistresse Custance, I warrant you, our
letter

Is not as we redde een nowe, but much better;

And, where ye halfe stomaked this gentleman afore
For this same letter, ye wyll loue hym now therefore. 35

Nor it is not this letter, though ye were a queene,
That shoulde breake marriage betweene you twaine, I weene.

C. CUSTANCE. I did not refuse hym for the letters sake.

R. ROYSTER. Then ye are content me for your husbnde
to take?

C. CUSTANCE. You for my husbnde to take? nothing
lesse, truely! 40

R. ROYSTER. Yea, say so, sweete spouse, afore straun-
gers hardly!

M. MERY. And, though I haue here his letter of loue
with me,

Yet his ryng and tokens he sent keepe safe with ye.

C. CUSTANCE. A mischiefe take his tokens, and him and
thee too!

But what prate I with fooles? haue I nought else to doo? 45
Come in with me, Sym Suresby, to take some repast.

SIM SURE. I must, ere I drinke, by your leaue, goe in all
hast

To a place or two with earnest letters of his.

C. CUSTANCE. Then come drink here with me.

SIM SURE. I thank you.

C. CUSTANCE. Do not misse;

You shall haue a token to your maister with you. 50

SYM SURE. No tokens this time, gramercies, God be
with you! *Exeat.*

C. CUSTANCE. Surely this fellowe misdemeth some yll
in me;

Which thing, but God helpe, will go neere to spill me.

R. ROYSTER. Yea, farewell, fellow, and tell thy Maister
Goodlucke

That he commeth to late of thys blossome to plucke! 55

Let him keepe him there still, or at least wise make no hast;

As for his labour hither, he shall spende in wast:

His betters be in place nowe!

M. MERY. [*aside*] As long as it will hold.

C. CUSTANCE. I will be euen with thee, thou beast, thou
mayst be bolde!

R. ROYSTER. Will ye haue vs, then?

C. CUSTANCE. I will neuer haue thee! 60

R. ROYSTER. Then will I haue you.

C. CUSTANCE. No, the deuill shal haue thee!
I haue gotten this houre more shame and harme by thee
Then all thy life-days thou canst do me honestie.

M. MERY. Why, nowe may ye see what it comth too in
the ende

To make a deadly foe of your most louing frende! 65

And, ywis, this letter, if ye woulde heare it now —

C. CUSTANCE. I will heare none of it.

M. MERY. In faith, would raiushe you.

C. CUSTANCE. He hath stained my name for-euer, this is
cleare.

R. ROYSTER. I can make all as well in an houre.

M. MERY. As ten yeare.

How say ye? wil ye haue him?

C. CUSTANCE. No.

M. MERY. Wil ye take him? 70

C. CUSTANCE. I defie him.

M. MERY. At my word?

C. CUSTANCE. A shame take him!

Waste no more wynde, for it will neuer bee.

M. MERY. This one faulte with twaine shall be mended,
ye shall see:

Gentle Mistresse Custance now, good Mistresse Custance,
Honey Mistresse Custance now, sweete Mistresse Custance, 75
Golden Mistresse Custance now, white Mistresse Custance,
Silken Mistresse Custance now, faire Mistresse Custance.

C. CUSTANCE. Faith, rather than to mary with suche a
doltishe loute,

I woulde matche my-selfe with a begger, out of doute!

M. MERY. Then I can say no more; to speede we are
not like,

Except ye rappe out a ragge of your rhetorike. 80

C. CUSTANCE. Speake not of winnyng me; for it shall neuer be so.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, dame, I will haue you, whether ye will or no.

I commaunde you to loue me; wherfore shoulde ye not?

Is not my loue to you chafing and burning hot?

85

M. MERY. Too hir! that is well sayd!

R. ROYSTER. Shall I so breake my braine

To dote vpon you, and ye not loue vs againe?

M. MERY. Wel sayd yet!

C. CUSTANCE. Go to, you goose!

R. ROYSTER. I say, Kit Custance,

In case ye will not haze, — well, better yes, perchance!

C. CUSTANCE. Auaunt, lozell! picke thee hence!

M. MERY. Wel, sir, ye perceiue, 90

For all your kinde offer, she will not you receiue.

R. ROYSTER. Then a strawe for hir! and a strawe for hir againe!

She shall not be my wife, woulde she neuer so faine!

No, and though she would be at ten thousand pounce cost!

M. MERY. Lo, dame, ye may see what an husbände ye haue lost! 95

C. CUSTANCE. Yea, no force; a iewell muche better lost than founde!

M. MERY. Ah, ye will not beleue how this doth my heart wounde!

How shoulde a mariage betwene you be towarde,

If both parties drawe backe and become so frowarde?

R. ROYSTER. Nay, dame, I will fire thee out of thy house,¹ 100
And destroy thee and all thine, and that by-and-by.

M. MERY. Nay, for the passion of God, sir, do not so!

R. ROYSTER. Yes, except she will say yea to that she sayde no.

C. CUSTANCE. And what! be there no officers, trow we, in towne

To checke idle loytrers, braggyng vp and downe?

105

¹ C. adds, for the sake of the rhyme, though I die.

Where be they by whome vacabunds shoulde be represt,
That poore sillie widowes might liue in peace and rest?
Shall I neuer ridde thee out of my companie?

I will call for helpe: what, hough! come forth, Trupenie!

TRUPENIE. Anon. [*Enters.*] What is your will, mis-
tresse? dyd ye call me? 110

C. CUSTANCE. Yea; go runne apace, and, as fast as may
be,

Pray Tristram Trusty, my moste assured frende,
To be here by-and-by, that he may me defende.

TRUPENIE. That message so quickly shall be done, by
Gods grace,

That at my returne ye shall say I went apace. *Exeat.* 115

C. CUSTANCE. Then shall we see, I trowe, whether ye
shall do me harme!

R. ROYSTER. Yes, in faith, Kitte, I shall thee and thine
so charme

That all women incarnate by thee may beware.

C. CUSTANCE. Nay, as for charming me, come hither if
thou dare;

I shall cloute thee tyll thou stinke, both thee and thy traine, 120
And coyle thee mine owne handes, and sende thee home
againe.

R. ROYSTER. Yea, sayst thou me that, dame? dost thou
me threaten?

Goe we, I will¹ see whether I shall be beaten.

M. MERY. Nay, for the paishe of God! let me now treat
peace,

For bloudshed will there be, in case this strife increace. 125
Ah, good Dame Custance, take better way with you!

C. CUSTANCE. Let him do his worst!

[ROISTER DOISTER attacks CUSTANCE, and is beaten.]

M. MERY. Yeld in time!

R. ROYSTER. Come hence, thou!

Exeant ROISTER et MERY.

¹ C. will; A. still; cf. *Mundus et Infans*, l. 9.

Actus iiij. Scæna iiij.

CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE [*alone*]. ANOT ALYFACE, TIBET T., M. MUMBLECRUST [*enter later*].

C. CUSTANCE. So, sirra, if I should not with hym take this way,
I should not be ridde of him, I thinke, till doomes-day.
I will call forth my folkes, that, without any mockes,
If he come agayne, we may giue him rappes and knockes.
Mage Mumblecrust, come forth! and Tibet Talke-apace! 5
Yea, and come forth, too, Mistresse Annot Alyface!

[*Enter the three SERVANTS.*]

ANNO ALY. I come.

TIBET. And I am here.

M. MUMB. And I am here too at length.

C. CUSTANCE. Like warriers, if nede bee, ye must shew your strength!

The man that this day hath thus begiled you

Is Ralph Roister Doister, whome ye know well inowe,¹ 10

The moste loute and dastarde that euer on grounde trode.

TIB. TALK. I see all folke mocke hym when he goth abrode.

C. CUSTANCE. What, pretie maide? will ye talke when I speake?

TIB. TALK. No, forsooth, good mistresse.

C. CUSTANCE. Will ye my tale breake?
He threatneth to come hither with all his force to fight; 15
I charge you, if he come, on him with all your might!

M. MUMBL. I with my distaffe will reache hym one rappe!

TIB. TALK. And I with my newe broome will sweepe hym one swappe,

And then with our greate clubbe I will reache hym one rappe!

AN. ALIFACE. And I with our skimmer will fling him one flappe! 20

¹ C. inowe; A. mowe.

TIB. TALK. Then Trupenies fireforke will him shrewdly
 fray,
 And you with the spitte may driue him quite away.

C. CUSTANCE. Go make all ready, that it may be een so.

TIB. TALK. For my parte, I shrewe them that last about
 it go! *Exeant* [SERVANTS].

Actus iiij. Scæna v.

CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE [*alone*]. TRUPENIE [*and*] TRISTRAM TRUSTY [*enter
 later*].

C. CUSTANCE. Trupenie dyd promise me to runne a great
 pace,
 My friend Tristram Trusty to fet into this place.
 In-deede he dwelleth hence a good stert, I confesse ;
 But yet a quicke messanger might twice since, as I gesse,
 Haue gone and come againe. Ah, yond I spie him now! 5

[*Enter TRUPENY and TRUSTY.*]

TRUPENY. Ye are a slow goer, sir, I make God aꝰow ;
 My Mistresse Custance will in me put all the blame.
 Your leggs be longer than myne ; come apace, for shame !

C. CUSTANCE. I can thee thanke, Trupenie ; thou hast
 done right wele.

TRUPENY. Maistresse, since I went, no grasse hath
 growne on my hele, 10
 But Maister Tristram Trustie here maketh no speede.

C. CUSTANCE. That he came at all, I thanke him in very
 deede,
 For now haue I neede of the helpe of some wise man.

T. TRUSTY. Then may I be gone againe, for none such
 I [a]m.¹

TRUPENY. Ye may bee by your going ; for no alderman 15
 Can goe, I dare say, a sadder pace than ye can.

C. CUSTANCE. Trupenie, get thee in, thou shalt among
 them knowe

¹ *Brackets in A.*

How to vse thy-selfe like a propre man, I trowe.

TRUPENY. I go. *Ex[eat].*

C. CUSTANCE. Now, Tristram Trusty, I thank you right
much;

For, at my first sending, to come ye neuer grutch. 20

T. TRUSTY. Dame Custance, God ye saue! and, while my
life shall last,

For my friende Goodluks sake ye shall not sende in wast.

C. CUSTANCE. He shal giue you thanks.

T. TRUSTY. I will do much for his sake.

C. CUSTANCE. But, alack, I feare, great displeasure shall
he¹ take!

T. TRUSTY. Wherfore?

C. CUSTANCE. For a foolish matter.

T. TRUSTY. What is your cause? 25

C. CUSTANCE. I am yll accombred with a couple of dawes.

T. TRUSTY. Nay, weepe not, woman, but tell me what
your cause is.

As concerning my friende is any thing amisse?

C. CUSTANCE. No, not on my part; but here was Sym
Suresby —

T. TRUSTIE. He was with me and told me so.

C. CUSTANCE. And he stode by 30

While Ralph Roister Doister, with helpe of Merygreeke,

For promise of mariage dyd vnto me seeke.

T. TRUSTY. And had ye made any promise before them
twaine?

C. CUSTANCE. No; I had rather be torne in pieces and
slaine!

No man hath my faith and trowth but Gawyn Goodlucke, 35

And that before Suresby dyd I say, and there stucke;

But of certaine letters there were suche words spoken —

T. TRUSTIE. He tolde me that too.

C. CUSTANCE. And of a ring and token,

That Suresby, I spied, dyd more than halfe suspect

That I my faith to Gawyn Goodlucke dyd reiect. 40

¹ C. he; A. be.

T. TRUSTY. But there was no such matter, Dame Custance, in-deede?

C. CUSTANCE. If euer my head thought it, God sende me yll speede!

Wherfore I beseech you with me to be a witsesse

That in all my lyfe I neuer intended thing lesse.

And what a brainsicke foole Ralph Roister Doister is

Your-selfe know well enough.

45

T. TRUSTY. Ye say full true, ywis!

C. CUSTANCE. Bicause to bee his wife I ne graunt nor apply,

Hither will he com, he sweareth, by-and-by,

To kill both me and myne, and beate downe my house flat;

Therefore I pray your aide.

T. TRUSTIE. I warrant you that.

50

C. CUSTANCE. Haue I so many yeres liued a sobre life

And shewed my-selfe honest, mayde, widowe, and wyfe,

And nowe to be abused in such a vile sorte?

Ye see howe poore widowes lyue, all voyde of comfort!

T. TRUSTY. I warrant hym do you no harme nor wrong at all.

55

C. CUSTANCE. No; but Mathew Merygreeke doth me most appall,

That he woulde ioyne hym-selfe with suche a wretched loute.

T. TRUSTY. He doth it for a iest, I knowe hym out of doubt.

And here cometh Merygreke.

C. CUSTANCE. Then shal we here his mind.

Actus iiiij. Scæna vj.

[Enter] MERYGREKE [to] CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE [and] TRIST. TRUSTY.

M. MERY. Custance and Trustie both, I doe you here well finde.

C. CUSTANCE. Ah, Mathew Merygreeke, ye haue vsed me well!

M. MERY. Nowe for altogether ye must your answere
tell :

Will ye haue this man, woman? or else will ye not?

Else will he come, neuer bore so brymme nor tost so hot. 5

TRIS. AND CU. But why ioyn ye with him?

T. TRUSTY. For mirth?

C. CUSTANCE. Or else in sadnesse?

M. MERY. The more fond of you both hardly that¹ mater
gesse.

TRISTRAM. Lo, how say ye, dame?

M. MERY. Why do ye thinke, Dame Custance,
That in this wowyng I haue ment ought but pastance?

C. CUSTANCE. Much things ye spake, I wote, to main-
taine his dotage. 10

M. MERY. But well might ye iudge I spake it all in
mockage.

For-why, is Roister Doister a fitte husband for you?

T. TRUSTY. I dare say ye neuer thought it.

M. MERY. No; to God I vow.

And dyd not I knowe afore of the insurance
Betweene Gawyn Goodlucke and Christian Custance? 15

And dyd not I, for the nonce, by my conueyance,
Reade his letter in a wrong sense for daliance,
That, if you coulde haue take it vp at the first bounde,
We should therat such a sporte and pastime haue founde
That all the whole towne should haue ben the merier? 20

C. CUSTANCE. Ill ake your heades both! I was neuer
werier

Nor neuer more vexte since the first day I was borne!

T. TRUSTY. But very well I wist he here did all in scorne.

C. CUSTANCE. But I feared therof to take dishonestie.

M. MERY. This should both haue made sport and shewed
your honestie; 25

And Goodlucke, I dare swears, your witte therin would low.

T. TRUSTY. Yea, being no worse than we know it to be
now.

¹ A. yat; C. the.

M. MERY. And nothing yet to late ; for, when I come to
him,
Hither will he repaire with a sheepes looke full grim,
By plaine force and violence to driue you to yelde. 30

C. CUSTANCE. If ye two bidde me, we will with him
pitche a fielde,
I and my maides together.

M. MERY. Let vs see, be bolde !

C. CUSTANCE. Ye shall see womens warre.

T. TRUSTY. That fight wil I behold.

M. MERY. If occasion serue, takyng his parte full brim,
I will strike at you, but the rappe shall light on him. 35
When we first appeare —

C. CUSTANCE. Then will I runne away
As though I were afeard.

T. TRUSTY. Do you that part wel play,
And I will sue for peace.

M. MERY. And I wil set him on.
Then will he looke as fierce as a Cotssold lyon.

T. TRUSTY. But when gost thou for him?

M. MERY. That do I very nowe. 40

C. CUSTANCE. Ye shal find vs here.

M. MERY. Wel, God haue mercy on you!

Ex[eat].

T. TRUSTY. There is no cause of feare, the least boy in
the streete —

C. CUSTANCE. Nay, the least girle I haue will make him
take his feete.

But hearke ! me thinke they make preparation.

T. TRUSTY. No force, it will be a good recreation. 45

C. CUSTANCE. I will stand within, and steppe forth
speedily,

And so make as though I ranne away dreadfully.

[CUSTANCE and TRUSTY *withdraw.*]

Actus iiiij. Scæna vij.

R. ROYSTER. M. MERYGREEKE. C. CUSTANCE. D. DOUGHTIE. HARPAX.
TRISTRAM TRUSTY.¹

R. ROYSTER. Nowe, sirs, keepe your ray, and see your
heartes be stoute!

But where be these caitifes? me think they dare not route!
How sayst thou, Merygreeke? What doth Kit Custance
say?

M. MERY. I am loth to tell you.

R. ROYSTER. Tushe, speake, man! yea or nay?

M. MERY. Forsooth, sir, I haue spoken for you all that I
can. 5

But, if ye winne hir, ye must een play the man;
Een to fight it out ye must a mans heart take.

R. ROYSTER. Yes, they shall know, and thou knowest
I haue a stomacke.

²[M. MERY.] "A stomacke," quod you? yea, as good as
ere man had.

R. ROYSTER. I trowe they shall finde and feele that I am
a lad. 10

M. MERY. By this crosse, I haue seene you eate your
meate as well

As any that ere I haue seene of or heard tell!

"A stomacke," quod you? he that will that denie,

I know was neuer at dynner in your companie!

R. ROYSTER. Nay, the stomacke of a man it is that I
meane. 15

M. MERY. Nay, the stomacke of a horse or a dogge, I
weene.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, a mans stomacke with a weapon
meane I.

¹ I have not inserted stage directions here, as usual, because I did not wish to disturb the order of the names. It will be observed that CUSTANCE does not enter until l. 41, and TRUSTY not until l. 76.

² Brackets in A.

M. MERY. Ten men can scarce match you with a spoone
in a pie.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, the stomake of a man to trie in strife.

M. MERY. I neuer sawe your stomacke cloyed yet in my
lyfe. 20

R. ROYSTER. Tushe! I meane in strife or fighting to trie.

M. MERY. We shall see how ye will strike nowe, being
angry.

R. ROYSTER. Haue at thy pate, then! and saue thy head
if thou may!

M. MERY. Nay, then, haue at your pate agayne, by this
day!

[*They strike at each other.*]

R. ROYSTER. Nay, thou mayst not strike at me againe, in
no wise. 25

M. MERY. I can not in fight make to you such warrantise.
But, as for your foes here, let them the bargaine bie.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, as for they, shall euery mothers childe
die!

And in this my fume a little thing might make me
To beate downe house and all, and else the deuill take me! 30

M. MERY. If I were as ye be, by Gogs deare mother,
I woulde not leaue one stone vpon an-other,
Though she woulde redeeme it with twentie thousand poundes!

R. ROYSTER. It shall be euen so, by His lily woundes!

M. MERY. Bee not at one with hir vpon any amendes. 35

R. ROYSTER. No, though she make to me neuer so many
frendes,

Nor if all the worlde for hir woulde vndertake ;
No, not God hymselfe, neither, shal not hir peace make !
On, therfore! marche forwarde! Soft ; stay a-whyle yet!

M. MERY. On!

R. ROYSTER. Tary!

M. MERY. Forth!

R. ROYSTER. Back!

M. MERY. On!

R. ROYSTER. Soft! Now forward set! 40

[CUSTANCE enters, and flees as if in terror.]

C. CUSTANCE. What businesse haue we here? out! alas!
alas!

R. ROYSTER. Ha, ha, ha, ha, ha!

Dydst thou see that, Merygreeke? how afrayde she was?

Dydst thou see how she fledde apace out of my sight?

Ah, good sweete Custance! I pitie hir, by this light! 45

M. MERY. That tender heart of yours wyll marre al together;¹

Thus will ye be turned with waggyng of a fether!

R. ROYSTER. On, sirs, keepe your ray!

M. MERY. On! forth, while this geare is hot!

R. ROYSTER. Soft; the armes of Caley's! I haue one thing forgot.

M. MERY. What lacke we now?

R. ROYSTER. Retire, or else we be all slain! 50

M. MERY. Backe, for the pashe of God! backe, sirs! backe againe!

What is the great mater?

R. ROYSTER. This hastie forth-goyng

Had almost brought vs all to vtter vndoing;

It made me forget a thing most necessarie.

M. MERY. Well remembred of a captaine, by Saint Marie! 55

R. ROYSTER. It is a thing must be had.

M. MERY. Let vs haue it, then.

R. ROYSTER. But I wote not where nor how.

M. MERY. Then wote not I when.

But what is it?

R. ROYSTER. Of a chiefe thing I am to seeke.

M. MERY. Tut! so will ye be, when ye haue studied a weke.

But tell me what it is.

R. ROYSTER. I lacke yet an hedpiece. 60

M. MERY. The kitchen collocauit, the best hennes to Grece,

¹ A. altogether.

Runne fet it, Dobinet, and come at once withall!
 And bryng with thee my potgunne, hangyng by the wall!

[*Exit DOBINET.*]

I haue seene your head with it, full many a tyme,
 Couered as safe as it had bene with a skrine; 65
 And I warrant it saue your head from any stroke,
 Except perchance to be amased with the smoke;
 I warrant your head therwith, except for the mist,
 As safe as if it were fast locked vp in a chist.
 And loe, here our Dobinet commeth with it nowe! 70

[*Enter DOBINET.*]

D. DOUGH. It will couer me to the shoulders well inow.

M. MERY. Let me see it on.

R. ROYSTER. In fayth, it doth metely well.

M. MERY. There can be no fitter thing. Now ye must
 vs tell

What to do.

R. ROYSTER. Now forth in ray, sirs, and stoppe no more!

M. MERY. Now Sainct George to borow! Drum dubbe-
 a-dubbe afore! 75

[*Enter TRUSTY.*]

T. TRUSTY. What meane you to do, sir? committe man-
 slaughter?

R. ROYSTER. To kyll fortie such, is a matter of laughter.

T. TRUSTY. And who is it, sir, whome ye intende thus to
 spill?

R. ROYSTER. Foolishe Custance here forceth me against
 my will.

T. TRUSTY. And is there no meane your extreme wrath
 to slake? 80

She shall some amendes vnto your good mashyp make.

R. ROYSTER. I will none amendes.

T. TRUSTY. Is hir offence so sore?

M. MERY. And he were a loute, she coulde haue done no
 more:

She hath calde him foole, and dressed him like a foole,
Mocked hym lyke a foole, vsed him like a foole. 85

T. TRUSTY. Well, yet the sheriffe, the iustice or constable,
Hir misdemeanour to punishe might be able.

R. ROYSTER. No, sir; I mine owne selfe will in this
present cause
Be sheriffe and iustice and whole iudge of the lawes;
This matter to amende, all officers be I shall, 90
Constable, bailiffe, sergeant.

M. MERY. And hangman and all.

T. TRUSTY. Yet a noble courage, and the hearte of a
man,
Should more honour winne by bearyng with a woman:
Therefore, take the lawe, and lette hir aunswere therto.

R. ROYSTER. Merygreeke, the best way were euen so to do; 95
What honour should it be with a woman to fight?

M. MERY. And what then? will ye thus forgo and lese
your right?

R. ROYSTER. Nay, I will take the lawe on hir withouten
grace.

T. TRUSTY. Or, yf your mashyp coulede pardon this one tres-
pace,

I pray you forgiue hir.

R. ROYSTER. Hoh?

M. MERY. Tushe! tushe, sir, do not! 100

[T. TRUSTY.]¹ Be good maister to hir.

R. ROYSTER. Hoh?

M. MERY. Tush, I say, do not!

And what! shall your people here returne streight home?

T. TRUSTIE. Yea, leuie the campe, sirs, and hence againe,
eche one!

[R. ROYSTER.]² But be still in readinesse if I happe to
call;

I can not tell what sodaine chaunce may befall. 105

M. MERY. Do not off your harnesse, sirs, I you aduise,
At the least for this fortnight, in no maner wise;

¹ A. omits.

² Omitted in original, says C.

Perchaunce in an houre when all ye thinke least,
Our maisters appetite to fight will be best.

But soft! ere ye go, haue once at Custance house! 110

R. ROYSTER. Soft! what wilt thou do?

M. MERY. Once discharge my harquebouse;
And, for my heartes ease, haue once more with my potgoon.

R. ROYSTER. Holde thy handes, else is all our purpose
cleane fordoone.

M. MERY. And it cost me my life!

R. ROYSTER. I say thou shalt not!

M. MERY. By the matte, but I will! Haue once more
with haile-shot! 115

I will haue some penyworth; I will not leese all!

Actus iiij. Scæna viij.

M. MERYGREEKE. C. CUSTANCE. R. ROYSTER. TIB. T. AN. ALYFACE.
M. MUMBLECRUST. TRUPENIE. DOBINET DOUGHTIE. HARPAX. *Two
drummes with their ensignes.*¹

C. CUSTANCE. What caitifes are those that so shake my
house-wall?

M. MERY. Ah, sirrha! now, Custance, if ye had so muche
wit,

I woulde see you aske pardon and your-selues submit.

C. CUSTANCE. Haue I still this adoe with a couple of
fooles?

M. MERY. Here ye what she saith?

C. CUSTANCE. Maidens, come forth with your tooles! 5

[*The MAIDS enter, armed.*]

R. ROYSTER. In a-ray —

M. MERY. Dubba-dub, sirrha!

R. ROYSTER. In a-ray

They come sodainly on vs.

M. MERY. Dubbadub!

¹ CUSTANCE comes out at the beginning of the scene; the MAIDS enter later.

R. ROYSTER. In a-ray!
That euer I was borne! We are taken tardie!

M. MERY. Now, sirs, quite our-selues like tall men and hardie.

C. CUSTANCE. On afore, Truepenie! holde thyne owne, Annot!

10

On towarde them, Tibet! for scape vs they can not.
Come forth, Madge Mumblecrust! so! stand fast together!

M. MERY. God sende vs a faire day.

R. ROYSTER. See, they marche on hither!

TIB. TALK. But, mistresse!

C. CUSTANCE. What sayst thou?¹

TIB. [TALK.] Shall I go fet our goose?

C. CUSTANCE. What to do?

TIB. [TALK.] To yonder captain I will turne hir loose:

15

And she gape and hisse at him as she doth at me,
I durst ieoparde my hande she wyll make him flee.

[*They fight.*]

C. CUSTANCE. On! forward!

R. ROYSTER. They com!

M. MERY. Stand!

R. ROYSTER. Hold!

M. MERY. Kepe!

R. ROYSTER. There!

M. MERY. Strike!

R. ROYSTER. Take heede!

C. CUSTANCE. Wel sayd, Truepeny!

TRUPENY. Ah, whooresons!

C. CUSTANCE. Wel don, in-deede!

M. MERY. Hold thine owne, Harpax! downe with them, Dobinet!

20

C. CUSTANCE. Now, Madge! there, Annot! now sticke them, Tibet!

TIB. TALK. All my chiefe quarell is to this same little knaue

¹ A. you.

That begyled me last day ; nothyng shall him saue!

D. DOUGH. Downe with this litle queane that hath at
me such spite!

Saue you from hir, maister, it is a very sprite! 25

C. CUSTANCE. I my-selfe will Mounsire graunde captaine
vndertake!

R. ROYSTER. They win grounde!

M. MERY. Saue your-selfe, sir, for Gods sake!

R. ROYSTER. Out! alas, I am slaine! helpe!

M. MERY. Saue your-self!

R. ROYSTER. Alas!

M. MERY. Nay, then, haue at you, mistresse!

R. ROYSTER. Thou hittest me, alas!

M. MERY. I wil strike at Custance here.

R. ROYSTER. Thou hittest me!

M. MERY. So I wil! 30

Nay, Mistresse Custance!

R. ROYSTER. Alas, thou hittest me still!

Hold!

M. MERY. Saue your-self, sir.

R. ROYSTER. Help! out! alas, I am slain!

M. MERY. Truce! hold your hands! truce for a pissing-
while or twaine!

Nay, how say you, Custance? for sauing of your life,
Will ye yelde, and graunt to be this gentmans wife? 35

C. CUSTANCE. Ye tolde me he loued me; call ye this
loue?

M. MERY. He loued a-while euen like a turtle-doue.

C. CUSTANCE. Gay loue, God saue it, so soone hotte, so
soone colde!

M. MERY. I am sory for you : he could loue you yet, so
he coule.

R. ROYSTER. Nay, by Cocks precious, she shall be none
of mine! 40

M. MERY. Why so?

R. ROYSTER. Come away; by the matte, she is
mankine!

I durst aduenture the losse of my right hande
If shee dyd not slee hir other husbände.

And see, if she prepare not againe to fight!

M. MERY. What then? Sainct George to borow, our
Ladies knight!

45

R. ROYSTER. Slee else whom she will, by Gog, she shall
not slee mee!

M. MERY. How then?

R. ROYSTER. Rather than to be slaine, I will flee.

C. CUSTANCE. Too it againe, my knightesses! downe
with them all!

R. ROYSTER. Away! away! away! she will else kyll vs
all!

M. MERY. Nay, sticke to it, like an hardie man and a tall. 50

R. ROYSTER. Oh, bones! thou hittest me! Away! or else
die we shall!

M. MERY. Away, for the pashe of our sweete Lord Iesus
Christ!

C. CUSTANCE. Away, loute and lubber! or I shall be thy
priest!

[ROISTER DOISTER *and his MEN flee.*]¹

So this field is ours, we haue driuen them all away!

TIB. TALK. Thanks to God, mistresse, ye haue had a
faire day!

55

C. CUSTANCE. Well, nowe goe ye in, and make your-selfe
some good cheere.

ALL.² We goe.

[*Exeant MAIDS*]

T. TRUST. Ah, sir, what a field we haue had heere!

C. CUSTANCE. Friend Tristram, I pray you, be a witnesse
with me.

T. TRUSTY. Dame Custance, I shall depose for your
honestie.

And nowe fare ye well, except some-thing else ye wolde. 60

¹ A. Exeant om.

² A. *Omnes pariter.*

C. CUSTANCE. Not now; but, when I nede to sende, I
will be bolde. *Exeat.*

I thanke you for these paines. And now I wyll get me in;
Now Roister Doister will no more wowyng begin.

Ex[eat].

Actus v. Scæna j.

GAWYN GOODLUCKE. SYM SURESBY.

[G. GOODL.] Sym Suresby, my trustie man, nowe aduise
thee well,

And see that no false surmises thou me tell:

Was there such adoe about Custance, of a truth?

SIM SURE. To reporte that I hearde and sawe, to me is
ruth,

But both my duetie and name and propretie

5

Warneth me to you to shewe fidelitie.

It may be well enough, and I wyshe it so to be;

She may hir-selfe discharge and trie hir honestie;

Yet their clayme to hir, me thought, was very large,

For with letters, rings and tokens they dyd hir charge:

10

Which when I hearde and sawe, I would none to you bring.

G. GOODL. No, by Sainct Marie, I allowe thee in that
thing!

Ah, sirra, nowe I see truthe in the prouerbe olde:

All things that shineth is not by-and-by pure golde.

If any doe lyue a woman of honestie,

15

I would haue sworne Christian Custance had bene shee.

SIM SURE. Sir, though I to you be a seruant true and iust,

Yet doe not ye therfore your faithfull spouse mystrust;

But examine the matter, and if ye shall it finde

To be all well, be not ye for my wordes vnkinde.

20

G. GOODL. I shall do that is right, and as I see cause why.
But here commeth Custance forth; we shal know by-and-by.

Actus v. Scæna ij.

C. CUSTANCE. GAWYN GOODLUCKE. SYM SURESBY.

C. CUSTANCE. I come forth to see and hearken for newes
good,

For about this houre is the tyme, of likelyhood,
That Gawyn Goodlucke, by the sayings of Suresby,
Would be at home ; and lo, yond I see hym, I!
What, Gawyn Goodlucke, the onely hope of my life,
Welcome home, and kysse me, your true espoused wife!

5

GA. GOOD. Nay, soft, Dame Custance! I must first, by
your licence,
See whether all things be cleere in your conscience.
I heare of your doings to me very straunge.

C. CUSTANCE. What, feare ye that my faith towardes
you should change?

10

GA. GOOD. I must needes mistrust ye be elsewhere en-
tangled,
For I heare that certaine men with you haue wrangled
About the promise of mariage by you to them made.

C. CUSTANCE. Coulede any mans reporte your minde
therein persuade?

GA. GOOD. Well, ye must therin declare your-selfe to
stande cleere,
Else I and you, Dame Custance, may not ioyné this yere.

15

C. CUSTANCE. Then woulde I were dead and faire layd
in my graue!

Ah, Suresby, is this the honestie that ye haue?
To hurt me with your report, not knowyng the thing?

SIM SURE. If ye be honest, my wordes can hurt you
nothing;

20

But what I hearde and sawe, I might not but report.

C. CUSTANCE. Ah, Lorde, helpe poore widowes, destitute
of comfort!

Truly, most deare spouse, nought was done but for pastance.

G. GOOD. But such kynde of sporting is homely daliance.

C. CUSTANCE. If ye knewe the truthe, ye would take all
in good parte. 25

GA. GOOD. By your leaue, I am not halfe-well skilled in
that arte.

C. CUSTANCE. It was none but Roister Doister, that
foolishe mome.

GA. GOOD. Yea, Custance! "Better," they say, "a badde
scuse than none."

C. CUSTANCE. Why, Tristram Trustie, sir, your true and
faithfull frende,

Was priuie bothe to the beginning and the ende; 30

Let him be the iudge and for me testifie.

GA. GOOD. I will the more credite that he shall verifie.

And, bicause I will the truthe know een as it is,

I will to him my-selfe, and know all without misse.

Come on, Sym Suresby, that before my friend thou may 35

Auouch the same wordes which thou dydst to me say.

Exeant [all but CUSTANCE].

Actus v. Scæna iij.

CHRISTIAN CUSTANCE.

C. CUSTANCE. O Lorde, howe necessarie it is nowe-of-dayes,
That eche bodie liue vprightly all maner wayes;

For, lette neuer so little a gappe be open,

And be sure of this, the worst shall be spoken!

Howe innocent stande I in this for deede or thought! 5

And yet see what mistrust towards me it hath wrought!

But thou, Lorde, knowest all folkes thoughts and eke intents;

And thou arte the deliuerer of all innocentes.

Thou didst helpe the aduoutresse that she might be amended,

Much more then helpe, Lorde, that neuer yll intended! 10

Thou didst helpe Susanna, wrongfully accused,

And no lesse dost thou see, Lorde, how I am now abused.

Thou didst helpe Hester, when she should haue died,

Helpe also, good Lorde, that my truth may be tried!

Yet, if Gawin Goodlucke with Tristram Trusty speake, 15
 I trust of yll report the force shall be but weake.
 And loe! yond they come, sadly talking together;
 I wyll abyde, and not shrinke, for their comming hither.

Actus v. Scæna iiij.

GAWYN GOODLUCKE. TRISTRAM TRUSTIE. C. CUSTANCE. SYM SURESBY.¹

GA. GOOD. And was it none other than ye to me reporte?

TRISTRAM. No; and here were ye wished to haue seene
 the sporte.

GA. GOOD. Woulde I had, rather than halfe of that in
 my purse.

SIM SURE. And I doe muche reioyce the matter was no
 wurse;

And, like as to open it I was to you faithfull, 5

So of Dame Custance honest truth I am ioyfull;

For God forfende that I shoulde hurt hir by false reporte.

GA. GOOD. Well, I will no longer holde hir in discom-
 forte.

C. CUSTANCE. Nowe come they hitherwarde, I trust all
 shall be well.

GA. GOOD. Sweete Custance, neither heart can thinke
 nor tongue tell 10

Howe much I ioy in your constant fidelitie.

Come nowe, kisse me, the pearle of perfect honestie!

C. CUSTANCE. God lette me no longer to continue in lyfe
 Than I shall towards you continue a true wyfe!

GA. GOODL. Well now, to make you for this some parte
 of amendes, 15

I shall desire first you, and then suche of our frendes

As shall to you seeme best, to suppe at home with me,

Where at your fought felde we shall laugh and mery be.

SIM SURE. And, mistresse, I beseech you, take with me
 no greefe,

¹ *The three men advance together towards CUSTANCE.*

- I did a true mans part, not wishyng you repreefe. 20
- C. CUSTANCE. Though hastie reportes through surmises
growyng
May of poore innocentes be vtter ouerthrowyng,
Yet, bicause to thy maister thou hast a true hart,
And I know mine owne truth, I forgiue thee for my part.
- GA. GOODL. Go we all to my house; and of this geare
no more! 25
- Goe prepare all things, Sym Suresby; hence, runne afore!
- SIM SURE. I goe. *Ex[eat].*
- G. GOOD. But who commeth yond? M. Merygreeke?
- C. CUSTANCE. Roister Doisters champion, I shrewe his
best cheeke.
- T. TRUSTY. Roister Doister selfe, your wower, is with
him, too;
- Surely some-thing there is with vs they haue to doe. 30

Actus v. Scæna v.

[*Enter*] M. MERYGREEKE [*and*] RALPH ROISTER [*to*] GAWYN GOODLUCKE,
TRISTRAM TRUSTIE [*and*] C. CUSTANCE.

- M. MERY. Yond I see Gawyn Goodlucke, to whom lyeth
my message;
- I will first salute him after his long voyage,
And then make all thing well concerning your behalfe.
- R. ROYSTER. Yea, for the pashe of God!
- M. MERY. Hence out of sight, ye calfe,
Till I haue spoke with them, and then I will you fet, 5
- R. ROYSTER. In Gods name!
- M. MERY. What, Master Gawin Goodluck, wel met!
And from your long voyage I bid you right welcome
home.
- GA. GOOD. I thanke you.
- M. MERY. I come to you from an honest mome.
- GA. GOOD. Who is that?
- M. MERY. Roister Doister, that doughtie kite.

C. CUSTANCE. Fye! I can scarce abide ye shoulde his name recite.

10

M. MERY. Ye must take him to fauour, and pardon all past;

He heareth of your returne, and is full yll agast.

GA. GOOD. I am ryght well content he haue with vs some chere.

C. CUSTANCE. Fye vpon him, beast! then wyll not I be there!

GA. GOOD. Why, Custance do ye hate hym more than ye loue me?

15

C. CUSTANCE. But for your mynde, sir, where he were would I not be!

T. TRUSTY. He woulde make vs al laugh.

M. MERY. Ye nere had better sport.

GA. GOOD. I pray you, sweete Custance, let him to vs resort.

C. CUSTANCE. To your will I assent.

M. MERY. Why, suche a foole it is
As no man for good pastime would forgoe or misse.

20

G. GOODL. Fet him to go wyth vs.

M. MERY. He will be a glad man.

Ex[eat].

T. TRUSTY. We must, to make vs mirth, maintaine hym all we can.

And loe, yond he commeth, and Merygreeke with him!

C. CUSTANCE. At his first entrance ye shall see I wyll him trim;

But first let vs hearken the gentlemans wise talke.

25

T. TRUSTY. I pray you marke if euer ye sawe crane so stalke.

Actus v. Scæna vj.

R. ROYSTER. M. MERYGREEKE. C. CUSTANCE. G. GOODLUCKE. T.
TRUSTIE. D. DOUGHTIE. HARPAX.¹

R. ROYSTER. May I then be bolde?

M. MERY. I warrant you, on my worde;

They say they shall be sicke but ye be at theyr borde.

R. ROYSTER. Thei wer not angry, then?

M. MERY. Yes, at first, and made strange;

But, when I sayd your anger to fauour shoulde change,

And therewith had commended you accordingly,

5

They were all in loue with your mashyp by-and-by,

And cried you mercy that they had done you wrong.

R. ROYSTER. For-why no man, woman, nor childe can
hate me long.

M. MERY. "We feare," quod they, "he will be auenged
one day,

Then for a peny giue all our liues we may."

10

R. ROYSTER. Sayd they so in-deede?

M. MERY. Did they? yea, euen with one voice.

"He will forgiue all," quod I; oh, how they did reioyce!

R. ROYSTER. Ha, ha, ha!

M. MERY. "Goe fette hym," say they, "while he is in
good moode,

For, haue his anger who lust, we will not, by the roode!"

15

R. ROYSTER. I pray God that it be all true that thou
hast me tolde,

And that she fight no more.

M. MERY. I warrant you; be bolde,

Too them, and salute them!

R. ROYSTER. Sirs, I greeete you all well!

OMNES. Your maistership is welcom!

C. CUSTANCE. Sauyng my quarell;

For, sure, I will put you vp into the Eschequer.

20

M. MERY. Why so? better nay; wherfore?

¹ DOUGHTIE and HARPAX do not enter until l. 43.

C. CUSTANCE. For an vsurer.

R. ROYSTER. I am no vsurer, good mistresse, by His armes!

M. MERY. When tooke he gaine of money to any mans harmes?

C. CUSTANCE. Yes, a fowle vsurer he is, ye shall see els.

R. ROYSTER. Didst not thou promise she would picke no mo quarels? 25

C. CUSTANCE. He will lende no blowes but he haue in recompence

Fiftene for one; whiche is to mucche, of conscience!

R. ROYSTER. Ah, dame, by the auncient lawe of armes, a man

Hath no honour to foile¹ his handes on a woman.

C. CUSTANCE. And, where other vsurers take their gaines yerely, 30

This man is angry but he haue his by-and-by.

GA. GOODL. Sir, doe not for hir sake beare me your displeasure.

M. MERY. Well, he shall with you talke therof more at leasure.

Vpon your good vsage, he will now shake your hande.

R. ROYSTER. And much heartily welcome from a straunge lande! 35

M. MERY. Be not afearde, Gawyn, to let him shake your fyst!

GA. GOODL. Oh the moste honeste gentleman that ere I wist!

I beseeche your mashyp to take payne to suppe with vs!

M. MERY. He shall not say you nay and I too, by Iesus!

Bicause ye shall be friends, and let all quarels passe. 40

R. ROYSTER. I wyll be as good friends with them as ere I was.

M. MERY. Then let me fet your quier that we may haue a song.

R. ROYSTER. Goe. [Exeat.]

¹ Both A. and C. have foile, not foile; cf. Cymbeline, ii, 3, 126.

G. GOODLUCK. I haue hearde no melodie all this yeare
long.

[Enter MERYGREEKE with MUSICIANS.]

M. MERY. Come on, sirs, quickly!

R. ROYSTER. Sing on, sirs, for my frends sake!

D. DOUGH. Cal ye these your frends?

R. ROYSTER. Sing on, and no mo words make! 45

Here they sing.

GA. GOOD. The Lord preserue our most noble Queene of
renowne,

And hir virtues rewarde with the heauenly crowne.

C. CUSTANCE. The Lorde strengthen hir most excellent
Maiestie,

Long to reigne ouer vs in all prosperitie.

T. TRUSTY. That hir godly proceedings the faith to
defende 50

He may stablishe and maintaine through to the ende.

M. MERY. God graunt hir, as she doth, the Gospell to
protect,

Learning and vertue to aduaunce, and vice to correct.

R. ROYSTER. God graunt hir louyng subiects both the
minde and grace

Hir most godly procedyngs worthily to imbrace. 55

HARPAX. Hir Highnesse most worthy counsellers God
prosper

With honour and loue of all men to minister.

OMNES. God graunt the Nobilitie hir to serue and loue,
With all the whole Commontie, as doth them behoue.

Amen.

FINIS.

on one's estimate of its humor.
Superior to other play.
Better in dramatic art.

A Right Characterized

better in it.

Prof. M.

Pithy, Pleasaut and me
rie Comedie: In-

prefers
this latter
one.

tytuled Gammer gur-

Rather low
grade of

tons Nedle: Played on

humor, but

Stage, not longe

still humor

ago in Chri-

A humorous
situation, humor.

ftes

only carried on.

Colledge in Cambridge.

Forget your
20th century

refinement and you will
enjoy the play.

More popular dialect than

Made by Mr. S. Mr. of Art.

Rainter Daiter, which was
written for an educated
audience, by an educated
man. This was written

Imprented at London in

Fleetstreet beneath the Con-

duit at the figne of S. John

more for
the common
people.

Euangelift by Tho-
mas Colwell.

presents them
and gives inside

views of their farm life
Has more reality than R.D.

First seen
by Reed
and still.

His main argu-
ment, still only
M.A. at times
in Christ's Colledge,
with S. Resard
buy up 13 names
with S. in same
year, 1566.

Authorship of *John Still* (1543-1565, M.A. at Cambridge; 1572 year of Docks - credited as author for many years. 1575 vice - Chancellor.

Printed from the earliest extant edition (Thomas Colwell, London, 1575), which, however, was probably not the first edition, for "a playe intituled DYCCON OF BEDLAM, &c.," was licensed to Colwell in 1562. In the footnotes, Co. indicates the 1575 edition; Dods. indicates the edition in Dodsley's "Old Plays" (1825); Haz. indicates Hazlitt's edition of Dodsley. In this, as in the other plays printed in this volume, only significant variants are recorded.

The titlepage is a reprint, but not a facsimile, of the old titlepage.

For a discussion of date and authorship, see vol. III.

received until 1608, death. "Biographia Dramatica," 1782, said he was author.

THE NAMES OF THE SPEAKERS IN THIS COMEDIE.

Up to about
time ago, no
doubt. But
that he wrote
t. opinion

DICCON, *the Bedlem.* *aim to get something to eat.*
HODGE, *Gammer Gurtons seruante.*
TYB, *Gammer Gurtons mayde.*
GAMMER GURTON.
COCKE,¹ *Gammer Gurtons boye.*
DAME CHATTE.
DOCTOR RAT, *the Curate.*
MAYSTER BAYLYE.
DOLL, *Dame Chattes mayde.*
SCAPETHRYFT,² *Mayst Beylies seruante.*

Mutes.

[SCENE: *A village in England.*]

GOD SAUE THE QUEENE!³

¹ Co. Docks.

³ Omitted by Dods. Haz.

² Co. Scapethryk.

John Still not author. His
disposition serious. Not known
to have written any play.
Religious nature. Logical. Not
rhetorical. Not in favor of P. writers.

depends on various fortunes
of an inanimate thing.

[GAMMER GURTONS NEDLE.]

1575

The Prologue.

states plot.

As Gammer Gurton, with manye a wyde styche,
Sat pesynge *and* patching of Hodg her¹ mans briche,
By chance or misfortune, as shee her geare tost,
In Hodge lether bryches her needle shee lost.
When Diccon the bedlem² had hard by report 5
That good Gammer Gurton was robde in thys sorte,
He quyetly perswaded with her in that stound }
Dame Chat, her deare gossyp, this needle had found.
Yet knew shee no more of this matter, alas!
Then knoeth Tom, our clarke, what the priest saith at masse. 10
Here-of there ensued so fearfull a fraye
Mas Doctor was sent for, these gossyps to staye,
Because he was Curate, and estemed full wyse:
Who found that he sought not, by Diccons deuce.
When all thinges were tombled and cleane out of fassion, 15
Whether it were by fortune, or some other constellacion,
Sodenlye the neele Hodge found by the prickynge,
And drew it³ out of his bottocke, where he felt⁴ it stickynge.
Theyr hartes then at rest with perfect securytie,
With a pot of good nale they stroake vp their plauditie. 20

¹ Co. Hodgher.

³ Dods. *omits* it.

² Dods. bedlam.

⁴ Dods. found.

wouldnt countenance them. Economic
& practical. Called upon to provide
Comedy, 1892, for Queen's amusement.
Said he might provide Latin play
but not English.

The fyrst Acte. The fyrst Sceane.

[A street or field near GAMMER GURTON'S house.]

[Enter] DICCON.

DICCON. Many a myle haue I walked, diuers and sundry
waies,
And many a good mans house haue I bin at in my daies ;
Many a gossips cup in my tyme haue I tasted,
And many a broche and spyt haue I both turned and
basted ;
Many a peece of bacon haue I had out of thir balkes 5
In ronnyng ouer the countrey with long and were walkes ;
Yet came my foote neuer within those doore-cheekes,
To seeke flesh or fysh, garlyke, onyons or leekes,
That euer I saw a sorte in such a plyght
As here within this house appereth to my syght. 10
There is howlyng and scowlyng,¹ all cast in a dumpe,²
With whewling and pewling, as though they had lost a
trump ;
Syghing and sobbing, they weepe and they wayle :
I meruell in my mynd what the deuill they ayle.
The olde trot syts groning, with alas! and alas! 15
And Tib wringes her hands, *and* takes on in worse case,
With poore Cocke, theyr boye. They be dryuen in such fyts
I feare mee the folkes be not well in theyr wyts.
Aske them what they ayle, or who brought them in this staye,
They aunswer not at all but alacke! and welaway! 20
Whan I saw it booted not, out at doores I hyed mee,
And caught a slyp of bacon, when I saw that³ none spyed
mee,
Which I intend not far hence, vnles my purpose fayle,
Shall serue for a shoinghorne to draw on two pots of ale.

¹ Dods. schowlyng.

² Co. abumpe.

³ Dods. *omits* that.

The fyrst Acte. The second Sceane.

[*The same place.*][*Enter*] HODGE [*to*] DICCON.

HODGE. See! so cham arayed with dablynge in the durt!
 She that set me to ditchinge, ich wold she had the squirt!¹
 Was neuer poore soule that such a life had!
 Gogs bones, thys vylthy glaye hase drest mee to² bad!
 Gods soule, see how this stuffe teares!

5

[*Examining the rents in his breeches.*]

Ich were better to bee a bearward and set to keepe beares!
 By the masse, here is a gasshe! a shamefull hole in-deade!
 And one stytych teare furder, a man may thruste in his heade.

DICCON. By my fathers soule, Hodge, if I shulde now be
 sworne,

I can not chuse but say thy breech is foule be-torne!

10

But the next remedye in such a case and hap
 Is to plaunche on a piece as brode as thy cap.

HODGE. Gogs soule, man, tis not yet two dayes fully
 ended

Synce my dame Gurton, chem³ sure, these breches amended!
 But cham made such⁴ a drudge, to trudge at euery neede,
 Chwold rend it though it were stitched wath⁵ sturdy pac-
 threede.

15

DICCON. Hoge, let thy breeches go, and speake and tell
 mee soone
 What deuill ayleth Gammer Gurton and Tib, her mayd, to
 frowne.

HODGE. Tush, man, thart deceyued! tys theyr dayly
 looke;

They coure so ouer *the* coles theyr eyes be bleard with smooke.

20

¹ Dods. squirt.³ Dods. cham.² Dods. too.⁴ Co. suce; *corr.* by Dods., *who gives Co. as succ.*⁵ Co. what; Dods. *prints* wath, *without note.*

DICCON. Nay, by the masse, I perfectly perceiued, as I
came hether,

That eyther Tib *and* her dame hath ben by the eares together,
Or els as great a matter, as thou shalt shortly see.

HODGE. Now iche beseche our Lord they neuer better
agree!

DICCON. By Gogs soule, there they syt as still as stones
in the streite,

25

As though they had ben taken with fairies or els *wit*h some
il sprite.¹

HODGE. Gogs hart, I durst haue layd my cap to a crowne
Chwould lerne of some prancome as sone as ich come to
town!

DICCON. Why, Hodge, art thou inspyred? or dedst thou
therof here?

HODGE. Nay; but ich saw such a wonder as ich saw nat
this vii yere:

30

Tome Tannkards cow — be Gogs bones! — she set me vp
her saile,

And flynging about his halfe-aker,² fysking with her taile,
As though there had ben in her ars a swarme of bees.

And chad not cryed, “Tphrowh, hoore!” shead lept out of
his lees.

DICCON. Why, Hodg, lies the connyng in Tom Tan-
kards coves taile?

35

HODGE. Well, ich chaue hard some say such tokens do
not fayle.

But ca[n]st *thou* not tell,³ in faith, Diccon, why she frownes,
or wher-at?

Hath no man stolne her ducks or henes, or gelded Gyb, her
cat?

DICCON. What deuyll can I tell, man? I cold not haue
one word;

They gaue no more hede to my talk then thou woldst to a
lorde.

40

¹ Dods. spreet.

³ Co. till.

² Dods. *reads* halse aker, *and suggests* halse anker.

HODGE. Iche cannot styll but muse what meruaylous
thinge it is!

Chyll in and know my-selfe what matters are amys.

DICCON. Then farewell, Hodge, a-while, synce thou doest
inward hast,

For I will into the good-wyfe Chats, to feele how the ale
dooth ¹ taste.

[*Exit* DICCON.]

The fyrst Acte. The thyrd Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

HODGE [*is met by*] TYB.

HODGE. Cham agast, by the masse! ich wot not what to
do.

Chad nede blesse me well before ich go them to!

Perchance some felon sprit may haunt our house indeed,
And then chwere but a ² noddy to venter where cha no nede!

TIB. Cham worse then mad, by the masse, to be at this
staye!

Cham chyd, cham blamd, and beaton ³ all thoures on the
daye,

Lamed and hunger-storued, prycked vp all in iagges,
Hauyng no patch to hyde my backe, saue a few rotten ragges!

HODGE. I say, Tyb,—if thou be Tyb, as I trow sure
thou bee,—

What deuyll make-a-doe is this betweene our dame and thee? 10

TYB. Gogs breade, Hodg, thou had a good turne thou
warte not here this while! ⁴

It had ben better for some of vs to haue ben hence a myle!
My gammer is so out of course and frantyke all at ones
That Cocke, our boy, *and* I, poore wench, haue felt it on our
bones.

¹ Dods. does.

² Co. at.

³ Co. beat on.

⁴ *In* Co. *this is the last line of A. iii. recto, and here is the end of the line.* Dods. *prints* this while, *without note.*

HODGE. What is the matter — say on, Tib! — wherat she taketh so on? 15

TYB. She is vndone, she sayth ; alas! her ioye and life is gone!

If shee here not of some comfort, she is, sayth,¹ but dead, — Shall neuer come within her lyps one inch of meate ne bread!

HODGE. Byr Ladie, cham not very glad to see her in this dumpe.

Cholde a noble her stole hath fallen *and* shee hath broke her rumpe! 20

TYB. Nay, and that were the worst! — we wold not greatly care

For bursting of her huckle-bone or breakyng of her chaire ; But greater, greater, is her grief, as, Hodge, we shall all feele!

HODGE. Gogs woundes, Tyb! my gammer has neuer lost her neele?

TYB. Her neele.

HODGE. Her neele?

TIB. Her neele.² 25

By him that made me, it is true, Hodge, I tell thee!

HODGE. Gogs sacrament, I would she had lost tharte out of her bellie!

The deuill, or els his dame, they ought her, sure, a shame ! How a murryon came this chaunce — say, Tib! — vnto our dame?

TYB. My gammer sat her downe on her pes, *and* had me reach thy breeches, 30

And by-*and*-by, — a vengeance in it! — or she had take two stitches

To clap³ a clout vpon thine ars, by chaunce a-syde she leares, And Gyb, our cat, in the milke-pan she spied ouer head and eares.

¹ Dods. *emends* to shee sayth she is.

² In Co. Dods. *these two words are part of the following line.*

³ Dods. clout.

“Ah, hore! out, thefe!”¹ she cryed aloud, *and* swapt the breches downe.

Up went her staffe, and out leapt Gyb at doors into the towne.

35

And synce that time was neuer wyght cold set their eies vpon it.

Gogs malison chawe Cocke and I byd twenty times light on it.

HODGE. And is not, then, my breches sewid vp, to-morow *that* I shuld were?

TYB. No, in faith, Hodge, thy breeches lie, for al this, neuer the nere.

HODGE. Now a vengeance light on al *the* sort, *that* better shold haue kept it, —

40

The cat, the house, and Tib, our maid, *that* better shold haue swept it!

Se where she commeth crawling! Come on, in twenty deuils way!

Ye haue made a fayre daies worke, haue you not? pray you say!

The fyrst Acte. The iiij Scene.

[*The same place.*]

[*Enter*] GAMMER [*to*] HODGE [*and*] TYB. COCKE [*comes later*].

GAMMER.² Alas, Hoge,³ alas! I may well curse and ban

This daie, that euer I saw it, with Gyb and the mylke-pan!
For these and ill lucke to-gather, as knoweth Cocke, my boye,

Haue stacke away my deare neele, and robd me of my ioye, —
My fayre, longe, strayght neele, that was myne onely treasure!

5

The fyrst day of my sorow is, and last end of my pleasure!

¹ Dods. these.

² Here and below Co. regularly has Gāmer.

³ Omitted by Dods.

HODGE. Might ha kept it when ye had it! but fooles will
be fooles styll!

Lose that is vast in your handes? — ye neede not; but ye
will!

GAMMER. Go hie thee, Tib, and run, thou hoore, to thend
here of the towne!

Didst cary out dust in thy lap; seeke wher thou porest it
downe,¹

10

And, as thou sawest me roking² in the asshes where I
morned,

So see in all the heaps of dust thou leave no straw vnturned.

TYB. That chal, Gammer, swythe and tyte, and sone be
here agayne!

[Goes to the dust-pile.]

GAMMER. Tib, stoope, *and* loke downe to *the* ground!
To it, *and* take some paine!

HODGE. Here is a prety matter, to see this gere how it
goes.

15

By Gogs soule, I think you wold loes your ars and it were
loose!

Your neele lost? it is a³ pitie you shold lack care and end-
lesse sorrow!

Gogs deth, how shall my breches be sewid? Shall I go thus
to-morow?

GAMMER. Ah, Hodg, Hodg! if that ich cold find my
neele, by the reed,

Chould sow thy breches, ich promise *that*,⁴ *with* full good
double threed,⁵

20

And set a patch on either knee shuld last this monethes
twaine.

Now God *and* good Saint Sithe I praye to send it home
again!

HODGE. Wherto serued your hands *and* eies, but this
your neele to kepe?

¹ Co. dowde; *corr.* by Dods.

³ Omitted by Dods.

² *Qy.* raking.

⁴ Dods. *the, which is, perhaps, better.*

What deuill had you els to do? ye kept,¹ ich wot, no sheepe!
 Cham faine a-brode to dyg and delue, in water, myre and
 claye,

25

Sossing and possing in the durte styll from day to daye;
 A hundred thinges that be abrode, cham set to see them weele,
 And foure of you syt idle at home, and can not keepe a neele!

GAMMER. My neele, alas! ich lost it, Hodge, what time
 ich me vp-hasted

To saue the milke set vp for the, which Gib, our cat, hath
 wasted.

30

HODGE. The deuill he burst both Gib and Tib, with all
 the rest!

Cham alwayes sure of the worst end, who-euer haue the best!
 Where ha you ben fidging abrode since you your neele lost?

GAMMER. Within the house, and at the dore, sitting by
 this same post,

Wher I was loking a long howre, before these folks came
 here;

35

But, welaway! all was in vayne, my neele is neuer the nere!

HODGE. Set² me a candle; let me seeke, and grope
 where-euer it bee.

Gogs hart, ye be so folish, ich thinke, you knowe it not when
 you it see!

GAMMER. Come hether, Cocke! what, Cocke, I say!

[Enter COCKE.]

COCKE. Howe, Gammer!

GAMMER. Goe hye the soone
 And grope behynd the old brasse pan, whych thing when
 thou hast done,³

40

Ther shalt thou fynd an old shooe, wher-in, if thou looke well,
 Thou shalt fynd lyeng an inche of a⁴ whyte tallow-candell;
 Lyght it and brynge it tite awaye.

COCKE. That shalbe done anone.

¹ Dods. keep.

² *Qy.* Fet or Get.

³ *These two lines as four in Co. Dods. Haz., ending say, Gammer, pan,*
 done.

⁴ *Omitted by Dods.*

[*Goes into the house.*]

GAMMER. Nay, tary, Hodg, til thou hast light, and then
.weele seke ech one.

HODGE. Cum away, ye horsen boy, are ye a slepe? ye
must haue a crier!

45

COCKE. Ich cannot get the candel light: here is almost
no fier.

HODGE. Chil hold the a peny chil make *the* come if *that*
ich may catch thine eares!

Art deffe, thou horson boy? Cocke, I say, why canst not
heares?¹

GAMMER. Beate hym not, Hodge, but help the boy, and
come you two together.

[*HODGE goes into the house.*]

The i Acte. The v Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

GAMMER [*alone*]. [*Enter*] TYB, [*then*] COCKE, [*then*] HODGE.

GAMMER. How now, Tyb? quycke, lets here what newes
thou hast brought hether!

[*TYB returns from the dust-pile.*]

TYB. Chaue tost and tumbled yender heap ou[e]r *and*
ouer againe,

And winowed it through my fingers, as men wold winow
grain, —

Not so much as a hens turd but in pieces I tare it,
Or what-so-euer clod or clay I found, I did not spare it, —

5

Lokyng within, and eke without, to fynd your neele, alas!
But all in vaine and without help, — your neele is where it was.

GAMMER. Alas, my neele! we shall neuer meete! adue!
adue, for aye!

TYB. Not so, Gammer, we myght it fynd if we knew
where it laye.

¹ Dods. hear's.

[Enter COCKE from the house.]

COCKE. Gogs crosse, Gammer, if ye will laugh, looke in
but at the doore, 10
And see how Hodg lieth tomblynge and tossing amidst the
floure,

Rakyng there some fyre to find amonge the asshes dead,
Where there is not one sparke so byg as a pyns head.
At last in a darke corner two sparkes he thought he sees,
Whiche^e were,¹ indede, nought els but Gyb our cats two eyes. 15
“Puffe!” quod Hodg, thinking therby to haue fyre without
doubt;

With that Gyb shut her two eyes, *and* so the fyre was out.
And by-and-by them opened, euen as they were before;
With that the sparkes appered, euen as they had done of
yore.

And, euen as Hodge blew the fire, as he did thincke, 20
Gyb, as she felt the blast, strayght-way began to wyncke,
Tyll Hodge fell of swering, as came best to his turne,
The fier was sure bewicht, and therefore wold not burne.
At last Gyb vp the stayers, among the old postes and pinnes,
And Hodge he hied him after till broke were both his
shinnes, — 25

Cursyng and swering othes, were neuer of his makyng,
That Gyb wold fyre the house if that shee were not taken.

GAMMER. See, here is all the thought that the foolysh
urchyn taketh!

And Tyb, me thinke, at his elbowe almost as mery maketh!
This is all the wyt ye haue, when others make their mone. 30
Come downe, Hodge! where art thou? *and* let the cat alone!

HODGE. Gogs harte, helpe and come vp! Gyb in her tayle
hath fyre,

And is like to burne all if shee get a lytle hier!

Cum downe, quoth you? nay, then you might count me a
patch!

The house cometh downe on your heads if it take ons *the*
thatch. 35

¹ Co. where.

GAMMER. It is the cats eyes, foole, that shineth in the darke!

HODGE. Hath the cat, do you thinke, in euery eye a sparke?

GAMMER. No, but they shyne as lyke fyre as euer man see.

HODGE. By the masse, and she burne all, yoush beare the blame for mee!

GAMMER. Cum downe, *and* help to seeke here our neele, that it were found.

40

Downe, Tyb, on thy¹ knees, I say! Downe, Cocke, to the ground!

To God I make a-vowe, and so to good Saint Anne,
A candell shall they haue a-peece, get it where I can,
If I may my neele find in one place or in other.

HODGE. Now a vengeance on Gib lyght, on Gyb and Gybs mother,

45

And all the generacyon of cats both far and nere!

² Looke on the ground, horson? thinks then³ the neele is here?

COCKE. By my trouth, Gammer, me thought your neele here I saw,

But, when my fyngers toucht it, I felt it was a straw.

TYB. See, Hodge! whats tys? may it not be within it?

50

HODGE. Breake it, foole, with thy hand, and see and thou canst fynde it.

TYB. Nay, breake it you, Hodge, accordyng to your word.

HODGE. Gogs sydes! fye, it styncks! it is a cats tourd!

It were well done to make thee eate it, by the masse!

GAMMER. This matter amendeth not; my neele is still where it wasse.

55

Our candle is at an ende; ⁴ let vs all in quight,

And come another tyme, when we haue more lyght!

[*Exeunt omnes.*]

¹ Co. tho; Dods. thy.

² Line 48 does not make necessary the transfer of this to Gammer.

³ Dods. thou.

⁴ Co. anende.

The ii Acte.

Fyrste a souge :

*Backe and syde, go bare, go bare ;
 Booth foote and hande, go colde :
 But, bellye, God sende thee good ale ynoughe,
 Whether it be newe or olde !* 4

I can not eate but lytle meate,
 My stomacke is not good ;
 But, sure, I thinke that I can dry[n]cke
 With him that weares a hood.
 Thoughe I go bare, take ye no care,
 I am nothings a-colde,
 I stuffe my skyn so full within
 Of ioly good ale and olde. 12

*Backe and syde, go bare, go bare ;
 Booth foote and hand, go colde :
 But, belly, God send the good ale inoughe,
 Whether it be new or olde !* 16

I loue no¹ rost, but a nut-browne toste
 And a crab layde in the fyre ;
 A lytle bread shall do me stead,
 Much breade I not desyre.
 No froste nor snow, no winde, I trowe,
 Can hurte mee if I wolde,
 I am so wrapt and throwly lapt
 Of ioly good ale and olde. 24

Backe and syde, go bare, &c.

And Tyb, my wyfe, that as her lyfe
 Loueth well good ale to seeke,
 Full ofte drynkes shee tyll ye may see
 The teares run downe her cheeke ;²

¹ Co. to ; Dods. no.

² Co. Dods. cheekes ; Haz. cheek.

Then dooth she trowle to mee the bowle,
 Euen as a mault-worme shuld,
 And sayth, "Sweete hart, I tooke my part
 Of this ioly good ale and olde." 32

Backe and syde, go bare, &c.

Now let them drynke tyll they nod and winke,
 Euen as good felowes shoulde doe;
 They shall not mysse to haue the blisse
 Good ale doth bringe men to.
 And all poore soules that haue scowred boules
 Or haue them lustely trolde,
 God saue the lyues of them and their wyues,
 Whether they be yonge or olde! 40

Backe and syde, go bare, &c.

The fyrst Sceane.

[*The same street, near DAME CHAT'S house.*]

[*Enter*] DICCON [*from DAME CHAT'S*]. HODGE [*enters later*].

DICCON. Well done, be¹ Gogs malt! well songe, and well
 sayde!

Come on, mother Chat, as thou art² true mayde!
 One fresh pot of ale lets see, to make an ende,
 Agaynst this colde wether my naked armes to defende!

[*Drinks.*]

This gere it warms the soule! Now, wind, blow on thy³
 worst! 5

And let vs drink and swill till that our bellies burste!
 Now were he a wyse man, by cunnyng colde defyne⁴
 Which way my iourney lyeth or where Dyccon will dyne!
 But one good turne I haue: be it by nyght or daye,
 South, east, north or west, I am neuer out of my waye! 10

¹ Dods. by.

² Dods. *inserts a.*

³ Co. the; Dods. thy.

⁴ Co. defyne; Dods. defyne.

[Enter HODGE.]

HODGE. Chym goodly rewarded, cham I not, do you thyncke?

Chad a goodly dynner for all my sweate and swyncke!
Neyther butter, cheese, mylke, onyons, fleshe nor fyshe,
Saue thys poor¹ pece of barly bread, — tis a pleasant costly dishe!

DICCON. Haile, fellow Hodge, *and* will² to fare *with* thy meat, if *thou*³ haue any!

15

But, by thy words, as I *them* smelled, thy daintrels be not manye.

HODGE. Daintrels, Diccon? Gogs soule, man, saue this pece of dry horsbred,

Cha⁴ byt no byt this lyue-longe daie, no crome come in my hed.

My gutts they yawle, crawle, and all my belly rumbleth,
The puddynges can not lye styll, ech one ouer other tumbleth.

20

By Gogs harte, cham so vexte⁵ and in my belly pende
Chould one peece were at the spittlehouse, another at *the* castels ende!

DICCON. Why, Hodge, was there none at home thy dinner for to set?

HODGE. Godgs bread, Diccon, ich came to late, was nothing ther to get!

Gib — a fowle feind might on her light! — lickt *the* milkepan so clene, —

25

See, Diccon, twas not so well washt this vii yere, as ich wene!

A pestilence lyght on all ill lucke! chad thought yet, for all thys,

Of a morsell of bacon behynde the dore at worst shuld not misse;

¹ Omitted by Dods.

⁴ Misprinted Chat in Dods.

² Dods. *emends* to well.

⁵ *The x is broken.*

³ Dods. you.

But when ich sought a slyp to cut, as ich was wont to do,
Gogs soule, Diccon, Gyb, our cat, had eate the bacon to! 30

Which bacon Diccon stole, as is declared before.

DICCON. Ill¹ luck, quod he? mary, swere it, Hodg! This
day *the* trueth to² tel,
Thou rose not on thy right syde, or els blest thee not wel.
Thy mylk slopt vp, thy bacon filtched, — that was to bad
luck, Hodg!

HODGE. Nay, nay, ther was a fowler fault: my gammer
ga me *the* dodge!³
Seest not how cham rent *and* torn, my heels, my knees *and*
my breech? 35
Chad thought, as ich sat by the fire, help here *and* there a
stitch;
But there ich was powpte indeede.

DICCON. Why, Hodge?

HODGE. Bootes not, man, to tell.
Cham so drest amonst a sorte of fooles chad better be in
hell!
My gammer, cham ashamed to say, by God, serued me not
weele!

DICCON. How so, Hodge?

HODGE. Hase she not gone, trowest
now,⁴ and lost her neele? 40

DICCON. Her eele, Hodge? Who fysht of late? That
was a dainty dysh!

HODGE. Tush, tush, her neele! her neele! her neele,
man! tys neyther flesh nor fysh.

A lytle thing with an hole in the end, as bright as any syller,
Small, longe, sharpe at the poynt, *and* straight as any pyller.

DICCON. I know not what a deuil *thou* menest, *thou*
bringst me more in doubt! 45

HODGE. Knowest not *with* what Tom Tailers man sits
broching throughe a clout?

¹ Co. All; Dods. Ill.

³ Co. dogde.

² Omitted by Dods. Haz.

⁴ Dods. now thou, *without note*.

A neele, neele,¹ a neele! my gammers neele is gone!

DICCON. Her neele, Hodge? now I smel thee! *that* was
a chaunce alone!

By *the* masse, *thou* hadst a shamefull losse *and* it wer but for
thy breches!

HODGE. Gogs soule, man, chould giue a crown chad it
but iii stitches! 50

DICCON. How sayest *thou*, Hodg? what shuld he haue,
again thy neele² got?

HODGE. Bem vathers soule, and chad it, chould giue him
a new grot!

DICCON. Canst thou keepe counsaile in this case?

HODGE. Els chwold my tonge³ were out.

DICCON. Do thou⁴ but then by my aduise, *and* I will
fetch it *without* doubt.

HODGE. Chyll runne, chyll ryde, chyll dygge, chyl delue,
chill toyle, chill trudge, shalt see; 55

Chill hold, chil drawe, chil pull, chill pynche, chill kneele on
my bare knee;

Chill scrape, chill scratche, chill syfte, chyll seeke, chill
bowe, chill bende, chill sweate,

Chil stoop, chil stur, chil cap, chil knele, chil crepe on hands
and feete;

Chil be thy bondman, Diccon, ich sweare by sunne and
moone.

And channot sum-what to stop this gap, cham vtterly vndone! 60

*Pointing behind to his torne breeches.*⁵

DICCON. Why, is ther any special cause thou takest
hereat such sorow?

HODGE. Kristian⁶ Clack, Tom Simsons maid, bi the
masse, coms hether to-morow!

Channot able to say, betweene vs what may hap, —

She smyled on me the last Sunday when ich put of my cap.

¹ Dods. a neele.

² Dods. nedle.

³ Co. thonge; Dods. tonge.

⁴ Co. than; *emend.* by Dods.

⁵ Co. kreeches; *corr. silently* by Dods.

⁶ Dods. Kirstian.

DICCON. Well, Hodge, this is a matter of weight, *and*
 must be kept close ; 65
 It might els turne to both our costes, as the world now
 gose.

Shalt sware to be no blab, Hodge !

HODGE. Chyll, Diccon !

DICCON. Then, go to !
 Lay thine hand here ; say after me as thou shalt here me do.
 Hast no booke ?

HODGE. Cha no booke, I !

DICCON. Then needes must force vs both
 Upon my breech to lay thine hand, and there to take thine
 othe. 70

[*He recites the oath line by line, and HODGE repeats it after him.*]

HODGE. I, Hodge, breechelesse,
 Swear to Diccon, rechelesse,
 By the crosse that I shall kysse,
 To kepe his counsaile close,
 And alwayes me to dispose
 To worke that his pleasure is. 76

Here he kesseth¹ Diccons breeche.

DICCON. Now, Hodge, see thou take heede
 And do as I thee byd,
 For so I iudge it meete ;
 This nedle againe to win,
 There is no shift therin
 But coniure vp a spreete. 82

HODGE. What, the great deuill? Diccon, I saye !

DICCON. Yea, in good faith, that is the waye, —
 Fet with some prety charme.

HODGE. Softe, Diccon, be not to hasty yet,
 By the masse, for ich begyn to sweat !
 Cham afrayde of some² harme ! 88

¹ Co. kessech.

² Co. syme; *corr. by Dods.*

[DICCON *draws a magic circle.*]

DICCON. Come hether then, and sturre the nat
One inche out of this cyrcle plat,
But stande as I thee teache.

HODGE. And shall ich be here safe from theyr clawes?

[*He seeks a safe place.*]

DICCON. The mayster deuill with his longe pawes
Here to thee can not reache.

94

Now will I settle me to this geare.

HODGE. I saye, Diccon! heare me, heare!
Go softly to thys matter!

DICCON. What deuyll, man? art afraide of nought?

HODGE. Canst not tarrye a lytle thought
Tyll ich make a curtesse of water?

100

DICCON. Stand still to it! Why shuldest thou feare hym?

HODGE. Gogs sydes, Diccon, me thinke ich heare him!
And tarrye, chal mare all!

DICCON. The matter is no worse then I tolde it.

HODGE. By the masse, cham able no longer to holde it!
To¹ bad! iche must beraye the hall!

106

DICCON. Stand to it, Hodge! sture not, you horson!
What deuyll? be thine ars-strynges brusten?
Thy-selfe a-while but staye;

The deuill — I smell hym — wyll be here anone.

HODGE. Hold him fast, Diccon, cham gone! cham gone!
Chyll not be at that fraye!

112

[*Exit HODGE running.*]

The ii Acte. The ii Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

DICCON [*alone*]. [DAME] CHAT [*enters later*].

DICCON. Fy, shyppen knaue! and out vpon thee!
Aboue all other loutes fye on thee!
Is not here a clenly prancke?

¹ Dods, *changes to So.*

But thy matter was no better,
 Nor thy presence here no sweter,
 To flye I can the thanke.

6

Here is a matter worthy glosynge
 Of Gammer Gurtons nedle losynge,
 And a foule peece of warke!
 A man, I thyncke, myght make a playe,
 And nede no worde to this they saye,
 Being but halfe a clarke.

12

Softe, let me alone! I will take the charge
 This matter further to enlarge
 Within a tyme shorte.
 If ye will marke my toyes, and note,
 I will geue ye leaue to cut my throte
 If I make not good sporte.

18

[Approaches DAME CHAT'S door.]

Dame Chat, I say! where be ye? within?

CHAT. Who haue we there maketh such a din?

DICCON. Here is a good fellow, maketh no great daunger.

CHAT. What? Diccon? Come nere, ye be no straunger!
 We be fast set at trumpe, man, hard by the fyre:
 Thou shalt set¹ on the king, if thou come a litle nyer.

DICCON. Nay, nay, there is no taryng, I must be gone
 againe.

25

But, first, for you in councel I haue a word or twaine.

CHAT. Come hether, Dol! Dol, sit downe and play this
 game,

And, as thou sawest me do, see thou do euen the same.
 There is five² trumps beside³ the queene, — *the* hindmost
thou shalt finde her.

Take hede of Sim Glouers wife, she hath an eie behind her!
 Now, Diccon, say your will.

30

DICCON. Nay, softe a litle yet!

I wold not tel it my⁴ sister, the matter is so great.

¹ *Qy.* fet.

² *Co.* 5.

³ *Dods.* besides.

⁴ *Dods.* tell me.

There I wil haue you swear by our dere Lady of Bullaine,
S. Dunstone and S. Donnyke, with the three Kinges of
Kullaine,

That ye shal keepe it secret.

CHAT. Gogs bread, that will I doo! 35
As secret as mine owne thought, by God, and the deuil
two!¹

DICCON. Here is *Gammer* Gurton, your neighbour, a sad
and heuy wight, —

Her goodly faire red cock at home was stole this last night.

CHAT. Gogs soule, her cock with the yelow legs, *that*
nightly crowed² so iust?

DICCON. That cocke is stollen.

CHAT. What! was he fet out of the hens ruste? 40

DICCON. I can not tel where *the* deuil he was kept, vnder
key or locke ;

But Tib hath tykled in *Gammers* eare that you shoulde steale
the cocke.

CHAT. Haue I, stronge hoore? By bread and salte —

DICCON. What, softe, I say! be styl!
Say not one word for all this geare.

CHAT. By the masse, that I wyl!
I wil haue the yong hore by the head, *and* the old trot by *the*
throate! 45

DICCON. Not one word, Dame Chat, I say, not one word,
for my cote!

CHAT. Shall such a begars brawle as *that*, thinkest *thou*,
make me a theefe?

The pocks light on her hores sydes, a pestlence *and* a³ mis-
cheefe!

Come out, thou hungry, nedy bytche! O that my nails be
short!

DICCON. Gogs bred, woman, hold your peace, this gere
wil els passe sport! 50
I wold not for an hundred pound this matter shuld be knowen,

¹ Dods. *corrects spelling to too.*

² Dods. *crowded.*

³ Dods. *omits a.*

That I am auctour of this tale or haue abrode it blowen!
 Did ye not sweare ye wold be ruled, before the tale I tolde?
 I said ye must all secret keepe, and ye said sure ye wolde.

CHAT. Wolde you suffer, your-selfe, Diccon, such a sort
 to reuile you, 55
 With slaunderous words to blot your name, *and* so to defile
 you?

DICCON. No, goodwife Chat, I wold be loth such drabs
 shulde blot my name;
 But yet ye must so order all *that* Diccon beare no blame.

CHAT. Go to, then! what is your rede? say on your
 minde, ye shall mee rule herein.

DICCON. Godamercye to¹ Dame Chat! in faith, thou
 must the gere begin. 60
 It is twenty pound to a goose-turd, my Gammer will not tary
 But hetherward she comes as fast as her legs can her cary
 To brawle with you about her cocke; for well I hard Tib say
 The cocke was rosted in your house to breafast yesterday,
 And, when ye had the carcas eaten, the fethers ye out flunge, 65
 And Doll, your maid, the legs she hid a foote depe in the
 dunge.

CHAT. Oh gracyous God! my harte it² burstes!

DICCON. Well, rule your-selfe a space!
 And Gammer Gurton, when she commeth anon into thys
 place,
 Then to the queane, lets see, tell her your mynd *and* spare
 not,
 So shall Diccon blamelesse bee; and then, go to, I care not! 70

CHAT. Then hoore, beware her throte! I can abide no
 longer!³
 In faith, old witch, it shalbe seene, which of vs two be
 stronger!

And, Diccon, but at your request, I wold not stay one howre.

DICCON. Well, keepe it in till she be here, and then out let
 it powre!
 In the meane-while get you in, and make no wordes of this. 75

¹ Dods. *omits* to.

² Co. is; Dods. it.

³ Co. lenger.

More of this matter *wit/-in* this howre to here you shall not misse.

Because I knew¹ you are my freind, hide it I cold not, doubtles.

Ye know your harm, see ye be wise about your owne busines !
So fare ye well!

CHAT. Nay, soft, Diccon, and drynke ! What,
Doll, I say!

Bringe here a cup of the best ale ; lets see, come quicly
a-waye !

[*They go into the house.*]

80

The ii Actt. The iii Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

[*Enter*] HODGE [*immediately after*] DICCON.

DICCON. Ye see, masters, *that* one end tapt of this my
short deuse!

Now must we broche tother,² to, before the smoke arise.

And, by the time they haue a-while run, I trust ye need not
craue it,

But, loke, what lieth in both their harts, ye ar like, sure, to
haue it.

[*Enter* HODGE.]

HODGE. Yea, Gogs soule, art aliue yet? What, Diccon,
dare ich come?

5

DICCON. A man is wel hied³ to trust to the, I wil say
nothing but mum.

But, and ye come any nearer, I pray you see all be sweete!

HODGE. Tush, man, is Gammers neele found? That
chould gladly weete !

DICCON. She may thanke thee it is not found, for if *thou*
had kept thy standing,

The deuil he wold haue fet it out, euen, Hodg, at thy com-
maunding.

10

¹ Dods. know.

³ *Qy.* paied.

² Co. thoter; Dods. t'other.

HODGE. Gogs hart! *and* cold he tel nothing wher the neele might be found?

DICCON. Ye folysh dolt, ye were to seek, ear we had got our ground ;

Therefore his tale so doubtfull was that I cold not perceiue it.

HODGE. Then ich se wel somthing was said, chope one day yet to haue it.

But, Diccon, Diccon, did not the deuill cry "ho ! ho ! ho" ? 15

DICCON. If *thou* hadst taryed where thou stoodst, thou woldest haue said so.

HODGE. Durst swere of a boke, chard him rore, streight after ich was gon.

But tel me, Diccon, what said *the* knaue? let me here it anon!

DICCON. The horson talked to mee I know not well of what :

One whyle his tonge it ran and paltered of a cat ; 20

Another whyle he stamered styll vppon a rat ;

Last of all, there was nothing but eury word chat ! chat !

But this I well perceyued, before I wolde him rid,

Betweene chat and the rat and the cat, the nedle is hyd.

Now, wether Gyb, our cat, haue eate it in her mawe, 25

Or Doctor Rat, our curat, haue found it in the straw,

Or this Dame Chat, your neighbour, haue stollen it, God hee knoweth !

But by *the* morow at this time we shal learn how the matter goeth.

HODGE. Canst not learn to-night, man? Seest not what is here?

Pointyng behind to his torne breeches.

DICCON. Tys not possyble to make it sooner appere. 30

HODGE. Alas, Diccon, then chaue no shyft but — least ich tary to longe —

Hye me to Sym Glouers shop, theare to seeke for a thonge,

Ther-with this breech to tatche and tye as ich may.

DICCON. To-morow, Hodg, if we chauce to meete, shalt¹
see what I will say.

[*Exit* HODGB.]

The ii Acte. The iiiii Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

[*To*] DICCON [*enter*] GAMMER [GURTON].

DICCON. Now this gere must forward goe, for here my
gammer commeth.

Be still a-while *and* say nothing, make here a litle romth !

[*Enter* GAMMER GURTON.]

GAMMER. Good Lord, shall neuer be my lucke my neele.
agayne to spye ?

Alas the whyle, tys past my helpe ! where tis, still it must
lye !

DICCON. Now, Iesus, Gammer Gurton, what driueth you
to this sadnes ?

I feare me, by my conscience, you will sure fall to madnes.

GAMMER. Who is that ? What, Diccon ? Cham lost,
man, fye ! fye !

DICCON. Mary, fy on them *that* be worthy ! but what
shuld be your trouble ?

GAMMER. Alas, the more ich thinke on it, my sorow it
waxeth² doble !

My goodly tossing sporyars neele chaue lost ; ich wot not
where.

DICCON. Your neele ? whan ?

GAMMER. My neele, alas, ich myght full ill³ it spare !
As God him-selfe he knoweth, nere one besyde chaue.

DICCON. If this be all, good Gammer, I warrant you all
is saue.

GAMMER. Why, know you any tydings which way my
neele is gone ?

¹ Dods. shall.

² *The x is broken in Co.*

³ Dods. *omits* ill.

DICCON. Yea, that I do, doubtlesse, as ye shall here
anone.

15

A see a thing this matter toucheth, within these xx howres,
Euen at this gate, before my face, by a neyghbour of yours :
She stooped me downe, *and* vp she toke a nedle or a pyn.
I durst be sworne it was euen yours, by all my mothers kyn.

GAMMER. It was my neele, Diccon, ich wot ; for here,
euen by this poste,

20

Ich sat, what time as ich vp-starte, and so my neele is¹ loste.
Who was it, leiuie son? speke, ich pray the, *and* quickly
tell me that!

DICCON. A suttle queane as any in thys towne, your
neyghbour here, Dame Chat.

GAMMER. Dame Chat, Diccon? Let me be gone, chil
thyther in post-haste.

DICCON. Take my councill yet or ye go, for feare ye
walke in wast !

25

It is a murrion crafty drab, and froward to be pleased ;
And ye take not the better way, our² nedle yet ye lese³ it.
For when she tooke it vp, euen here before your doores,
“What, soft, Dame Chat,” quoth I, “that same is none of
yours !”

“Auant,” quoth she, “syr knaue ! what pratest thou of that
I fynd?

30

I wold *thou* hadst kist me I wot whear,” — she ment, I know,
behind.

And home she went as brag as it had ben a bodelouce,
And I after as bold as it had ben the goodman of the house.
But there and ye had hard her how she began to scolde —
The tonge it went on patins, by hym that Iudas solde !
Ech other worde I was a knaue, and you a hore of hores,
Because I spake in your behalfe and sayde the neele was
yours.

35

GAMMER. Gogs bread, and thinks *the* callet thus to kepe
my neele me fro?

¹ Dods. it.

² Dods. *changes to your.*

³ Co. Dods. lose ; Haz. *omits* it.

DICCON. Let her alone, and she minds non other but
euen to dresse you so!

GAMMER. By the masse, chil rather spend the cote that is
on my backe!

Thinks the false quean by such a slyght¹ that chill my neele
lacke?

40

DICCON. Slepe not you[r]² gere, I counsell you, but of
this take good hede:

Let not be knowen I told you of it, how well soeuer ye spede!

GAMMER. Chil in, Diccon, a cleene aperne to take and
set before me;

And ich may my neele once see, chil, sure, remember the!

45

[*Exit GAMMER GURTON.*]

The ii Acte. The v Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

DICCON.

DICCON. Here will the sporte begin: if these two once
may meete,

Their chere, durst lay money, will proue scarsly sweete!

My gammer, sure, entends to be vppon her bones

With staues or with clubs or els with coble-stones.

Dame Chat, on the other syde, if she be far behynde,

5

I am right far deceiued, she is geuen to it of kynde.

He that may tarry by it a-whyle, and that but shorte,

I warrant hym, trust to it, he shall see all the sporte.

Into the towne will I, my frendes to vysit there,

And hether straight againe, to see thend of this gere.

10

In the meane-time, felowes, pype vpp your fiddles! I saie,
take them,

And let your freyndes here such mirth as ye can make them!

¹ Co. flygh; Dods. *gives Co. as slygh, and reads slight.*

² Dods. *gives reading of Co. and corrects to slip not your.*

The iii Acte. The i Sceane.

[*The same place.*][*Enter*] HODGE [*returning from Sym Glover's*].

HODGE. Sym Glouer, yet gramercy! cham meetlye well-
 sped now,
 Thart euen as good a felow as euer kyste a cowe!
 Here is a thonge¹ in-dede; by *the* masse, though ich speake
 it,
 Tom Tankards great bald curtal, I thinke, could not breake
 it!
 And when he spyed my neede to be so straight and hard, 5
 Hays lent me here his nnull to set the gyb forward.
 As for my gammers neele, the flyenge feynd go weete!
 Chill not now go to the doore, againe with it to meete.
 Chould make shyfte good inough and chad a candels ende;
 The cheefe hole in my breeche with these two chil amende. 10

The iii Acte. The ii Sceane.

[*The same place.*][*Enter*] GAMMER [*to*] HODGE.

GAMMER. How, Hodge! mayst nowe be glade, cha
 newes to tell thee.
 Ich knowe who hais my neele; iche trust soone shalt it see.
 HODGE. The deuyll thou does! Hast hard, Gammer, in-
 dede, or doest but iest?
 GAMMER. Tys as true as steele, Hodge.
 HODGE. Why, knowest well where dydst leese it?
 GAMMER. Ich know who found it and tooke it vp, shalt
 see or it be longe. 5
 HODGE. Gods Mother dere, if that be true, far-wel both
 naule an² thong!

¹ Co. thyng; *corr. by* Dods.² Dods. and.

But who hais it, Gammer? say on!¹ Chould faine here it disclosed.

GAMMER. That false fixen,² that same Dame Chat, that counts her-selfe so honest!

HODGE. Who tolde you so?

GAMMER. That same did Diccon the bedlam, which saw it done.

HODGE. Diccon? it is a vengeable knaue, Gammer; tis a bonable hórson!

10

Can do mo things then that, els cham deceyued euill:

By the masse, ich saw him of late cal vp a great blacke deuill!

O, the knaue cryed "ho! ho!" He roared, and he thundred.

And yead bene here, cham sure yould murrenly ha wondred!

GAMMER. Was not thou afraide, Hodge, to see him in this place?

15

HODGE. No; and chad come to me, chould haue laid him on the face, —

Chould haue, promised him!

GAMMER. But, Hodge, had he no hornes, to pushe?

HODGE. As long as your two armes! Saw ye neuer Fryer Rushe

Painted on a cloth, with a side long coves tayle,

And crooked clouen feete, and many a hoked nayle?

20

For al the world, if I shuld iudg, chould reckon him his brother.

Loke, euen what face Frier Rush had, the deuil had such another!

GAMMER. Now³ Iesus mercy, Hodg! did Diccon in him bring?

HODGE. Nay, Gammer, heare me speke, chil tel you a greater thing:

The deuil, when Diccon had⁴ him, — ich hard him wondrous weel, —

25

¹ Dods. say? one.

² Dods. fixen; in Co., through mutilation of f and x, it now looks like firen.

³ Co. New; Dods. Now.

⁴ Dods. bad.

Sayd plainly here before vs that Dame Chat had your neele.

GAMMER. Then let vs go and aske her wherfore she
minds to kepe it;

Seing we know so much, tware a madnes now to slepe it.

HODGE. Go to her, Gammer; see ye not where she
stands in her doores?

Byd her geue you the neele, — tys none of hers but yours! 30

The iii Acte. The iii Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

GAMMER [*goes to DAME*] CHAT. HODGE [*follows*].

GAMMER. Dame Chat, cholde praye the fair, let me haue
that is mine!

Chil not this twenty yeres take one fart that is thyne.

Therefore giue me mine owne, *and* let me liue besyde the!

CHAT. Why art thou crept from home hether to mine
own doores to chide me?

Hence, doting drab, au aunt, or I shall set the further! 5

Intends thou and that¹ knaue mee in my house to murther?

GAMMER. Tush, gape not so on² me, woman! shalt not
yet eate mee!

Nor all the frends thou hast in this shall not intreate mee!

Mine owne goods I will haue, and aske the on³ beleue.⁴

What, woman! pore folks must haue right, though the thing
you agreue. 10

CHAT. Giue thee thy right, and hang thee vp, *with* al thy
baggers broode!

What, wilt thou make me a theefe, and say I stole thy good?

GAMMER. Chil say nothing, ich warrant thee, but that ich
can proue it well.

Thou fet⁵ my good euen from my doore, cham able this to
tel!

¹ Dods. this.

⁴ Haz. by'r leave.

² Co. no; Dods. *keeps no and omits me; the text is due to Haz.*

³ Dods. *changes to no.*

⁵ Co. fet; Dods. fet.

CHAT. Dyd I, olde witche, steale oft was thine? how
should that thing be knowen? 15

GAMMER. Ich can not tel; but vp thou tokest it, as
though it had ben thine owne.

CHAT. Mary, fy on thee, thou old gyb, with al my very
hart!

GAMMER. Nay, fy on thee, *thou rampe*, thou ryg, with al
that take thy parte!

CHAT. A vengeance on those lips *that* laieth such things
to my charge!

GAMMER. A vengeance on those callats hips whose con-
science is so large! 20

CHAT. Come out, hogge!

GAMMER. Come out, hogge, and let me
haue¹ right!

CHAT. Thou arrant witche!

GAMMER. Thou bawdie bitche, chil
make thee cursse this night!

CHAT. A bag and a wallet!

GAMMER. A carte for a callet!

CHAT. Why, wenest thou thus to preuaile?

I hold thee a grote I shall patche thy coate!

GAMMER. Thou warte as
good kysse my taylor!²

Thou slut, *thou kut*, *thou rakes*, *thou iakes*! will not shame
make *the*³ bide?⁴ 25

CHAT. Thou skald, thou bald, thou rotten, *thou glotton*!
I will no lenger chyd!⁵

But I will teache the to kepe home.

GAMMER. Wylt thou, drunken beaste?

HODGE. Sticke to her, Gammer, take her by the head,
chil warrant you thys feast!

Smyte, I saye, Gammer! Byte, I say, Gammer! I trow ye
wyll be keene!²

¹ Co. Dods. let haue me.

³ Co. y^u; Dods. thee.

² *This line as three in Co.*

⁴ Dods. reads hide [thee].

⁵ Co. chyd the; Dods. chyd thee; see *preceding note*.

Where be your nayls? claw her by the iawes! pull me out
bothe her eyen! 30

Gogs bones, Gammer, holde vp your head!

CHAT. I trow, drab, I shall dresse thee.

Tary, *thou* knaue, I holde the a grote I shall make these
hands blesse thee!

Take *thou* this, old hore, for a-mends, *and* lerne thy tonge
well to tame,

And say thou met at this bickering, not thy ¹ fellow, but thy
dame!

[GAMMER *falls down.*]

HODGE. Where is the strong stued hore? chil geare a
hores marke! 35

Stand out ones way, that ich kyll none in the darke!

Up, Gammer, and ye be alyue! chil feygh[t] ² now for vs
bothe.

Come no nere me, thou scalde callet! to kyll the ich wer loth.

CHAT. Art here agayne, thou hoddy-peke! What, Doll,
bryng me out my spitte!

HODGE. Chill broche thee wyth this, bim father soule,
chyll coniure that foule sprete! 40

Let dore stand, Cock! why coms in-deede? kepe dore, *thou*
horson boy!

CHAT. Stand to it, *thou* dastard, for thine eares! Ise
teche *the*, a ³ sluttish toye!

HODGE. Gogs woundes, hore, chil make the auante!
Take heede, Cocke, pull in the latche!

CHAT. I faith, sir loose-breche, had ye taried, ye shold
haue found your match!

[HODGE *flees*; GAMMER *attacks.*]

GAMMER. Now ware thy throte, losell, thouse pay ⁴ for al!

[DAME CHAT *falls.*]

HODGE. Well said, Gammer, by my soule. 45

¹ Co. *repeats* thy.

² *Corr.* by Dods.

³ Dods. *omits* a.

⁴ Co. pray; Dods. pay.

Hoise her, souise her, bounce her, trounce her, pull out her throte-boule!¹

CHAT. Comst behynd me, thou withered witch? *And* I get once on foote,

Thouse pay for all, *thou* old tarlether! Ile teach the what longs to it!

Take *the* this to make vp thy mouth til time thou come by more!

[GAMMER falls; exit DAME CHAT.]

HODGE. Up, Gammer, stand on your feete; where is the old hore? 50

Faith, woulde chad her by the face, choulde cracke her callet crowne!

GAMMER. A, Hodg, Hodg, where was thy help, when fixen had me downe?

HODGE. By the masse, Gammer, but for my staffe, Chat had gone nye to spyl you!

Ich think the harlot had not cared, and chad not com, to kill you.

But shall we loose our neele thus?

GAMMER. No, Hodge, chwarde lothe doo soo. 55
Thinkest thou chill take that at her hand? No, Hodg, ich tell the, no!

HODGE. Chold yet this fray wer wel take vp, *and* our own neele at home.

Twill be my chaunce els some to kil, wher-euer it be, or whome!

GAMMER. We haue a parson, Hodge, thou knoes, a man estemed wise,

Mast Doctor Rat; chil for hym send, and let me here his aduise. 60

He will her shriue for all this gere, *and* geue her penaunce strait;

Wese haue our neele, els Dame Chat comes nere *wit*-in heauen gate!

¹ Dods. houle, *which* Haz. *modernizes* as hole.

HODGE. Ye, mary, Gammer, *that* ich think best. Wyll
you now for him send?

The sooner Doctor Rat be here, the soner wese ha an ende.
And here, Gammer! Dyccons deuill, as iche remember well, 65
Of cat, and Chat and Doctor Rat a felloneus tale dyd tell.
Chold you forty pound, that is the way your neele to get
again!

GAMMER. Chil ha him strait! Call out *the* boy, wese
make him take the payn.

HODGE. What, Coke, I saye! Come out! What deuill!
canst not here?

COCKE.¹ How now, Hodg? How does, Gammer? Is yet
the wether cleare? 70

What wold chaue me to doo?

GAMMER. Come hether, Cocke, anon!

Hence swythe to Doctor Rat, hye the that thou were gone!
And pray hym come speke with me, cham not well at ease.
Shalt haue him at his chamber, or ² els at Mother Bees;
Els seeke him at Hob Fylchers ³ shop, for, as charde it reported, 75
There is the best ale in al the towne, and now is most resorted.

COCKE. And shall ich brynge hym with me, Gammer?

GAMMER. Yea, by-and-by, good Cocke.

COCKE.⁴ Shalt see that shalbe here anone, els let me haue
on ⁵ the docke!

[Exit COCKE.]

HODGE. Now, Gammer, shal we two go in, and tary for
hys commynge?

What deuill, woman, plucke vp your hart, *and* leue of al this
glomming! 80

Though she were stronger at *the* first, as ich thinke ye did
find her,

Yet there ye drest the drunken sow, what time ye cam behind
her,

¹ Co. Gammer; *corr.* by Dods.

² Co. of; Dods. or.

³ Co. Hobfylchers *as one word, here and below.*

⁴ Dods. says Co. assigns this to HODGE; *not so my copyist.*

⁵ Co. one; *corr.* by Haz.

GAMMER. Nay, nay, cham sure she lost not all, for, set
thend¹ to *the* beginning,
And ich doubt not but she² will make small bost of her
winning.

[*They go towards GAMMER'S house.*]

The iii Acte. The iiii Sceane.

[*The same place, near GAMMER GURTON'S door.*]

TYB [*meets*] HODGE [*and*] GAMMER. COCKE [*returns later*].

TYB. See, *Gammer*, *Gammer*, Gib, our cat, cham afraid
what she ayleth!
She standes me gasping behind the door, as though her winde
her failleth.
Now let³ ich doubt what Gib shuld mean, *that* now she doth
so dote.

HODGE. Hold hether! Ichould twenty pound your neele
is in her throte!
Grope her, ich say! Me thinkes ich feele it. Does not
pricke your hand?

GAMMER. Ich can feele nothing.

HODGE. No? Ich know thars⁴
not within this land

A muryner cat then Gyb is, betwixt the Tems and Tyne;
Shase as much wyt in her head almost as chaue in mine!

TYB. Faith, shase eaten some-thing that wil not easely
downe.

Whether she gat it at home or abrode in the towne
Iche can not tell.

GAMMER. Alas, ich feare it be some croked pyn!
And then farewell Gyb, she is vndone, and lost al saue the
skyn.

HODGE. Tys⁵ your neele, woman, I lay!⁶ Gogs soule,
geue me a knyfe,

¹ Dods. them.

⁴ Dods. that's.

² Dods. he.

⁵ Co. Tyb; *corr. by* Dods.

³ Haz. *changes to* mot.

⁶ Dods. say.

And chil haue it out of her mawe, or els chal lose my lyfe!

GAMMER. What! Nay, Hodg, fy! kil not our cat, tis all
the cats we ha now!

15

HODGE. By the masse, Dame Chat hays me so moued
iche care not what I kyll, ma God a-vowe!

Go to then, Tyb! to this geare! holde vp har¹ tayle, and
take her!

Chil see what deuil is in her guts, chil take *the*² paines to
rake her!

GAMMER. Rake a cat, Hodge? what woldst thou do?

HODGE. What! thinckst that cham not able?

Did not Tom Tankard rake his curtal toure day, standing in
the stable?

20

[Enter COCKE.]

GAMMER. Soft, be content, lets here what newes Cocke
bringeth from Maister Rat!

COCKE. Gammer, chaue ben ther-as you bad, you wot
wel about what.

Twill not be long before he come, ich durst sweare of a
booke.

He byds you see ye be at home, and there for him to looke.

GAMMER. Where didst thou find him, boy? was he not
wher I told thee?

25

COCKE. Yes, yes, euen at Hob Filchers house, by him
*that*³ bought and solde me;

A cup of ale had in his hand, and a crab lay in the fyer.

Chad much a-do to go and come, al was so ful of myer.

And, Gammer, one thing I can tel, Hob Filchers naule was
loste,

And Doctor Rat found it againe, hard beside the doore-
poste.

30

I chould a penny can say something your neele againe to fet.⁴

GAMMER. Cham glad to heare so much, Cocke, then
trust he wil not let

¹ Dods. her.

³ Co. *the*; Dods. *that*.

² Co. *thu*; Dods. *the*.

⁴ Co. *fet*; Dods. *fet*.

To helpe vs herein best he can ; therefore, tyl time he come,
Let vs go in. If there be aught to get, thou shalt haue some.

The iiij Acte. The i Sceane.¹

[*The same place.*]

[*Enter*] DOCTOR RAT. GAMMER GURTON [*is at work*].

D. RAT. A man were better twenty times be a bandog
and barke

Then here among such a sort be parish-priest or clarke!
Where he shal neuer be at rest one pissing-while a day
But he must trudge about the towne this way and that way :
Here to a drab, there to a theefe, his shoes to teare and rent, 5
And, that which is worst of al, at euery knaues commaunde-
ment!

I had not sit the space to drinke two pots of ale
But Gammer Gurtons sory boy was strait-way at my taile,
And she was sicke, and I must come, to do I wot not what!
If once her fingers-end but ake, trudge ! call for Doctor Rat ! 10
And when I come not at their call, I only therby loose ;
For I am sure to lacke therfore a tythe-pyg or a goose.
I warrant you, when truth is knowen, *and* told they haue
their tale,

The matter where-about I come is not worth a half-peny-
worth of ale.

Yet must I talke so sage and smothe as though I were a
glosier, 15
Els, or the yere come at an end, I shalbe sure the loser.

[*He sees* GAMMER GURTON.]

What ! worke ye, Gammer Gurton ? Hoow, here is your friend
M[ast]² Rat !

GAMMER. A, good M[ast] Doctor, cha trobled, cha
trobled you, chwot wel that !

¹ Co. The ij Acte. The iiij Sceane ; Dods. The Fourth Acte. The First
Sceane.

² Dods. doctor.

D. RAT. How do ye, woman? be ye lustie, or be ye not
wel at ease?

GAMMER. By Gys, master, cham not sick,¹ but yet chaue
a disease.

Chad a foule² turne now of late, chill tell it you, by Gigs!

D. RAT. Hath your browne cow cast her calfe or your
sandy sow her pigs?

GAMMER. No; but chad ben as good they had as this
ich wot weel.

D. RAT. What is the matter?

GAMMER. Alas, alas, cha lost my good neele!
My neele, I say! And, wot ye what? a drab came by and
spied it,

And, when I asked hir for the same, the filth flatly denied it.

D. RAT. What was she that—?

GAMMER. A dame, ich warrant you! She
began to scold and brawle—

Alas, alas! Come hether, Hodge! This wr[e]tche can tell
you all.

The iiiii Acte. The ii Sceane.

[The same place.]

[Enter] HODGE [to] DOCTOR RAT [and] GAMMER. DICCON [enters later].³

HODGE. God morow, Gaffer Vicar!

[D. RAT.]⁴ Come on, fellow, let vs heare.
Thy dame hath sayd to me thou knowest of all this geare;
Lets see what thou canst saie.

HODGE. Bym fay, sir, that ye shall!
What matter so-euer here was done, ich can tell your maship
[all].

¹ Co. sich; Dods. sick.

² Co. foule; Dods. foule.

³ Co. has also CHAT; but she does not enter until the point at which I
begin Scene iii; see below, p. 135.

⁴ Not in Co.; supplied by Dods., without note.

My Gammer Gurton heare, see now, 5
 Sat her downe at this doore, see now,
 And, as she began to stirre her, see now,
 Her neele fell in the floore, see now ;
 And, while her staffe shee tooke, see now,
 At Gyb, her cat, to flynge, see now, 10
 Her neele was lost in the floore, see now.
 Is not this a wondrous thing, see now?
 Then came the queane, Dame Chat, see now,
 To aske for hir blacke cup, see now ;
 And euen here at this gate, see now, 15
 She tooke that neele vp, see now.
 My gammer then she yeede, see now,
 Hir neele againe to bring, see now,
 And was caught by the head, see now.
 Is not this a wondrous thing, see now? 20
 She tare my gammers cote, see now,
 And scratched hir by the face, see now ;
 Chad thought shad stopt hir throte, see now.
 Is not this a wondrous case, see now?
 When ich saw this, ich was wrothe,¹ see now, 25
 And start betwene them twaine, see now ;
 Els, ich durst take a booke-othe, see now,
 My gammer had bene slaine, see now.
 GAMMER. This is euen the whole matter, as Hodge has
 plainly tolde,
 And chould faine be quiet for my part, that chould. 30
 But helpe vs, good master, — beseech ye that ye do, —
 Els shall² we both be beaten and lose our neele too.
 D. RAT. What wold ye haue me to doo? Tel me, that
 I were gone ;
 I will do the best that I can, to set you both at one.
 But be ye sure Dame Chat hath this your neele founde? 35
 GAMMER. Here comes the man that see hir take it vp of
 the ground ;

¹ Co. worthe ; Dods. wrothe.

² Co. shalt ; Dods. shall.

Aske him your-selfe, Master Rat, if ye beleue not me.
And helpe me to my neele, for Gods sake and saint charite!

[Enter DICCON.]

D. RAT. Come nere, Diccon, and let vs heare what thou
can expresse.

Wilt *thou* be sworne *thou* seest Dame Chat this womans
neele haue? 40

DICCON. Nay, by S. Benit, wil I not; then might ye
thinke me raue!

GAMMER. Why, didst not *thou* tel me so euen here? Canst
thou for shame deny it?

DICCON. I, mary, Gammer; but I said I wold not abide
by it.

D. RAT. Will you say a thing, and not sticke to it to trie
it?

DICCON. "Stick to it," quoth you, Master Rat? mary,
sir, I defy it! 45

Nay, there is many an honest man, when he suche blastes
hath blowne

In his freindes eares, he woulde be loth the same by him
were knowne.

If such a toy be vsed oft among the honestie,

It may be-seme a simple man of ¹ your and my degree.

D. RAT. Then we be neuer the nearer, for all that you
can tell! 50

DICCON. Yes, mary, sir, if ye will do by mine aduise and
counsaile.

If Mother Chat se al vs here, she knoweth how the matter
goes;

Therefore I red y[o]u three go hence, and within keepe close,

And I will into Dame Chats house, and so the matter vse,

That, or you cold go twise to church, I warant you here
news. 55

She shall looke wel about hir, but, I durst lay a pledge,

Ye shal of Gammers neele haue shortly better knowledge.

¹ Co. if; Dods. of.

GAMMER. Now, gentle Diccon, do so; and, good sir, let vs trudge.

D. RAT. By the masse, I may not tarry so long to be your iudge.

DICCON. Tys but a litle while, man; what! take so much paine!

60

If I here no newes of it, I will come sooner¹ againe.

HODGE. Tary so much, good Master Doctor, of your gentlenes!

D. RAT. Then let vs hie vs inward; and, Diccon, speede thy busines!

[*Exeunt.*]

[The iiij Act. The iij Scene.]²

[*The same place, near DAME CHAT'S door.*]

[DICCON *approaches* DAME CHAT'S.]

DICCON. Now, sirs, do you no more, but kepe my counsaile iuste,

And Docter Rat shall thus catch some good, I trust.

But Mother Chat, my gossop, talke first with-all I must;

For she must be chiefe captaine to lay the Rat in the dust.

[*Enter DAME CHAT.*]

God deuen, Dame Chat, in faith, and wel met in this place!

5

CHAT. God deuen, my friend Diccon; whether walke ye this pace?

DICCON. By my truthe, euen to you, to learne how the world goeth.

Hard ye no more of the other matter, say me now, by your troth!

CHAT. O yes, Diccon, here the olde hoore *and* Hodge, that great knaue —

¹ Haz. *emends* to soon here.

² *On the principle adopted in this play, a new scene should begin here; but it is not so indicated in the old copy; Haz. says the scene should begin with l. 5.*

But, in faith, I would thou hadst sene, — O Lord, I drest
them braue! 10

She bare me two or three souses behind in the nape of the
necke,

Till I made hir olde wesen to answeere againe, “kecke”!¹
And Hodge, that dirty dastard that at hir elbow standes, —
If one paire of legs had not bene worthe two paire of hands,
He had had his bearde shauen, if my nayles wold haue
serued! 15

And not without a cause, for the knaue it well deserued.

DICCON. By the masse, I can the thank, wench, *thou*
didst so wel acquite the!

CHAT. And thadst seene him, Diccon, it wold haue made
the beshite the

For laughter. The horsen dolt at last caught vp a club,
As though he would haue slaine the master-deuil, Belsabub, 20
But I set him soone inward.

DICCON. O Lorde, there is the thing
That Hodge is so offended! That makes him starte and
flyng!

CHAT. Why, makes the knaue any moyling, as ye haue
sene or hard?

DICCON. Euen now I sawe him last, — like a mad-man he
farde,
And sware by heauen and hell he would a-wreake his sorowe, 25
And leue you neuer a hen on-liue by viii of the clock to-
morow.

Therefore marke what I say, and my wordes see that ye trust:
Your hens be as good as dead if ye leaue them on the ruste!

CHAT. The knaue dare as wel² go hang himself as go
vpon my grouzd!

DICCON. Wel, yet take hede, I say! I must tel you my
tale round. 30

Haue you not about your house, behind your furnace or leade,
A hole where a crafty knaue may crepe in for neade?³

¹ Co. kicke; Dods. kecke.

³ Co. neades; Dods. neade.

² Co. wol; Dods. wel.

CHAT. Yes, by the masse, a hole broke down euen *wit^h*in these ii dayes.

DICCON. Hodge he intendes this same night to slip in there-a-ways.

CHAT. O Christ, that I were sure of it! in faith, he shuld haue his mede!

35

DICCON. Watch wel, for the knaue wil be there as sure as is your crede.

I wold spend my-selfe a shilling to haue him swinged well.

CHAT. I am as glad as a woman can be of this thing to here tell.

By Gogs bones, when he *commeth*, now that I know the matter,

He shal sure at the first skip to leape in scalding water, — 40
With a worse turne besides! When he will, let him come!

DICCON. I tell you as my sister, you know what meaneth
“mum”!

[*Exit* DAME CHAT.]

[The iiij Act. The iiij Scene.]¹

[*The same place.*]

[DICCON *awaits* DOCTOR RAT.]

[DICCON.] Now lacke I but my doctor to play his part againe.

And lo,² where he commeth towards, — per aduenture, to his paine!

D. RAT. What good newes, Diccon, fellow? is Mother Chat at home?

DICCON. She is, syr, and she is not, but it please her to whome.

Yet dyd I take her tardy, as subtle³ as she was! 5

D. RAT. The thing that thou wentst for, hast thou brought it to passe?

¹ *This scene, as the brackets indicate, is not marked in Co.*

² Co. to; Dods. lo.

³ Co. Haz. subtle; Dods. suble.

DICCON. I haue done that I haue done, be it worse, be it better!

And Dame Chat at her wyts ende I haue almost set her.

D. RAT. Why, hast thou spied the neele? Quickly, I pray thee, tell!

DICCON. I haue spyed it, in faith, sir, I handled my-selfe so well.

10

And yet the crafty queane had almost take my trumpe.

But, or all came to an ende, I set her in a dumpe!

D. RAT. How so, I pray thee, Diccon?

DICCON. Mary, syr, will ye heare?

She was clapt downe on the backside, by Cocks Mother dere,

And there she sat sewing a halter or a bande,

15

With no other thing saue Gammers nedle in her hande.

As soone as any knocke, if the filth be in doubt,

She needes but once puffe, and her candle is out.

Now I, sir, knowing of euery doore the pin,

Came nycely, and said no worde till time I was within;

20

And there I sawe the neele, euen with these two eyes.

Who-euer say the contrary, I will sweare he lyes!

D. RAT. O Diccon, that I was not there then in thy steade!

DICCON. Well, if ye will be ordred and do by my reade,

I will bring you to a place, as the house standes,

25

Where ye shall take the drab with the neele in hir handes.

D. RAT. For Gods sake, do so, Diccon, and I will gage my gowne

To geue thee a full pot of the best ale in the towne!

DICCON. Follow me but a litle, and marke what I will say;

Lay downe your gown beside you; go to, come on your way!

30

Se ye not what is here? — a hole wherin ye may creepe

Into the house, and sodenly vnwares among them leape.

There shal ye finde the bitchfox and the neele together.

Do as I bid you, man, come on your wayes hether!

D. RAT. Art thou sure, Diccon, the swil-tub standes not here-about?

35

DICCON. I was within my-selfe, man, euen now, there is no doubt.

Go softly, make no noyse, giue me your foote, sir John!
Here will I waite vpon you tyl you come out anone.

[DOCTOR RAT *climbs into the house.*]

D. RAT. Helpe, Diccon! out, alas! I shal be slaine
among them!

DICCON. If they giue you not the nedle, tel them that ye
will hang them. 40

Ware that! Hoow, my wenches! haue ye caught the foxe
That vsed to make reuel among your hennes and cocks?
Saue his life yet for his order, though he susteine some paine.
Gogs bread, I am afraide, they wil beate out his braine!

[*Exit* DICCON. DOCTOR RAT *comes out in disarray.*]

D. RAT. Wo worth the houre that I came heare! 45

And wo worth him that wrought this geare!

A sort of drabs and queanes haue me blest!

Was euer creature halfe so euill drest?

Who-euer it wrought and first did inuent it,

He shall, I warrant him, erre long repent it! 50

I will spend all I haue, without my skinne,

But he shall be brought to the plight I am in!

Master Bayly, I trow, and he be worth his eares,

Will snaffle these murderers and all that them beares.

I will surely neither byte nor suppe 55

Till I fetch him hether, this matter to take vp.

[*Exit.*]

The v Acte. The i Sceane.

[*A room in the house of the BAILIE.*]

MASTER BAYLY. DOCTOR RAT. [SCAPETHRYFT *and* MUTES.]

BAILIE. I can perceiue none other, I speke it from my hart,
But either ye ar in al the fault or els in *the* greatest part.

D. RAT. If it be counted his fault, besides all his greeues,
When a poore man is spoyled and beaten among theeues,
Then I confesse my fault herein, at this season; 5

But I hope you wil not iudge so much against reason.

BAILY. And me thinkes, by your owne tale, of all that ye name,

If any plaid the theefe, you were the very same.

The women they did nothing, as your words make probation,
But stoutly withstood your forcible inuasion. 10

If that a theefe at your window to enter should begin,
Wold you hold forth your hand and helpe to pull him in?

Or wold you¹ kepe him out? I pray you, answere me.

D. RAT. Mary, kepe him out, and a good cause why!

But I am no theefe, sir, but an honest learned clarke. 15

BAILY. Yea, but who knoweth that, when he meets you
in the darke.

I am sure your learning shines not out at your nose.

Was it any maruaile though the poore woman arose

And start vp, being afraide of that was in her purse?

Me thinke you may be glad that you[r]² lucke was no
worse. 20

D. RAT. Is not this euill ynough, I pray you, as you
thinke?

Showing his broken head.

BAILY. Yea, but a man in the darke, if³ chaunces do
wincke,

As soone he smites his father as any other man,

Because for lacke of light discerne him he ne can.

Might it not haue ben your lucke *wit*h a spit to haue ben
slaine? 25

D. RAT. I thinke I am litle better, my scalpe is clouen to
the braine.

If there be all the remedy, I know who beares the k[n]ockes.⁴

BAILY. By my troth, and well worthy besides to kisse
the stockes,

To come in on the backe-side, when ye might go about!

¹ Co. you wold; *corr. by* Dods.

² *Corr. by* Dods.

³ Co. of; Dods. if; Haz. *changes to oft.*

⁴ *Corr. by* Dods.

I know non such, vnles they long to haue their braines knockt
out. 30

D. RAT. Well, wil you be so good, sir, as talke with
Dame Chat,

And know what she intended? I aske no more but that.

BAYLY. Let her be called, fellow, because of Master
Doctor.

I warrant in this case she wil be hir owne proctor ;

[*Exit SCAPETHRYFT.*]

She will tel hir owne tale in metter or in prose, 35
And byd you seeke your remedy and so go wye your nose!

The v Acte. The ii Sceane.

[*The same place.*]

M. BAYLY, CHAT, D. RAT, GAMMER, HODGE, DICCON, [SCAPETHRYFT
*and MUTES are present during the scene, GAMMER, HODGE and DICCON
coming in later.*]

BAYLY.⁶ Dame Chat, Master Doctor vpon you here com-
plained¹

That you *and* your maides shuld him much disorder,
And taketh many an oth that no word he² fained,³
Laying to your charge how you thought him to murder ;
And, on his part againe, that same man saith further
He neuer offended you in word nor intent :
To heare you answer hereto, we haue now for you sent. 7

CHAT. That I wold haue murdered him? fye on him,
wretch !
And euil mought he⁴ thee for it, our Lord I besech.⁵
I will swere on al the bookes that opens and shuttes,
He faineth this tale out of his owne guttes ;
For this seuen weekes with me, I am sure, he sat not downe.

¹ Co. complained ; Dods. complaineth.

² Haz. be.

⁴ Co. be ; Dods. he.

³ Co. Dods. fained.

⁵ Co. besēch.

Nay, ye haue other minions, in the other end of the towne,
Where ye were liker to catch such a blow
Then any-where els, as farre as I know!

15

BAILY. Be-like then, Master Doctor, you[r]¹ stripe there
ye got not!

D. RAT. Thinke you I am so mad that where I was bet
I wot not?

Will ye beleue this queane before she hath tryd it?
It is not the first dede she hath done and afterward denide
it.

CHAT. What, man, will you say I broke your head? 20

D. RAT. How canst thou proue the contrary?

CHAT. Nay, how prouest thou that I did the deade?

D. RAT. To plainly, by S. Mary!

This profe, I trow, may serue though I no word spoke!

Showing his broken head.

CHAT. Because thy head is broken, was it I that it broke? 25
I saw thee, Rat, I tel thee, not once within this fortnight.

D. RAT. No, mary, thou sawest me not, for-why thou
hadst no light;

But I felt thee, for al the darke, beshrew thy smothe cheekes!
And thou groped me, this wil declare any day this six weekes.

Showing his heade.

BAILY. Answere me to this, M[ast] Rat: when caught
you this harme of yours? 30

D. RAT. A-while a-go, sir, God he knoweth, *wit~~h~~-in* les
then these ii houres.

BAILY. Dame Chat, was there none with you — confesse,
i faith! — about that season?

What, woman! let it be what it wil, tis neither felony nor
treason.

CHAT. Yes, by my faith, Master Bayly, there was a
knaue not farre

Who caught one good philup on the brow with a dore-barre, — 35

¹ *Corr. by Dods.*

And well was he worthy, as it semed to mee ;
But what is that to this man, since this was not hee ?

BAILY. Who was it then ? Lets here !

D. RAT. Alas ! sir, aske you that ?
Is it not made plain inough by the owne mouth of Dame
Chat ?

The time agreeth, my head is broken, her tong can not lye ; 40
Onely vpon a bare nay she saith it was not I.

CHAT. No, mary, was it not indeede ; ye shal here by
this one thing :

This after-noone a frend of mine for good wil gaue me warn-
ing,

And bad me wel loke to my ruste and al my capons pennes,
For, if I toke not better heede, a knaue wold haue my hennes ; 45
Then I, to saue my goods, toke so much pains as him to
watch,

And, as good fortune serued me, it was my chaunce him for
to catch.

What strokes he bare away, or other what was his gaines,
I wot not, but sure I am he had something for his paines !

BAILY. Yet telles thou not who it was.

CHAT. Who it was ? a false theefe, 50
That came like a false foxe my pullaine to kil and mischeefe !

BAILY. But knowest thou not his name ?

CHAT. I know it. But what than ?
It was that crafty cullyon, Hodge, my Gammer Gurtons man.

BAILIE. Call me the knaue hether, he shal sure kysse the
stockes ;

I shall teach him a lesson for filching hens or cocks ! 55

[Exit SCAPETHRYFT.]

D. RAT.¹ I meruaile, Master Bayly, so bleared be your
eyes ;

An egge is not so ful of meate as she is ful of lyes.

When she hath playd this pranke to excuse al this geare,
She layeth the fault in such a one as I know was not there.

¹ In Co. this precedes l. 55.

CHAT. Was he not thear? Loke on his pate, that shalbe
his witnes! 60

D. RAT. I wold my head were half so hole, I wold seeke
no redresse!

[Enter GAMMER GURTON.]

BAILY. God blesse you, Gammer Gurton!

GAMMER. God dylde you, master mine!

BAILY. Thou hast a knaue *wit^h*-in thy ho[u]se, — Hodge,
a seruant of thine.

They tel me that busy knaue is such a filching one
That hen, pig, goose or capon thy neighbour can haue none. 65

GAMMER. By God, cham much ameued to heare any such
reporte!

Hodge was not wont, ich trow, to haue him in that sort.

CHAT. A theeuisher knaue is not on-liue, more filching nor
more false;

Many a truer man then he hase hanged vp by the halse!¹
And thou, his dame, — of al his theft thou art the sole re-
ceauer. 70

For Hodge to catch and thou to kepe I neuer knew none
better.

GAMMER. Sir reuerence of your masterdome, and you
were out a-doore,

Chold be so bolde, for al hir brags, to cal hir arrant whoore!
And ich knew Hodge so bad as tow, ich wish me endlesse
sorow

And chould not take the pains to hang him vp before to-
morrow! 75

CHAT. What haue I stolne *from* the or thine, thou il-
fauored olde trot?

GAMMER. A great deale more, by Gods blest, then cheuer
by the got!

That thou knowest wel, I neade not say it.

BAILY. Stoppe there, I say!

And tel me here, I pray you, this matter by the way:

¹ Co. halfe; Dods. halse.

How chauce Hodge is not here? Him wol[d]e I faine haue
had.

80

GAMMER. Alas, sir, heel be here anon; ha be handled to
bad!

CHAT. Master Bayly, sir, ye be not such a foole, wel I
know,

But ye perceiue by this lingring there is a pad in the straw.

*Thinking that HODG his head was broke, and that GAMMER wold not let
him come before them.*

GAMMER. Chil shew you his face, ich warrant the, — lo
now where he is!

*[Enter HODGE, wearing his torn best breeches, and covering the rent
with his hands.]*

BAILIE. Come on, fellow! It is tolde me thou art a
shrew, i-wysse.

85

Thy neighbours hens *thou* takest, and playes the two-legged
foxe;

Their chickens *and* their capons to, *and* now and then their
cocks.

HODGE. Ich defy them al that dare it say; cham as true
as the best!

BAILY. Wart not *thou* take within this houre in Dame
Chats hens nest?

HODGE. Take there? No, master, chold not do't for a
house-ful of gold!

90

CHAT. Thou, or the deuil in thy cote, swears this I dare
be bold.

D. RAT. Swears me no swearing, quean, the deuill he geue
the sorow!

Al is not worth a gnat thou canst swears till to-morow.

Where is the harme he hath? Shew it, by Gods bread!

Ye beat him, with a witnes, but the stripes light on my head!

95

HODGE. Bet me? Gogs blessed body, chold first, ich
trow, haue burst the.

Ich thinke, and chad my hands loose, callet, chould haue
crust the!

CHAT. Thou shitten knaue, I trow *thou* knowest *the* ful weight of my fist ;

I am fowly deceiued onles thy head *and* my doore-bar kyste !

HODGE. Hold thy chat, whore, *thou* criest so loude can no man els be hard. 100

CHAT. Well, knaue, *and* I had the alone, I wold surely rap thy costard !

BAYLY. Sir, answer me to this : is thy head whole or broken ?

CHAT. Yea, Master Bayly, blest be euery good token !

HODGE. Is my head whole ? Ich warrant you tis neither scuruy nor scald !

What, you foule beast, does think tis either pild or bald ? 105

Nay, ich thanke God, chil not, for al that thou maist spend, That chad one scab on my narse as brode as thy fingers end.

BAYLY. Come nearer heare !

HODGE. Yes, that iche dare.

BAYLY. By Our Lady, here is no harme Hodges head is hole ynough, for al Dame Chats charme.

CHAT. By Gogs blest, how-euer the thing he clockes or smolders, 110

I know the blowes he bare away either *with* head or shoulders.

Camest *thou* not, knaue, within this houre creping into my pens,

And there was caught within my hous groping among my hens ?

HODGE. A plage both on thy hens *and* the ! A carte, whore, a carte !

Should I were hanged as hie as a tree *and* chware as false as *thou* art ! 115

Geue my Gammer again her washical *thou* stole away in thy lap !

GAMMER. Yea, Maister Baily, there is a thing you know not on, may hap :

This drab she kepes away my good, *the* deuil he might her snare !

Ich pray you that ich might haue a right action on her.

CHAT. Haue I thy good, old filth, or any such old sowes? 120
I am as true, I wold thou knew, as skin betwene thy browes!

GAMMER. Many a truer hath *ben* hanged, though you
escape the daunger!

CHAT. Thou shalt answer, by Gods pity, for this thy
foule slaunder!

BAILY. Why, what *can* ye charge hir withal? To say so
ye do not well.

GAMMER. Mary, a vengeance to hir hart, *the* whore hase
stoln my neele! 125

CHAT. Thy nedle, old witch? how so? It were almes thy
skul to knock!

So didst thou say the other day that I had stolne thy cock
And rosted him to my breakfast, — which shal not be for-
gotten,

The deuil pul out thy lying tong and teeth that be so rotten!

GAMMER. Geue me my neele! As for my cocke, chould
be very loth 130

That chuld here tel he shuld hang on thy false faith and
troth.

BAILY. Your talke is such I can scarce learne who shuld
be most in fault.

GAMMER. Yet shal ye find no other wight saue she, by
bred *and* salt!

BAILY. Kepe ye content a-while, se that your tonges ye
holde;

Me thinkes you shuld remembre this is no place to scolde. 135
How knowest thou, *Gammer* Gurton, Dame Chat thy nedle
had?

GAMMER. To name you, sir, the party, chould not be
very glad.

BAILY. Yea, but we must nedes heare it, *and* therefore say
it boldly.

GAMMER. Such one as told the tale full soberly and
coldly,

Euen he that loked on — wil sweare on a booke — 140

What time this drunken gossip my faire long neele vp tooke :
Diccon, Master, the bedlam, cham very sure ye know him.

BAILIE. A false knaue, by Gods pitie! ye were but a
foole to trow him.

I durst auenture wel the price of my best cap

That, when the end is knowen, all wil turne to a iape. 145

Tolde he not you that, besides, she stole your cocke that
tyde?

GAMMER. No, master, no indede; for then he shuld
haue lyed!

My cocke is, I thanke Christ, safe and wel a-fine.

CHAT. Yea, but that ragged¹ colt, that whore, that Tyb
of thine,

Said plainly thy cocke was stolne, *and* in my house was
eaten. 150

That lying cut is lost, that she is not swinged and beaten, —

And yet for al my good name it were a small amendes!

I picke not this geare, hearst thou, out of my fingers endes;

But he that hard it, told me, who thou of late didst name, —

Diccon, whom al men knowes, — it was the very same. 155

BAILY. This is the case: you lost your nedle about the
dores,

And she answeres againe she hase no cocke of yours;

Thus, in you[r] talke and action, from that you do intend

She is whole fiewe mile wide from that she doth defend.

Will you saie she hath your cocke?

GAMMER. No, mary,² sir, that chil not! 160

BAYLY. Will you confesse hir neele?

CHAT. Will I? no, sir, will I not!

BAYLY. Then there lieth all the matter.

GAMMER. Soft, master, by the way!

Ye know she could do little and she cold not say nay.

BAYLY. Yea, but he that made one lie about your cock-
stealing,

Wil not sticke to make another, what time lies be in dealing. 165

¹ Dods. rogged; Haz. rugged.

² Co. mery; Dods. mary.

I weene the ende wil proue this brawle did first arise
Upon no other ground but only Diccons lyes.

CHAT. Though some be ¹ lyes, as you belike haue espyed
them,

Yet other some be true ; by proof I haue wel tryed them.

BAYLY. What other thing beside this, Dame Chat.

CHAT. Mary, syr, euen this: 170

The tale I tolde before, the selfe-same tale it was his ;
He gaue me, like a frende, warning against my losse,
Els had my hens be stolne eche one, by Gods crosse !
He tolde me Hodge wold come, and in he came indeede ;
But, as the matter chaused, with greater hast then speede. 175
This truth was said, and true was found, as truly I report.

BAYLY. If Doctor Rat be not deceiued, it was of another
sort.

D. RAT. By Gods Mother, thou and he be a cople of
suttle foxes !

Betweene you and Hodge I beare away the boxes.

Did not Diccon apoynt the place wher *thou* shuldst stand to
mete him? 180

CHAT. Yes, by the masse, *and*, if he came, bad me not
sticke to speet hym.

D. RAT. Gods sacrament, the villain knaue hath drest vs
round about,

He is the cause of all this brawle, that dyrty, shitten loute !

When Gammer Gurton here complained, *and* made a ruful
mone,

I heard him swear *that* you had gotten hir nedle that was
gone ; 185

And this to try, he further said, he was ful loth, how-be-it

He was content with small adoe to bring me where to see it.

And where ye ² sat, he said ful certain, if I wold folow his
read,

Into your house a priuy way he wold me guide and leade,
And where ye had it in your hands, sewing about a clowte ; 190

And set me in the backe-hole, therby to finde you oute.

¹ Co. he ; Dods. be.

² Dods. he.

And, whiles I sought a quietnes, creping vpon my knees,
 I found the weight of your dore-bar for my reward and fees.
 Such is the lucke that some men gets while they begin to mel
 In setting at one such as were out, minding to make al wel. 195

HODGE. Was not wel blest, Gammer, to scape *that*
 scoure? *And* chad ben there,
 Then chad ben drest, be-like, as ill, by the masse, as Gaffar
 Vicar.

BAYLY. Mary, sir, here is a sport alone. I loked for
 such an end.

If Diccon had not playd the knaue, this had ben sone
 amend.

My Gammer here he made a foole, and drest hir as she was; 200
 And goodwife Chat he set to scole,¹ till both parties² cried
 alas;

And D[octo]r Rat was not behind, whiles Chat his crown did
 pare;

I wold the knaue had *ben* starke blind, if Hodg had not his
 share!

HODGE. Cham meetly wel-spced alredy amongs, cham
 drest like a coult!

And chad not had the better wit, chad bene made a doul. 205

BAYLY. Sir knaue, make hast Diccon were here; fetch
 him where-euer he bee!

[*Exit* SCAPETHRYFT.]

CHAT. Fie on the villaine! fie! fie! *that* makes vs thus
 agree!

GAMMER. Fie on him knaue, with al my hart! now fie!
 and fie againe!

D. RAT. Now "fie on him!" may I best say, whom he
 hath almost slaine.

[*Enter* DICCON.]

BAYLY. Lo where he commeth at hand; belike he was
 not fare! 210

Diccon, heare be two or three thy company can not spare.

¹ Dods. *changes to* scold.

² Dods. *parts.*

DICCON. God blesse you, and you may be blest, so many
al at once!

CHAT. Come, knaue, it were a good deed¹ geld the, by
Cockes bones!

Seest not thy handiwarke? Sir Rat, can ye forbear him?

DICCON. A vengeance on those hands lite!² for my hands
cam not nere hym. 215

The horsen priest hath lift the pot in some of these alewyues
chayres,

That his head wolde not serue him, belyke, to come downe
the stayres.

BAYLY. Nay, soft! thou maist not play *the* knaue *and*
haue this language to!

If thou thy tong bridle a-while, the better maist thou do.

Confesse the truth, as I shall aske, and cease a-while to fable; 220
And for thy fault, I promise the, thy handling shalbe reason-
able.

Hast thou not made a lie or two, to set these two by the
eares?

DICCON. What if I haue? fue hundred such haue I seene
within these seuen yeares.

I am sory for nothing else but that I see not the sport

Which was betwene them when they met, as they them-selues
report. 225

BAYLY. The greatest thing — Master Rat, ye se how he
is drest!

DICCON. What deuil nede he be groping so depe in
goodwife Chats he^s nest?

BAYLY. Yea, but it was thy drift³ to bring him into *the*
briars.

DICCON. Gods bread, hath not such an old foole wit to
saue his eares?

He showeth himselfe herein, ye see, so very a coxe 230

The cat was not so madly alured by the foxe

To run into the snares was set for him, doubtlesse;

For he leapt in for myce, and this sir John for madnes.

¹ Dods. *inserts to.*

² Dods. *life.*

³ Dods. *drif.*

D. RAT. Well, and ye shift no better, ye losel, lyther
and lasye,

I will go neare, for this, to make ye leape at a dasye. 235

In the kings name, Master Bayly, I charge you set him fast!

DICCON. What, fast at cardes, or fast on-slepe? It is
the thing¹ I did last.

D. RAT. Nay, fast in fetters, false varlet, according to
thy deedes!

BAYLY. Master doctor, ther is no remedy I must intreat
you needes

Some other kinde of punishment.

D. RAT. Nay, by all halowes! 240

His punishment, if I may iudg, shalbe naught els but the
gallous.

BAYLY. That ware to sore, a spiritual man to be so
extreame!

D. RAT. Is he worthy any better, sir? how do ye iudge
and deame?

BAYLY. I graunt him wort[h]ie punishment, but in no
wise so great.

GAMMER. It is a shame, ich tel you plaine, for such false
knaues intreat! 245

He has almost vndone vs al, — that is as true as steele.

And ye[t], for al this great ado, cham neuer the nere my
neele!

BAYLY. Canst *thou* not say any-thing to that, Diccon,
with least or most?

DICCON. Yea, mary, sir, thus much I can say: wel, the
nedle is lost!

BAYLY. Nay, canst not thou tel which way that nedle
may be found? 250

DICCON. No, by my² fay, sir, though I might haue an
hundred pound.

HODGE. Thou lier lickdish, didst not say the neele wold
be gitten?

¹ Dods. king; Co. Haz. thing.

² Dods. *omits* my.

DICCON. No, Hodge, by the same token, you were ¹ that
time beshittene

For feare of Hobgobiling, — you wot wel what I meane ;
As long as it is sence, I feare me yet ye be scarce cleane. 255

BAYLY. Wel, Master Rat, you must both learne, *and*
teach vs, to forgeue.

Since Diccon hath confession made *and* is so cleane shreue,
If ye to me conscent, to amend this heauie chaunce,
I wil inioyne him here some open kind of penaunce, —
Of this condition : where ye know my fee is twenty pence 260
For the bloodshed, I am agreed with you here to dispence, —
Ye shal go quite, so that ye graunt the matter now to run
To end with mirth among vs al, euen as it was begun.

CHAT. Say yea, Master Vicar, *and* he shal sure confes to
be your detter,

And al we that be heare present wil loue you much the better. 265

D. RAT. My part is the worst ; but, since you al here-on
agree,

Go euen to, Master Bayly, — let it be so for mee !

BAYLY. How saiest thou, Diccon, art content this shal on
me depend ?

DICCON. Go to, M[ast] Bayly, say on your mind, I know
ye are my frend.

BAYLY. Then marke ye wel : to recompence this thy
former action, — 270

Because thou hast offended al, — to make them ² satisfaction,
Before their faces here kneele downe, *and*, as I shal the
teach, —

For thou shalt take on ³ othe of Hodges leather breache :
First, for Master Doctor, vpon paine of his cursse,
Where he wil pay for al, thou neuer draw thy pursse, 275
And, when ye meete at one pot, he shall haue the first pull,
And thou shalt neuer offer him the cup but it be full ;
To goodwife Chat thou shalt be sworne, euen on the same
wyse,

¹ Co. where; Dods. were.

³ Dods. an.

² Dods. the; Co. Haz. them.

If she refuse thy money once, neuer to offer it twice, —
 Thou shalt be bound by the same here, as thou dost take it, 280
 When thou maist drinke of free cost, thou neuer forsake it;
 For Gammer Gurtons sake, againe, sworne shalt thou bee
 To helpe hir to hir nedle againe, if it do lie in thee,
 And likewise be bound by the vertue of that
 To be of good abering to Gib, hir great cat; 285
 Last of al, for Hodge the othe to scanne,
 Thou shalt neuer take him for fine gentleman.

HODGE. Come on, fellow Diccon, chalbe euen with thee
 now!

BAYLY. Thou wilt not sticke to do this, Diccon, I trow?

DICCON. No, by my fathers skin, my hand downe I lay it! 290
 Loke, as I haue promised, I wil not deny it.
 But, Hodge, take good heede now thou do not beshite me!

And gaue¹ him a good blow on the buttocke.

HODGE. Gogs hart, thou false villaine, dost thou bite mee?

BAYLY. What, Hodge, doth he hurt the or euer he begin?

HODGE. He thrust me into the buttocke with a bodkin or
 a pin! 295

[He finds the needle.]

I saie, Gammer! Gammer!

GAMMER. How now, Hodge, how now?

HODGE. Gods malt, Gammer Gurton!

GAMMER. Thou art mad, ich trow!

HODGE. Will you see! the deuil, Gammer!

GAMMER. The deuil, sonne? God
 blesse vs!

HODGE. Chould² iche were hanged, Gammer!

GAMMER. Mary, se³ ye might dresse vs.

HODGE. Chaué it, by the masse, Gammer!

GAMMER. What? not
 my neele, Hodge? 300

HODGE. Your neele, Gammer! your neele!

GAMMER. No, fie, dost but dodge!

¹ Haz. give.

² Haz. *inserts* [if].

³ *Qy.* so.

HODGE. Cha found your neele, Gammer, here in my
hand be it!

GAMMER. For al the loues on earth, Hodge, let me see it!

HODGE. Soft, Gammer!

GAMMER. Good Hodge!

HODGE. Soft, ich say; tarie a while!

GAMMER. Nay, sweete Hodge, say truth, and do not me
begile!

305

HODGE. Cham sure on it, ich warrant you; it goes no
more a-stray.

GAMMER. Hodge, when I speake so faire, wilt stil say
me nay?

HODGE. Go neare the light, Gammer; this¹ wel! in faith,
good lucke!

Chwas almost vndone, twas so far in my buttocke!

GAMMER. Tis min owne deare neele, Hodge, sykerly I
wot!

310

HODGE. Cham I not a good sonne, Gammer? cham I not?

GAMMER. Christs blessing light on thee, hast made me
for-euer!

HODGE. Ich knew that ich must finde it els choud a had
it neuer!

CHAT. By my troth, Gossyp Gurton, I am euen as glad
As though I mine owne selfe as good a turne had!

315

BAYLY. And I, by my concience, to see it so come forth,
Reioyce so much at it as three nedles be worth!

D. RAT. I am no whit sory to see you so reioyce!

DICCON. Nor I much the gladder for al this noyce!

Yet say, "Gramercy, Diccon," for springing of the game.²

320

GAMMER. Gramercy, Diccon, twenty times! O how glad
cham!

If that chould do so much, your masterdome to come hether,
Master Rat, goodwife Chat and Diccon, together,—

Cha but one halfpenny, as far as iche know it,

And chil not rest this night till ich bestow it;

325

¹ Haz. 'tis.

² Should this line be spoken by the BAILY?

If euer ye loue me, let vs go in and drinke!

BAYLY. I am content, if the rest thinke as I thinke.

Master Rat, it shalbe best for you if we so doo;

Then shall you warme you and dresse your-self too.

DICCON. Soft, syrs, take vs with you, the company shalbe
the more!

330

As proude coms behinde, they say, as any goes before!

[Turning to the audience.]

But now, my good masters, since we must be gone

And leaue you behinde vs here all alone,—

Since at our last ending thus mery we bee,

For Gammer Gurtons nedle sake let vs haue a plaudytie!

335

FINIS.

GURTON.

PERUSED AND ALOWED, &C.

Imprinted at London

in Fleetestreate beneath the Conduite

at the signe of S. John Euangelist, by

Thomas Colwell.

1575.

Plot. Some parts constitute
a diversion. This is a mixture
not a compound. Interesting
stage directions. Show that
stage business was becoming
a conscious art.

Literary merit.
wanted to present a cruel being,
and the less motive there
is for his actions, the more
cruel he seems.

PART VIII.

A Lamentable Tragedie,

mixed full of plefant mirth
containing the Life

of Cambifes King of Percia,

from the beginning of his kingdome
unto his Death,

his one good deede of execution,
after that, many wicked deedes
and tyrannous murders

committed by and through him,
and laft of all,

his odious death by Gods Iuftice appointed,

Done in fuch order as foloweth.

By Thomas Prefton.

This play was licensed to John Alde in 1569. From his edition both Hawkins ("Origin of the English Drama," I, 243 ff.) and Hazlitt (Dodsley's "Old Plays," IV, 157 ff.) printed. I print from the second edition, by Edward Alde, the existence of which Hawkins doubted. Insignificant variants in Hawkins and Hazlitt are not recorded; *u* and *v* are reduced to modern usage. The titlepage is, of course, not a facsimile.

THE DIVISION OF THE PARTS.

COUNCELL	}	<i>For one Man.</i>	CAMBISES	}	<i>For one Man.</i>
HUF			EPILOGUS		
PRAXASPES			PROLOGUE	}	<i>For one Man.</i>
MURDER			SISAMNES		
LOB			DILIGENCE		
THE 3 LORD			CRUELTYE		
	HOB				
	PREPARATION				
LORD	}	<i>For one Man.</i>	THE I LORD	}	<i>one who can do two things equally For the Man. well.</i>
RUF			AMBIDEXTER		
COMMONS CRY			TRIAL		
COMMONS COMPLAINT					
LORD SMIRDIS					
VENUS					
	}	<i>For one Man.</i>	MERETRIX	}	<i>For one Man.</i>
			SHAME		
			OTIAN		
			MOTHER		
			LADY		
			QUEENE		
	}	<i>For one Man.</i>	YONG CHILD	}	<i>For one Man.</i>
			CUPID		

[A LAMENTABLE TRAGEDIE.]

[Prologue.]

The PROLOGUE entreth.

*ianbuic
heptameter
7 accented line*

Agathon, he whose counsaill wise to princes weale extended,
By good advice unto a prince three things¹ he hath com-
mended :

First is that he hath government and ruleth over men ;
Secondly, to rule with lawes, eke iustice, saith he then ;
Thirdly, that he must wel conceive he may not alwaies
raigne.

5

Lo, thus the rule unto a prince Agathon squared plaine !
Tullie the wise, whose sapience in volumes great doth tell,
Who in wisdom in that time did many men excel,
“ A prince,” saith he, “ is, of himselfe, a plaine and speaking
law ;

The law, a schoolmaister devine,” — this by his rule I drawe. 10
The sage and wittie Seneca his words therto did frame :
“ The honest exercise of kings, men wil insue the same ;
But, contrariwise, if that a king abuse his kingly seat,
His ignomie and bitter shame in fine shal be more great.”

In Percia there raignd a king, who Cirus hight by name, 15
Who did deserve, as I do read, the lasting blast of fame ;
But he when Sisters Three had wrought to shere his vital
threed,

As heire due to take the crowne Cambises did proceed.
He in his youth was trained up by trace of vertues lore ;
Yet, being king, did cleane forget his perfect race before. 20

¹ E. Alde, 3 things.

Then, cleaving more unto his wil, such vice did immitate
 As one of Icarus his kinde : forewarning then did hate,
 Thinking that none could him dismay, ne none his fact could
 see.

Yet at the last a fall he tooke, like Icarus to be.

Els, as the fish, which oft had take the pleasant bait from
 hooke,

25

In safe did spring, and pearce the streames, when fisher fast
 did looke

To hoist up from the watry waves unto the dried land,
 Then skapte, at last by suttle bait come to the fishers hand ;
 Even so this King Cambises heere, when he had wrought his
 wil,

Taking delight the innocent his guiltlesse blood to spil,
 Then mighty Jove would not permit to prosecute offence,
 But, what mesure the king did meat, the same did Jove com-
 mence,

30

To bring to end with shame his race, — two yeares¹ he did
 not raign.

His cruelty we wil delate, and make the matter plaine.
 Craving that this may suffise now your patience to win,
 I take my way. Beholde, I see the players comming in.

35

FINIS.

A COMMEDY OF KING CAMBISES.

First enter CAMBISES, the king, KNIGHT, and COUNCELLOR.

CAMB. My Counsaill grave and sapient, with lords of
 legall traine,
 Attentive ears towards me² bend, and mark what shalbe
 sain ;
 So you likewise, my valiant knight, whose manly acts doth
 flie
 By brute of Fame, that³ sounding tromp doth perce the azur
 sky ;

¹ E. Alde, 2 yeares.

² Haw. Haz. omit me.

³ Haw. Haz. the.

My sapient words, I say, perpend, and so your skil delate! 5
 You know that Mors vanquished hath Cirus, that king of
 state,

And I, by due inheritance, possesse that princely crowne,
 Ruling by sword of mighty force in place of great renoune.
 You knowe, and often have heard tell, my fathers worthy
 facts, —

A manly Marsis heart he bare, appearing by his acts. 10

And what? shall I to ground let fall my fathers golden praise?
 No, no! I meane for to attempt this same more large to raise.
 In that, that I, his sonne, succeed his kingly seat, as due,
 Extend your councill unto me in that I aske of you :

I am the king of Persia, a large and fertile soile ; 15

The Egyptians against us repugne as varlets slave and vile ;
 Therefore I mean with Marsis hart with wars them to fre-
 quent,

Them to subdue as captives mine, — this is my hearts intent ;
 So shall I win honors delight, and praise of me shall go.

My Councill, speake, — and, lordings, eke : — is it not best
 do so? 20

COUNC. O puisant king, your blisful words deserves
 abundant praise,

That you in this doo go about your fathers fame to raise.
 O blisful day, that king so yoong such profit should conceive,
 His fathers praise and his to win from those that wold
 deceive !

Sure, my true and soveraigne king, I fall before you prest, 25

Answer to give, as dutie mine, in that your Grace request.

If that your heart adicted be the Egyptians to convince,
 Through Marsis aid the conquest wun, then deed of hapy
 prince

Shall pearce the skies unto the throne of the supernal seat,
 And merite there a just reward of Jupiter the Great. 30

But then your Grace must not turne backe from this pre-
 tended will ;

For to proceed in vertuous life imploy indeavour stil ;
 Extinguish vice, and in that cup to drinke have no delight ;

To martiall feats and kingly sport¹ fix all your whole delight.

KING. My Councel grave, a thousand thanks with hart I
do you render,

35

That you my case so prosperous intirely doo tender!

I wil not swerve from those your steps whereto you wold me
train.

But now, my lord and valiant knight, with words give
answer plain :

Are you content with me to go the Marsis games to try?

LORD. Yea, peerelesse prince, to aid your Grace my-selfe
wil live and die.

40

KNIGHT. And I, for my hability, for feare will not turne
backe,

But, as the ship against the rocks, sustaine and bide the
wracke.

KING. O willing harts, a thousand thanks I render unto
you!

Strik up your drums with corage great, we wil march foorth
even now!

COUNC. Permit, O king, few wordes to heer, — my duty
serves no lesse ;

45

Therefore give leave to Councel thine his mind for to expresse!

KING. Speake on, my Councel ; what it be, you shal have
favor mine.

COUNC. Then wil I speake unto your Grace, as duty doth
me bind.

Your Grace doth meane for to attempt of war the manly art ;
Your Grace therein may hap receive, with others, for your
part,

50

The dent of death, — in those affaires all persons are alike, —
The heart couragious oftentimes his detriment doth seeke :

Its best therefore for to permit a ruler of your land

To sit and judge with equity when things of right are skand.

KING. My Grace doth yeeld to this your talke ; to be thus
now it shall.

55

My knight, therefore prepare your-selfe Sisamnes for to call :

¹ Haw. Haz. sports.

A iudge he is of prudent skil, even he shal beare the sway
In absence mine, when from the land I do depart my way.

KNIGHT. Your knight before your Grace even heer him-
self hath, redy prest
With willing heart for to fulfil as your Grace made request. 60

COUNC. Pleaseth your Grace, I iudge of him to be a man
right fit ;
For he is learned in the law, having the gift of wit ;
In your Graces precinct I do not view for it a meeter man ;
His learning is of good effect, bring prooffe thereof I can.
I doo not know what is his life, — his conscience hid from me ; 65
I dout not but the feare of God before his eies to be.

LORD. Report declares he is a man that to himselfe is nie,
One that favoureth much the world and sets to much¹ thereby.
But this I say of certainty : if hee your Grace succeed
In your absence but for a-while, he wil be warnd indeed 70
No injustice for to frequent, no partiall iudge to proove,
But rule all things with equitie, to win your Graces love.

KING. Of that he shall a warning have my heasts for to
obay ;
Great punishment for his offence against him will I lay.

[Enter SISAMNES.]

COUNC. Behold, I see him now agresse and enter into
place! 75

SISAM. O puissant prince and mighty king, the gods pre-
serve your Grace !
Your Graces message came to me, your wil purporting forth ;
With grateful mind I it receiv'd according to mine oath,
Erecting then my-selfe with speed before your Graces eies,
The tenor of your princely wil from you for to agnise. 80

KING. Sisamnes, this the whole effect the which for you
I sent :
Our mind it is to elevate you to great preferment.
My Grace, and gracious Councel eke, hath chose you for this
cause,

¹ Haw. Haz. to much sets. *Here and below I give the spelling of Haw.*

In iudgement you do office beare, which have the skil in lawes ;

We thinke that you accordingly by justice rule wil deale, 85
That for offence none shal have cause, of wrong you to appeale.

SISAM. Abundant thanks unto your Grace for this benig-
nity !

To you, his Councel, in like case, with lords of clemency !
What-so your Grace to me permits, if I therein offend,
Such execution then commence, and use it to this end, 90
That all other, by that my deed, example so may take,
To admonish them to flee the same by feare it may them
make !

KING. Then, according to your words,¹ if you therein
offend,

I assure you, even from my brest correction shall extend.
From Persia I meane to go into the Egypt land, 95
Them to convince by force of armes, and win the upper hand.
While I therefore absent shall be, I doe you full permit,
As governour in this my right, in that estate to sit,
For to detect, and eke correct, those that abuse my grace.
This is the totall of my wil ; give answeere in this case! 100

SISAM. Unworthy much, O prince, am I, and for this
gift unfit ;

But, sith that it hath pleasd your Grace that I in it must sit,
I do avouch, unto my death, according to my skil,
With equity for to observe your Graces mind and wil,
And nought from it to swarve, indeed, but sincerely to stay ; 105
Els let me tast the penalty, as I before did say.

KING. Wel then, of this authoritie I give you ful posses-
sion.

SISAM. And I will it fulfil, also, as I have made profes-
sion.

KING. My Councel, then let us depart a small stay [for]
to make ;

To Egypt land now forth with speed my voyage will I take. 110

¹ Haw. Haz. word.

Strike up your drums, us to rejoyce to hear the warlike
sound.

Stay you heere, Sisammes, judge, and looke wel to your
bound!

Exeunt KING, LORD and COUNCELL.

SISAM. Even now the king hath me extold and set me up
aloft;

Now may I weare the bordred¹ guard and lie² in downe-bed
soft;

Now may I purchase house and land, and have all at my wil; 115

Now may I build a princely place, my mind for to fulfil;

Now may I abrogate the law as I shall thinke it good;

If any-one me now offend, I may demaund his blood.

According to the proverbe old, my mouth I wil up-make,

Now it doth lie all in my hand to leave or els to take, 120

To deale with justice to my³ bound, and so to live in hope.

But oftentimes the birds be gone, while one for nest doth
grope.

Doo well or il, I dare avouch, some evil on me wil speake.

No, truely, yet I do not meane the kings precepts to breake;

To place I meane for to returne my duty to fulfil. 125

Exit.^A

*Enter the VICE, [AMBIDEXTER,] with an old capcase on his head, an olde
paille about his hips for harnes, a scummer and a pollid by his side, and
a rake on his shoulder.*

AMB. Stand away, stand away, for the passion of God!

Harnessed I am, prepared to the field;

I would have bene content at home to have bod,

But I am sent forth with my speare and shield.

I am appointed to fight against a snaile, 130

¹ Haw. Haz. brodered.

² Haw. Haz. lay.

³ So Haw. Haz.; E. Alde, me.

⁴ *As this play is not divided into acts and scenes, and as the events occur
apparently in a place which is now a council-chamber, now a street, and
now a garden, it seems improper to subdivide the play or to indicate
changes of scene. When necessary for intelligibility, the location is an-
nounced in the text.*

By Gogs hart, the world shall goe hard¹ if I doo not shift;
At some olde carles budget I meane for to lift!

RUF. By His flesh, nose, eyes and eares,
I will venter void of all cares! 165

He is not a souldier that doth feare any doubt
If that he would bring his purpose about.

SNUF. Feare that feare list, it shall not be I.
By Gogs wounds, I will make some necke stand awry!
If I loose my share, I sweare by Gogs hart, 170
Then let another take up my parte!

HUF. Yet I hope to come the richest souldier away.

RUF. If a man aske ye, ye may hap to say nay.

SNUF. Let all men get what they can, not to leese I hope;
Wheresoever I goe, in eche corner I will grope. 175

AMB. What and ye run in² the corner of some prittie
maide?

SNUF. To grope there, good fellow, I will not be afraid.

HUF. Gogs wounds, what art thou that with us doost mel?
Thou seemest to be a souldier, the truth to tel;
Thou seemest to be harnesssed I cannot tel how, 180
I thinke he came lately from riding some cow.
Such a deformed slave did I never see!

Ruf, doost thou know him? I pray thee, tel me!

RUF. No, by my troth, fellow Huf, I never see him
before!

SNUF. As for me, I care not if I never see him more. 185
Come, let us run his arse against the poste!

AMB. A, ye slaves! I will be with you at oste!³
Ah, ye knaves! I wil teach ye how ye shal me deride!

Heere let him swinge them about.

Out of my sight! I can ye not abide!
Now, goodman poutchmouth, I am a slave with you? 190
Now have at ye a-fresh, againe, even now!
Mine arse against the poste you will run?

¹ Haw. Haz. evil. ² Haw. Haz. into.

³ Haw. at the oste; Haz. at the host.

But I wil make you from that saying to turn!

HUF. I beseech ye hartely to be content!

RUF. I insure you, by mine honesty, no hurt we ment! 195

Besides that, againe, we do not know what ye are.

Ye know that souldiers their stoutnes will declare;

Therefore, if we have anything offended,

Pardon our rudenes, and it shalbe amended.

AMB. Yea, Gods pittie, begin ye to intreat me? 200

Have at ye once againe! by the masse, I will beat ye.

Fight againe.

HUF. Gogs hart, let us kill him! Suffer no longer!

Draw their swords.

SNUF. Thou slave, we will see if thou be the stronger!

RUF. Strike of his head at one blow!

That we be souldiers, Gogs hart, let him know! 205

AMB. O the passion of God, I have doon, by mine honestie!

I will take your part heerafter, verily.

ALL. Then come,¹ let us agree!

AMB. Shake hands with me, I shake hands with thee.

Ye are full of courtesie, that is the best. 210

And you take great paine, ye are a mannerly guest.

Why, maisters, doo you not know me? the truth to me tel!

ALL. No, trust us; not very well.

AMB. Why, I am Ambidexter, whom many souldiers doo love.

HUF. Gogs hart, to have thy company needs we must prove! 215

We must play with both hands, with our hostes and host,

Play with both hands, and score on the poste;

Now and then, with our captain, for many a delay,

We wil not sticke with both hands to play.

AMB. The honestest man, ye² may me trust! 220

Enter MERETRIX, with a staffe on her shoulder.

MER. What, is there no lads heere that hath a lust

To have a passing trul to help at their need?

¹ Haw. Haz. content. ² Haw. Haz. ye, ye; E. Alde *has only one ye.*

- HUF. Gogs hart, she is come, indeed!
 What, Mistres Meretrix, by His wounds, welcome to me!
- MER. What wil ye give me? I pray you, let me see. 225
- RUF. By His hart, she looks for gifts by-and-by!
- MER. What? Maister Ruf? I cry you mercy!
 The last time I was with you, I got a broken head,
 And lay in the street all night for want of a bed!
- SNUF. Gogs wounds, kisse me, my trull so white! 230
 In thee, I sweare, is all my delight!
 If thou shouldst have had a broken head for my sake,
 I would have made his head to ake!
- MER. What? Maister Ambidexter? Who looked for you?
- AMB. Mistres Meretrix, I thought not to see you heere
 now. 235
- There is no remedy,— at meeting I must have a kisse!
- MER. What, man, I wil not sticke for that, by Gisse!

Kisse.

- AMB. So now, gramercy! I pray thee be gone!
- MER. Nay, soft, my freend, I meane to have one!
 Nay, soft! I sweare, and if ye were my brother, 240
 Before I let go, I wil have another!

Kisse, kisse, kisse.

- RUF. Gogs hart, the whore would not kisse me yet!
- MER. If I be a whore, thou art a knave; then it is quit!
- HUF. But hearst thou, Meretrix? With who this night
 wilt thou lye?
- MER. With him that giveth the most money. 245
- HUF. Gogs hart, I have no money in purse, ne yet in
 clout!
- MER. Then get thee hence and packe, like a lout!
- HUF. Adieu, like a whore! *Exit HUF.*
- MER. Farwell, like a knave!¹
- RUF. Gogs nailes, Mistres Meretrix, now he is gone,
 A match ye shall make straight with me: 250
 I wil give thee sixpence to lye one night with thee.

¹ *The rhyme seems to demand some such word as whoreson.*

MER. Gogs hart, slave, doost thinke ¹ I am a sixpeny iug?
No, wis ye, Jack, I looke a little more smug!

SNUF. I will give her xviii pence to serve me first.

MER. Gramercy, Snuf, thou art not the wurst! 255

RUF. By Gogs hart, she were better be hanged, to forsake me and take thee!

SNUF. Were she so? that shall we see!

RUF. By Gogs hart, my dagger into her I will thrust!

SNUF. A, ye boy, ye would doo it and ye durst!

AMB. Peace, my maisters; ye shall not fight. 260

He that drawes first, I will him smite.

RUF. Gogs wounds, Maister Snuf, are ye so lusty?

SNUF. Gogs sides, Maister Ruf, are ye so crusty?

RUF. You may happen to see!

SNUF. Doo what thou darest to me! 265

Heer draw and fight. Heere she must lay on and coyle them both; the VICE must run his way for feare; SNUF fling down his sword and buckler and run his way.

MER. Gogs sides, knaves! seeing to fight ye be so rough,
Defend yourselves, for I will give ye both inough!

I will teach ye how ye shall fall out for me!

Yea, thou slave, Snuf! no more blowes wilt thou bide?

To take thy heeles a time hast thou spied? 270

Thou villaine, seeing Snuf has gone away,

A little better I meane thee to pay!

He falleth downe; she falleth upon him, and beats him, and taketh away his weapon.²

RUF. Alas, good Mistres Meretrix, no more!

My legs, sides and armes with beating be so sore!

MER. Thou a souldier, and loose thy weapon? 275

Goe hence, sir boy; say a woman hath thee beaten!

RUF. Good Mistres Meretrix, let me my weapon have;

Take pittie on me, mine honestie to save!

If it be knowne this repulse I sustaine,

It will redound to my ignomy and shame. 280

¹ Haw. Haz. dost thou think.

² E. Allde weapons.

MER. If thou wilt be my man, and waite upon me,
This sword and buckler I wil give thee.

RUF. I will doo all at your commaundement ;
As servant to you I wilbe obedient.

MER. Then let me see how before me you can goe. 285
When I speake to you, you shall doo so :
Of with your cap at place and at boord, —
“Forsooth, Mistres Meretrix,” at every word.
Tut ! tut ! in the campe such souldiers there be ;
One good woman would beat away two or three! 290
Wel, I am sure customers tarry at home.
Manerly before, and let us be gone ! *Exeunt.*

Enter AMBIDEXTER.

AMB. O the passion of God, be they heer still or no ?
I durst not abide to see her beat them so !
I may say to you I was¹ in such a fright,² 295
Body of me, I see the heare of my head stand upright !
When I saw her so hard upon them lay on,³
O the passion of God, thought I, she wil be with me anon !
I made no more⁴ adoo, but avoided the thrust,
And to my legs began for to trust ; 300
And fell a-laughing to my-selfe, when I was once gone :
It is wisdome, quoth I, by the masse, to save one !
Then into this place I intended to trudge,
Thinking to meete Sisamnes the judge.
Beholde where he commeth ! I will him meet, 305
And like a gentleman I meane him to greet.

[Enter SISAMNES.]

SISAM. Since that the Kings Graces Maiestie in office did
me set,
What abundance of wealth to me might I get !
Now and then some vantage I atchive ; much more yet may
I take,
But that I fear unto the king that some complaint will make. 310

¹ So Haw. Haz. ; E. Alde, wis.

³ Haw. Haz. *omit* on.

² So Haw. Haz. ; E. Alde, flight.

⁴ So Haw. Haz. ; E. Alde, mare.

AMB. Jesu, Maister Sisamnes, you are unwise!

SISAM. Why so? I pray thee,¹ let me agnise.

What, Maister Ambidexter, is it you?

Now welcome to me, I make God a-vow!

AMB. Jesu, Maister Sisamnes, with me you are wel acquainted!

315

By me rulers may be trimly painted.

Ye are unwise if ye take not time while ye may:

If ye wil not now, when ye would ye shall have nay.

What is he that of you dare make exclamation,

Of your wrong-dealing² to make explication?

320

Can you not play with both hands, and turn with the winde?

SISAM. Beleeve me, your words draw deepe in my mind:

In collour wise unto this day, to bribes I have inclined;

More the same for to frequent, of truth I am now minded.

Behold, even now unto me suters doo proceed.

325

[Enter SMALL HABILITIE.]

SM. HAB. I beseech you heer, good Maister Judge, a poor man's cause to tender;

Condemne me not in wrongfull wise that never was offender!

You know right wel my right it is. I have not for to give.

You take away from me my due, that should my corps releeve.

The commons of you doo complaine; from them you devocate,³

330

With anguish great and grevos words their harts do penetrate.

The⁴ right you sell⁵ unto the wrong, your private gain to win;

You violate the simple man, and count it for no sinne.

SISAM. Hold thy tung, thou prating knave, and give to me reward,

¹ Haw. Haz. ye.

² Haw. Haz. dealings.

³ New Eng. Dict. *suggests* derogate.

⁴ Haz. *changes to* From.

⁵ Haw. fel; E. Alde, Haz. fell

Els, in this wise, I tell thee truth, thy tale wil not be heard. 335
 Ambidexter, let us goe hence, and let the knave alone.

AMB. Farwell, Small Habilitie, for helpe now get you
 none ;

Bribes hath corrupt him good lawes to polute. [Exeunt.]

SM. HAB. A naughty man that will not obey the kings
 constitute !

With hevvy hart I wil return, til God redresse my pain. 340

Exit. Enter SHAME, with a trump blacke.

SHAME. From among the grisly ghosts I come from ti-
 rants testy train ;

Unseemely Shame, of sooth, I am, procured to make plaine
 The odious facts and shameles deeds¹ Cambises king doth
 use.

All pietie and vertuous life he doth it cleane refuse ;
 Lechery and drunkennes he doth it much frequent ; 345

The tigers kinde to imitate he hath given full consent.
 He nought esteems his Counsel grave ne vertuous bringing-
 up,

But dayly stil receives the drink of damned Vices cup.
 He can bide no instruction, he takes so great delight
 In working of iniquitie for to frequent his spight. 350

As Fame doth sound the royal trump of worthy men and
 trim,

So Shame doth blow with strained blast the trump of shame
 on him.

Exit [with a blast of the trumpet].

Enter the KING, LORD, PRAXASPES and SISAMNES.

KING. My Iudge, since my departure hence, have you
 used iudgement right?

If faithful steward I ye finde, the same I wil requite.

SISAM. No doubt your Grace shal not once hear that I
 have done amis. 355

PRAX. I much reioyce to heare so good newes as this.

¹ I omit that.

Enter COMMONS CRY running in; speake this verse; and¹ goe out againe hastily.

COM. CRY. Alas, alas, how are the commons oppressed
 By that vile iudge, Sisamnes by name !
 I doo not know how it should be redressed ;
 To amend his life no whit he dooth frame. 360
 We are undoone and thrown out of doore,
 His damnable dealing dooth us so torment ;
 At his hand we can finde no releefe nor succour.
 God graunt him grace for to repent!

Run away crying.

KING. What doleful cries be these, my *lord*, that sound
 do in mine² eare? 365
 Intelligence if you can give, unto your king declare.
 To me it seemeth my commons al they doo lament and cry
 Out of³ Sisamnes, iudge, most cheefe, even now standing us
 by.

PRAX. Even so, O king, it seemd to me, as you rehear-
 sall made ;
 I doubt the iudge culpable be in some respect or trade. 370
 SISAM. Redouted king, have no mistrust, no whit your
 minde dismay ;
 There is not one that can me charge or ought against me
 lay.

Enter COMMONS COMPLAINT, with PROOFE and TRIALL.

COM. COMP. Commons Complaint I represent, with thrall
 of dolfull state.
 My urgent cause erected foorth my greefe for to dilate,
 Unto the king I wil prepare my miserie to tell, 375
 To have releefe of this my greefe and fettered feet so fel.
 Redoubted prince and mighty king, myself I prostrat heere !
 Vouchsafe, O king, with me to beare for this that I appeere !
 With humble sute I pardon crave of your Most Royall Grace,
 To give me leave my minde to break before you in this place. 380

¹ Haw. Haz. omit and. ³ Haz. changes to at.

² So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. my, without note.

KING. Commons Complaint, keep nothing back, fear not
thy tale to tel.

What-ere he be within this land that hath not used thee wel,
As princes mouth shal sentence give, he shal receive the
same.

Unfolde¹ the secrets of thy brest, for I extinguish blame.

COM. COMP. God preserve your Royall Grace, and send
you blisful daies,

385

That all your deeds might stil accord to give the² god[s] the
praise!

My complaint is, O mighty king, against that iudge you by,
Whose careles deeds, gain to receive, hath made the com-
mons cry :

He, by taking bribes and gifts, the poore he doth oppresse,
Taking releefe from infants yong, widows and fatherles.

390

KING. Untrustfull³ traitor and corrupt iudge, how likest
thou this complaint?

Forewarning I to thee did give, of this to make restraint.

And hast thou doon this divelish deed mine ire for to augment?
I sentence give, thou Judas judge, thou shalt thy deed repent.

SISAM. O pusant prince, it is not so! his complaint I
deny.

395

COM. COMP. If it be not so, most mighty king, in place
then let me dye!

Behold that I have brought with me both Proof and Triall
true,

To stand even heere, and sentence give what by him did
insue.

PROOF. I, Proof, do him in this appeal: he did the com-
mons wrong;

Unjustly he with them hath delt, his greedy was so strong; 400

His hart did covet in to get, he cared not which way;

The poor did leese their due and right, because they want⁴
to pay

¹ E. Alde *misprints* Unforde.

² Haz. *changes to to.*

⁴ Haz. *changes to wont.*

³ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. Untruthful, *without note.*

Unto him for bribes, indeed, — this was his wonted use.
Whereas your Grace good lawes did make, he did the same
abuse.

TRIAL. I, Triall, heer to verifie what Proof dooth now
unfolde,

405

To stand against him in his wrong as now I dare be bolde.

KING. How likest thou this, thou caitive vile? Canst
thou the same deny?

SISAM. O noble king, forgive my fact! I yeeld to thy
mercy.

KING. Complaint¹ and Proof, redresse will I all this your
misery.

Depart with speed, from whence you came, and straight com-
maund by me

410

The execution-man to come before my Grace with haste.

ALL. For to fulfil this your request no time we meane to
waste.

Exeunt they three.

KING. My lord, before my Grace goe call Otian, this
iudges sonne,

And he shal heare and also see what his father hath doon.

The father he shal suffer death, the sonne his roome succeed; 415

And, if that he no better prove, so likewise shall he speed.

PRAX. As your Grace hath commaundment given, I mean
for to fulfil.

Step aside and fetch him.

KING. Accursed iudge, couldst thou consent to do this
cursed ill?

According unto thy demaund, thou shalt, for this thy guilt,

Receive thy death before mine eyes, — thy blood it shalbe
spilt.

420

[*Enter PRAXASPES with OTIAN.*]

PRAX. Beholde, O king, Sisamnes sonne before you doth
appere.

KING. Otian, this is my minde, therefore to me come
neere :

¹ So Haw. Haz. ; E. Alde, Complaints.

Thy father heer for judgment wrong procured hath his death,
And thou, his son, shalt him succeed when he hath lost his
breth ;

And, if that thou dost once offend, as thou seest thy father
have,

425

In like wise thou shalt suffer death, — no mercy shal thee save.

OTIAN. O mighty king, vouchsafe your grace my father
to remit ;

Forgive his fault, his pardon I doo aske of you as yet.

Alas! although my father hath your princely hart offended,
Amends for misse he wil now make, and faults shalbe
amended.

430

In-stead of his requested life, pleaseth your Grace take mine!

This offer I as tender childe, so duty doth me binde.

KING. Doo not intreat my grace no more, for he shal dye
the death.

Where is the execution-man him to bereave of breath?

Enter EXECUTION.

EXEC. At hand, and if it like your Grace, my duty to
dispatch,

435

In hope that I, when deede is doone, a good reward shall
catch.

KING. Dispatch with sword this iudges life ; extinguish
fear and cares :

So doon, draw thou his cursed skin strait over both his eares.
I wil see the office done, and that before mine eyes.

EXEC. To doo the thing my king commaunds I give the
enterprise.

440

SISAM. Otian, my sonne, the king to death by law hath
me condemned,

And you in roome and office mine his Graces wil hath placed ;
Use iustice, therefore, in this case, and yeeld unto no wrong,
Lest thou do purchase the like death ere ever it be long.

OTIAN. O father deer, these words to hear, — that you¹
must dye by force,

445

¹ Haw. Haz. thou.

Bedews my cheeks with stilled teares, — the king hath no remorce.

The grevous greefes¹ and strained sighes my hart doth breake in twaine,

And I deplore, most woful childe, that I should see you slaine.

O false and fickle frowning dame, that turneth as the winde,
Is this the joy in fathers age thou me assignest to finde? 450

O dolefull day, unhappy houre, that loving childe should see
His father deer before his face thus put to death should be!

Yet, father, give me blessing thine, and let me once imbrace
Thy comely corps in foulded arms, and kisse thy ancient face!

SISAM. O childe, thou makes my² eyes to run, as rivers
doo, by streame; 455

My leave I take of thee, my sonne; beware of this my beame!

KING. Dispatch even now, thou man of death; no longer
seem to stay!

EXEC. Come, *Master* Sisamnes, come on your way!

My office I must pay; forgive therefore my deed.

SISAM. I doo forgive it thee, my freend; dispatch there-
fore with speed! 460

Smite him in the neck with a sword to signifie his death.

PRAX. Beholde, O king, how he dooth bleed, being of life
bereft!

KING. In this wise he shall not yet be left.

Pull his skin over his eares³ to make his death more vile.

A wretch he was, a cruell theefe, my commons to beguile!

Flea⁴ him with a false skin.

OTIAN. What childe⁵ is he of natures mould could bide
the same to see, — 465

His father flead in this wise? Oh, how it greeveth me!

¹ Haw. Haz. greef; E. Alde, greefes.

² Haw. Haz. mine.

³ Haw. eares; Haz. ears; E. Alde, eyes.

⁴ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. Flays, *without note.*

⁵ *Misprinted* thilde by E. Alde.

KING. Otian thou seest thy father dead, and thou art in his roome :

If thou beest proud, as he hath beene, even thereto shalt thou come.

OTIAN. O king, to me this is a glasse : with greefe in it I view

Example that unto your Grace I doo not prove untrue. 470

PRAX. Otian, convey your father hence to tomb where he shall lye.

OTIAN. And if it please your lordship, it shall be done by-and-by.

Good execution-man, for need, helpe me with him away.

EXEC. I wil fulfill, as you to me did say.

They take him away.

KING. My *lord*, now that my Grace hath seen that finisht is this deed, 475

To question mine give tentative eare, and answer make with speed :

Have not I doon a gracious deed, to redresse my *commons* woe?

PRAX. Yea, truly, if it please your Grace, you have indeed doon so.

But now, O king, in frendly wise I counsell you in this, — Certain vices for to leave that in you placed is : 480

The vice of drunkennes, Oh king, which doth you sore infect, With other great abuses, which I wish you to detect.

KING. Peace, my lord ! what needeth this ? Of this I will not heare !

To pallace now I will returne, and thereto make good cheere. God Baccus he bestows his gifts, we have good store of wine ; 485
And also that the ladies be both passing brave and fine.

But stay ! I see a lord now come, and eke a valiant knight. What news, my lord ? To see you heer my hart it doth delight.

Enter LORD and KNIGHT to meet the KING.

LORD. No news, O king ; but of duty come to wait upon your Grace.

KING. I thank you, my lord and loving knight; I pray
you with me trace. 490

My lords and knight, I pray ye tel, — I wil not be offended, —
Am I worthy of any crime once to be reprehended?

PRAX. The Persians much doo¹ praise your Grace, but
one thing discommend,

In that to wine subject you be, wherein you doo offend,
Sith that the might of wine effect doth oft subdue your brain.² 495
My counsel is, to please their harts from it you would refrain.

LORD. No, no, my lord, it is not so; for of this prince
they tel,

For vertuous prooffe and princely facts Cirus he doth excel.
By that his Grace by conquest great the Egiptians did
convince,

Of him report abroad doth passe to be a worthy prince. 500

KNIGHT. In person of Cresus I answer make, we may not
his Grace compare

In whole respect for to be like Cirus, the kings father,
In-so-much your Grace hath yet no childe as Cirus left
behinde,

Even you I meane, Cambises king, in whom I favour finde.

KING. Cresus said well in saying so; but, Praxaspes, tel
me why 505

That to my mouth in such a sort thou should avouch a lye,
Of drunkenes me thus to charge! But thou with speed shalt
see

Whether that I a sober king or els a drunkard be.

I know thou hast a blisful babe, wherein thou doost delight, —
Me to revenge of these thy words I wil go wreke this spight: 510

When I the most have tasted wine, my bow it shalbe bent, —

At hart of him even then to shoote is now my whole intent;

And, if that I his hart can hit, the king no drunkard is;

If hart of his I doo not kill, I yeeld to thee in this.

Therefore, Praxaspes, fetch to me thy youngest son with speed. 515

There is no way, I tell thee plaine, but I wil doo this deed.

¹ Haw. Haz. omit doo.

² Were this in any play but Preston's, I would emend it.

PRAX. Redoubted prince, spare my sweet childe, he is
mine only joy!

I trust your Grace to infants ¹ hart no such thing will imploy.
If that his mother hear of this, she is so nigh her flight
In clay her corps wil soone be shrinde to passe from worlds
delight. 520

KING. No more adoe! Go fetch me him; it shalbe as I
say.

And if that I doo speak the word, how dare ye once say nay?

PRAX. I wil go fetch him to your Grace; but so, I trust,
it shall not be!

KING. For feare of my displeasure great, goe fetch him
unto me.

[Exit PRAXASPES.]

Is he gone? Now, by the gods, I will doo as I say! 525
My lord, therefore fill me some wine, I hartely you pray,
For I must drinke to make my braine somewhat intoxicate,—
When that the wine is in my head, O, trimly I can prate.

LORD. Heere is the cup, with filled wine, thereof to take
repast.

KING. Give it me, to drinke it off, and see no wine be
wast. 530

Drink.

Once againe inlarge this cup, for I must tast it stil.²

Drink.

By the gods, I think of plesant wine I cannot take my fill!
Now drink is in, give me my bow and arrows from sir knight;
At hart of childe I meane to shoot, hoping to cleve it right.

KNIGHT. Behold, O king, where he doth come, his infant
yong in hand. 535

[Enter PRAXASPES, with the CHILD.]

PRAX. O mighty king, your Grace behest with sorrow I
have scand,

¹ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. infant, *without note*.

² Haz. *changes to it still taste*.

And brought my childe fro mothers knee, before you to
appeer,

And she thereof no whit doth know that he in place is heer.

KING. Set him up, my marke to be; I will shoot at his
hart.

PRAX. I beseech your Grace not so to doo! set this
pretence a-part! 540

Farewel, my deer and loving babe! come, kisse thy father
deer!

A greevous sight to me it is to see thee slaine even heere.

Is this the gaine now from the king for giving councill
good, —

Before my face with such despight to spil my sons hart-blood?

O heavy day to me this is, and mother in like case! 545

YONG CHILDE. O father, father, wipe your face,

I see the teares run from your eye:

My mother is at home sowing of a band;

Alas! deere father, why doo you cry?

KING. Before me as a mark now let him stand, 550

I wil shoot at him my minde to fulfill.

YONG CHILDE. Alas, alas! father wil you me kill?

Good Master king, doo not shoot at me, my mother loves
me best of all.

KING. I have despatched him, down he doth fall!

Shoot.

As right as a line his hart I have hit. 555

Nay, thou shalt¹ see, Praxaspes, stranger newes yet.

My knight, with speed his hart cut out and give it unto me.

KNIGHT. It shalbe doon, O mighty king, with all seleritie.

LORD. My lord Praxaspes, this had not been but your
tung must be walking;

To the king of correction you must needs be talking! 560

PRAX. No correction, my lord; but counsel for the best.

KNIGHT. Heere is the hart, according to your Graces
behest.

¹ E. Alde, Haw. shalt; Haz. shall, *without note.*

KING. Beholde, Praxaspes, thy sonnes owne hart! O,
how well the same was hit!

After this wine to doo this deed I thought it very fit.

Esteem thou maist right well therby no drunkard is the king 565

That in the midst of all his cups could doo this valiant thing.

My lord and knight, on me attend; to pallace we will goe,

And leave him heer to take his son when we are gone him
fro.

ALL. With al our harts we give consent to wait upon your
Grace. [Exeunt.]

PRAX. A wofull man, O Lord, am I, to see him in this
case! 570

My daies, I deem, desires their end; this deed wil help me
hence, —

To have the blossoms of my feeld destroyed by violence!

Enter MOTHER.

MOTHER. Alas, alas! I doo heare tell the king hath kild
my sonne!

If it be so, wo worth the deed that ever it was doone!

It is even so; my lord I see, how by him he dooth weepe. 575

What ment I, that from hands of him this childe I did not
keepe?

Alas! husband and lord, what did you meane, to fetch this
childe away?

PRAX. O lady wife, I little thought for to have seene this
day.

MOTHER. O blisful babe, O joy of womb, harts comfort
and delight!

For councel given unto the king is this thy just requite? 580

O hevy day and dolefull time, these mourning tunes to make!

With blubred eies, into mine¹ armes from earth I wil thee
take,

And wrap thee in mine apron white! — But, oh my heavy
hart,

The spiteful pangs that it sustains wold make it in two to part,

¹ E. Alde, Haw. mine; Haz. my.

Some good deeds he will doo, though they be but few : 615
 The like things this tirant Cambises doth shew.
 No goodnes from him to none is exhibited,
 But still malediction¹ abroad is distributed ;
 And yet ye shall see in the rest of his race
 What infamy he will work against his owne grace. 620
 Whist! no more words! heere comes the kings brother.

Enter LORD SMIRDIS, with ATTENDANCE and DILIGENCE.

SMIR. The kings brother by birth am I, issued from Cyrus
 loynes :

A greefe to me it is to heare of this the king repines.
 I like not well of those his deeds that he dooth still frequent ;
 I wish to God that other waies his minde he could content. 625
 Yong I am, and next to him ; no moe of us there be :
 I would be glad a quiet realme in this his reign to see.

ATT. My lord, your good a[nd] willing hart the gods wil
 recompence,

In that your minde so pensive is for those his great offence.
 My lord, his Grace shall have a time to paire and to amend. 630
 Happy is he that can escape and not his Grace offend.

DIL. If that wicked vice he could refraine, from wasting
 wine forbere,

A moderate life he would frequent, amending this² his square.

AMB. My lord, and if your Honor it shall please,
 I can informe you what is best for your ease : 635
 Let him alone, of his deeds doo not talke,
 Then by his side ye may quietly walke ;
 After his death you shalbe king,
 Then may you reforme eche kinde of thing ;
 In the meane-time live quietly, doo not with him deale ; 640
 So shall it redound much to your weale.

SMIR. Thou saist true, my freend ; that is the best ;
 I do not know whether he love me or doo me detest.

ATT. Lea[r]ne from his company all that you may.
 I, faithfull Attendance, wil your Honor obay ; 645

¹ E. Alde, Haw. malediction ; Haz. maledictions.

² Kittredge *conjectures* thus.

If against your Honor he take any ire,
His Grace is as like to kindle his fire
To your Honors destruction as otherwise.

DIL. Therefore, my lord, take good advise,
And I, Diligence, your case wil so tender 650
That to his Grace your Honor shalbe none offender.

SMIR. I thank you both, intire freends ; with my Honor
stil remaine.

AMB. Beholde where the king doth come with his train!

Enter KING, and a¹ LORD.

KING. O lording deer and brother mine, I joy your state
to see,
Surmising much what is the cause you absent thus from me. 655

SMIR. Pleaseth your Grace, no absence I, but redy to
fulfill,
At all assaies, my prince and king, in that your Grace me
will.

What I can doo in true defence to you, my prince, aright,
In readines I alwaies am to offer, foorth my might.

KING. And I the like to you againe doo heer avouch
the same. 660

ALL. For this your good agreement heer, now praised be
Gods name!

AMB. [*to SMIRDIS*] But heare ye, noble prince ; harke in
your eare :
It is best to doo as I did declare.

KING. My lord and brother Smirdis, now this is my minde
and will :
That you to court of mine returne, and there to tary still 665
Till my returne within short space your Honor for to greet.

SMIR. At your behest so wil I doo till time againe we
meet.
My leave I take from you, O king ; even now I doo departe.

Exeunt SMIRDIS, ATTENDANCE and DILIGENCE.

KING. Farwel, lord and brother mine ! farwel with all my
hart !

¹ Haw. Haz. one : E. Alde, a.

My lord, my brother Smerdis is of youth and manly plight, 670
And in his sweet and pleasant face my hart doth take
delight.

LORD. Yea, noble prince, if that your Grace before his
Honor dye,
He wil succede, a vertuous king, and rule with equitie.

KING. As you have said, my lord, he is cheefe heire next
my Grace ;
And, if I dye to-morrow, next he shall succeed my place. 675

AMB. And if it please your Grace, O king, I heard him
say :
For your death unto the god[s] day and night he did pray ;
He would live so vertuously and get him such a praise
That Fame by trump his due deserts in¹ honor should up-
raise.

He said your Grace deserved had the cursing of all men, 680
That ye should never after him get any praise againe.

KING. Did he speake thus of my Grace, in such despight-
ful wise?

Or els doost thou presume to fill my princely eares with lyes?

LORD. I cannot think it in my hart that he would report
so.

KING. How saist thou? speake the truth : was it so or
no? 685

AMB. I thinke so, if it please your Grace, but I cannot
tell.

KING. Thou plaist with both hands, now I perceiue well !
But, for to put al doubts aside and to make him leese his
hope,
He shall dye by dint² of sword or els by choking rope.
Shall he succeed when I am gone, to have more praise then I? 690
Were he father, as brother, mine, I swere that he shal dye.
To pallaice mine I will therefore, his death for to pursue.

Exit.

AMB. Are ye gone? Straightway I will follow you.
How like ye now, my maisters? Dooth not this geere cotten?

¹ Haw. Haz. his.

² Haw. Haz. dent.

The provérbe olde is verified : soone ripe, and soone rotten! 695
 He wil not be quiet til his brother be¹ kild,
 His delight is wholly to have his blood spild.
 Mary, sir, I tolde him a notable lye ;
 If it were to doo againe,² I durst not doo it, I !
 Mary, when I had doon, to it I durst not stand ; 700
 Thereby ye may perceive I use to play with eche hand.
 But how now, cosin Cutpursse, with whom play you?
 Take heed, for his hand is groping even now !
 Cosin, take heed, if you doo secretly grope ;
 If ye be taken, cosin, ye must looke through a rope. 705

*Exit.**Enter LORD SMIRDIS alone.*

SMIR. I am wandring alone, here and there to walke ;
 The Court is so unquiet, in it I take no joy.
 Solitary to my-selfe now I may talke.
 If I could rule, I wist what to say.

Enter CRUELTY and MURDER with bloody hands.

CRUEL. My coequall partner, Murder, come away ; 710
 From me long thou maist not stay.

MURD. Yes, from thee I may stay, but not thou from me :
 Therefore I have a prerogative above thee.

CRUEL. But in this case we must together abide.
 Come, come! Lord Smirdis I have spide : 715
 Lay hands on him with all festination,
 That on him we may worke our indignation !

[They seize him.]

SMIR. How now, my freends? what have you to doo
 with me?

MURD. King Cambises hath sent us unto thee,
 Commaunding us straightly, without mercy or favour, 720
 Upon thee to bestow our behaviour,
 With cruelty to murder you and make you away.

*Strike him in divers places.*¹ Haz. he, probably a misprint.² Before I Haw. Haz. have man, which is not in E. Alde.

SMIR. Yet pardon me, I hartely you pray!
 Consider, the king is a tirant tirannious,
 And all his dooings be damnable and parnitious: 725
 Favour me therfore; I did him never offend.

A little bladder of vineger prickt.¹

CRUEL. No favour at all; your life is at an end.
 Even now I strike, his body to wound, —
 Beholde, now his blood springs out on the ground!
 MURD. Now he is dead, let us present him to the king. 730
 CRUEL. Lay to your hand, away him to bring.

Exeunt.

Enter AMBIDEXTER.

AMB. O the passion of God, yonder is a hevy Court:
 Some weepes, some wailes, and some make great sport.
 Lord Smirdis by Cruelty and Murder is slaine;
 But, Jesus! for want of him how some doo complaine! 735
 If I should have had a thousand pound, I could not forbear
 weeping.

Now ~~Jesus~~ have his blessed soule in keeping!
 Ah good Lord! to think on him, how it dooth me greeve!
 I cannot forbear weeping, ye may me beleeve. *Weep.*
 O my hart! how my pulses doo beate, 740
 With sorrowfull lamentations I am in such a heate!
 Ah, my hart, how for him it doth sorrow!
 Nay, I have done, in faith, now, and God give ye² good
 morrow!

Ha, ha! Weep? Nay, laugh, with both³ hands to play!
 The king through his cruelty hath made him away, — 745
 But hath not he wrought a most wicked deed,
 Because king after him he should not proceed,
 His owne naturall brother, and having no more,
 To procure his death by violence sore?
 In sight, because his brother should never be king, 750
 His hart, being wicked, consented to this thing.

¹ Haz. *puts this stage-direction after l. 729.*

² Haw. Haz. you; so often.

³ *Misprinted both in E. Alde.*

Now hath he no more brothers nor kinred alive.
If the king use this geere still, he cannot long thrive.

Enter HOB and LOB.

HOB. Gods hat, neighbour,¹ come away! its time to
market to goe!

LOB. Gods vast, naybor, zay ye zo? 755
The clock hath stricken vive, ich think by Laken!
Bum vay, vrom sleep cham not very well waken!
But, naybor Hob, naybor Hob, what have ye to zel?

HOB. Bum troth, naybor Lob, to you I chil tel:
Chave two goslings and a chine of good² porke, — 760
There is no vatter between this and Yorke, —
Chave a pot of strawberies and a calves head, —
A zennight zince, to-morrow, it hath been dead.

LOB. Chave a score of egges and of butter a pound;
Yesterday a nest of goodly yong rabbits I vound. 765
Chave vorty things mo, of more and of lesse, —
My brain is not very good them to expresse.
But, Gods hat, naybor, wotst what?

HOB. No, not wel, naybor; whats that?

LOB. Bum vay, naybor, maister king is a zhrode lad! 770
Zo God help me, and holidam, I think the vool be mad!
Zome zay he deale cruelly: his brother he did kill,
And also a goodly yung lads hart-blood he did spill.

HOB. Vorbod of God, naybor! has he plaid zuch a volish
deed?

AMB. Goodman Hob and goodman Lob, God be your
speed! 775

As you two towards market doo³ walke,
Of the kings cruelty I did heare you talke;
I insure you he is a king most vile and parnitious, —
His dooings and life are odious and vicious.

LOB. It were a good deed zome-body would break his
head. 780

¹ Haz. neighbours.

³ Haz. changes to did.

² E. Allde omits good.

HOB. Bum vay, naybor Lob, I chuld he were dead!

AMB. So would I, Lob and Hob, with all my hart!

[*Aside*]¹ Now with both hands will you see me play my parte. —

A, ye whorson traitorly knaves,

Hob and Lob, out upon you, slaves! 785

LOB. And thou calst me knave, thou art another!

My name is Lob, and Hob my next naybor.

AMB. Hob and Lob! a, ye cuntry patches!

A, ye fooles, ye have made wrong matches!

Ye have spoken treason against the kings Grace, — 790

For it I will accuse ye before his face;

Then for the same ye shalbe martered, —

At the least ye shalbe hangd, drawne and quartered.

HOB. O gentleman, ye shal have two peare-pyes, and tel not of me!

LOB. By God, a vat gooce chil give thee: 795

I think no hurt, by my vathers soule I swear!

HOB. Chave lived wel all my life-time, my naybors among;

And now chuld be loth to come to zuch wrong, —

To be hanged and quartered the greefe would be great!

LOB. A foule evil on thee, Hob! Who bid thee on it treat? 800

Vor it was thou that first did him name.

HOB. Thou lyst like a varlet and thou zaist the zame!

It was zuch a foolish Lob as thou.

LOB. Speak many words, and, by Cods nailes I vow,

Upon thy pate my staffe I will lay! 805

AMB. [*aside*]¹ By the masse, I will cause them to make a fray. —

Yea, Lob, thou saist true: all came through him.

LOB. Bum vay, thou Hob,² a little would make me thee³ trim!

Give thee a zwap⁴ on thy nose till thy hart ake!

¹ *Supplied by Haz., without note.*

² *Misprinted Hod in E. Alde.*

³ All edd. ye.

⁴ Haw. zawp.

HOB. If thou darest, doo it! Els, man, cry "creke!" 810
 I trust, before thou hurt me,
 With my staffe chil make a Lob of thee!

*Heer let them fight with their staves, not come neer an-other by three or
 foure yardes; the VICE set them on as hard as he can; one of their wives
 come out, and all to-beat the VICE; he run away.*

*Enter MARIAN-MAY-BE-GOOD, HOB'S wife, running in with a broome, and
 parte them.*

MARIAN. O the body of me, husband Hob, what meane
 ye to fight?
 For the passion of God, no more blowes smite!
 Neighbours and freends so long, and now to fall out? 815
 What! in your age to seeme so stout?
 If I had not parted ye, one had kild another.

LOB. I had not cared, I swere by Gods Mother!

MARIAN. Shake hands againe at the request of me;
 As ye have been freends, so freends still be. 820

HOB. Bum troth, cham content and zaist word, neighbour
 Lob.

LOB. I am content; agreed, neighbor Hob!

Shake hands and laugh hartely one at another.

MARIAN. So, get you to market; no longer stay.
 And with yonder knave let me make a fray.

HOB. Content, wife Marian, chill doo as thou doost say; 825
 But busse me, ich pray thee, at going away!

Exeunt HOB, LOB.

MARIAN. Thou whorson knave, and prickeard boy, why
 didst thou let them fight?
 If one had kild another heer, couldst thou their deaths re-
 quite?
 It beares a signe by this thy deed a cowardly knave thou art,
 Els wouldst thou draw that weapon thine, like a man¹ them
 to parte. 830

AMB. What, Marian-may-be good, are you come prattling?

¹ E. Alide, knaue.

Ye may hap get a box on the eare with your talking.
If they had kild one another, I had not cared a pease.

Heer let her swinge him in¹ her broome; she gets him down, and he her down,—thus one on the top of another make pastime.

MARIAN. A, villain, my-selfe on thee I must ease!
Give me a box on the eare? that will I try. 835
Who shalbe maister, thou shalt see by-and-by!

AMB. O, no more, no more, I beseech you hartily!
Even now I yeeld, and give you the maistry.

Run his way out while she is down.

MARIAN. A, thou² knave, doost thou throw me down and
run thy³ way?
If he were heere againe, oh, how I would him pay! 840
I will after him; and, if I can him meet,
With these my nailes his face I wil greet. [Exit.]

Enter VENUS leading out her sonne, CUPID, blinde: he must have a bow and two shafts, one headed with golde and th' other headed with lead.

VENUS. Come foorth, my sonne, unto my words attentive
eares resigne;
What I pretend, see you frequent, to force this game of mine.
The king a kinswoman hath, adorn'd with beauty store; 845
And I wish that Dianas gifts they twain shal keep no more,
But use my silver sugred game their ioyes for to augment.
When I doo speak, to wound his hart, Cupid my son, consent!
And shoot at him the shaft of love, that beares the head of
golde,
To wound his hart in lovers wise, his greefe for to unfolde. 850
Though kin she be unto his Grace, that nature me expell,
Against the course thereof he may in my game please me
wel.
Wherfore, my sonne, doo not forget; forthwith pursue the
deed!

CUPID. Mother, I meane for to obey as you have whole
decreed;

¹ Haz. *changes to with.*

² Haz. *omits thou.*

³ E. *Allde, the.*

But you must tel me, mother deere, when I shal arrow draw, 855
 Els your request to be attaind wil not be worth a straw ;
 I am blinde and cannot see, but stil doo shoot by gesse, —
 The poets wel, in places store, of my might doo expresse.

VENUS. Cupid my son, when time shall serve that thou
 shalt do this deed,
 Then warning I to thee wil give ; but see thou shoot with
 speed. 860

Enter a LORD, a LADY, and a WAITING-MAID.¹

LORD. Lady deer, to king a-kin, forthwith let us proceed
 To trace abroad the beauty feelds, as erst we had decreed.
 The blowing buds, whose savery sents our sence wil much
 delight ;
 The sweet smel of musk white-rose to please the appetite ;
 The chirping birds, whose pleasant tunes therein shal hear²
 record, 865
 That our great joy we shall it finde in feeld to walk abroad ;
 On lute and cittern there to play, a heavenly harmony :
 Our eares shall heare, hart to content, our sports to beautify.³

LADY. Unto your words, most comely lord, my-selfe sub-
 mit doo I ;
 To trace with you in feeld so green I meane not to deny. 870

Heere trace up and downe playing.

MAID. And I, your waiting-maid, at hand with diligence
 will be,
 For to fulfil with hart and hand, when you shal commaund
 me.

Enter KING, LORD, and KNIGHT.

KING. Come on, my lord and knight ; abroad our mirth
 let us imploy ;
 Since he is dead, this hart of mine in corps I feel it joy.
 Should brother mine have raigned king when I had yeelded
 breth? 875

¹ So E. Alde.

² *Qy.* bear.

³ So E. Alde ; Haz. *prints* beautify, but says, " Old copy, beautie " :
 beautie is the reading of Haw. ; whether it be that of J. Alde I cannot say.

A thousand brothers I rather had to put them all to death.
But, oh beholde, where I doo¹ see a lord and lady faire!
For beauty she most worthy is to sit in princes chaire.

VENUS. Shoot forth, my son; now is the time that thou
must wound his hart.

CUPID. Content you, mother; I will doo my parte. 880

Shoote there, and goe out VENUS and CUPID.

KING. Of truth, my lord, in eye of mine all ladies she doth
excell.

Can none reporte what dame she is, and to my Grace it tell?

LORD. Redouted prince, pleaseth your Grace, to you she
is a-kin,

Cosin-iarmin nigh of birth, by mothers side come in.

KNIGHT. And that her waiting-maiden is, attending her
upon. 885

He is a lord of princes court, and wil be there anon.

They sport themselves in pleasant feeld, to former used use.

KING. My lord and knight, of truth I speak: my hart it
cannot chuse

But with my lady I must speake and so expresse my minde.

My lord and ladyes, walking there, if you wil favour finde, 890

Present your-selves unto my Grace, and by my side come
stand.

FIRST LORD. We wil fulfil, most mighty king, as your
Grace doth commaund.

KING. Lady deere, intelligence my Grace hath got of late,
You issued out of mothers stocke and kin unto my state.

According to rule of birth you are cosin-jarmin mine; 895

Yet do I wish that farther of this kinred I could finde,

For Cupid he, that eylesse boy, my hart hath so enflamed

With beauty you me to content the like cannot be named;

For, since I entred in this place and on you fixt mine eyes,

Most burning fits about my hart in ample wise did rise. 900

The heat of them such force doth yeeld, my corps they
scorch, alas!

¹ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. do I.

And burns the same with wasting heat, as Titan doth the
gras.

And, sith this heat is kindled so and fresh in hart of me,
There is no way but of the same the quencher you must be.
My meaning is that beauty yours my hart with love doth
wound ;

905

To give me love minde to content, my hart hath you out-
found ;

And you are she must be my wife, els shall I end my daies.
Consent to this, and be my queen, to weare the crown with
praise!

LADY. If it please your Grace, O mighty king, you shall
not this request ;

It is a thing that Natures course doth utterly detest, 910
And high it would the god[s] displease, — of all that is the
woorst.

To graunt your Grace to marry so, it is not that I durst.
Yet humble thanks I render now unto you, mighty king,
That you vouchsafe to great estate so gladly would me bring.
Were it not it were offence, I would it not deny, 915
But such great honor to atchive my hart I would apply.

Therefore, O king, with humble hart in this I pardon crave ;
My answer is : in this request your minde ye may not have.

KING. May I not? nay, then, I will, by all the gods I
vow!

And I will mary thee as wife, — this is mine answere now. 920
Who dare say nay what I pretend, who dare the same with-
stand,

Shal lose his head and have reporte as traitor through my
land.

There is no nay ; I wil you have, and you my queene shalbe.

LADY. Then, mighty king, I crave your Grace to heare
the words of me :

Your councel take of lordings wit, the lawes aright peruse ; 925
If I with safe may graunt this deed, I will it not refuse.

KING. No, no ! what I have said to you, I meane to have
it so ;

For counsel theirs I mean not, I, in this respect to goe.
 But to my pallaice let us goe, the mariage to prepare ;
 For, to avoid my wil in this, I can it not forbear. 930

LADY. O God, forgive me, if I doo amisse !
 The king by compulsion inforceth me this.

MAID. Unto the the gods for your estate I will not cease
 to pray,
 That you may be a happy queen and see most joyfull day.

KING. Come on, my lords, with gladsome harts let us re-
 ioyce with glee ! 935

Your musick shew to joy this deed at the request of me !

BOTH. For to obey your Gracês words our Honors doo
 agree. *Exeunt.*

Enter AMBIDEXTER.

AMB. O the passion of me! mary, as ye say, yonder is a
 royal court ;

There is triumphing and sporte upon sporte, —
 Such loyall lords, with such lordly exercise, 940

Frequenting such pastime as they can devise,
 Running at tilt, iusting, with running at the ring,
 Masking and mumming, with eche kinde of thing, —
 Such daunsing, such singing, with musicall¹ harmony,
 Beleeve me, I was loth to absent their company. 945

But wil you beleeve? Jesu, what hast they made till they
 were maried !

Not for a milion of pounds one day longer they would have
 tared !

Oh ! there was a banquet royall and superexcellent, —
 Thousands and thousands at that banquet was spent.
 I muse of nothing but how they can be maried so soone ; 950
 I care not if I be maried before to-morrow at noone,
 If mariage be a thing that so may be had.

How say you, maid? to marry me wil ye be glad?
 Out of doubt, I beleeve it is some excellent treasure, —
 Els to the same belongs abundant pleasure. 955

Yet with mine eares I have heard some say :

¹ *Misprinted* muicall in E. Alde.

“That ever I was married, now cursed be the day!”
 Those be they [that]¹ with curst wives be matched.
 That husband for haukes met of them is up-snatched,
 Head broke with a bedstaffe, face all to-be-scratched ;—² 960
 “Knaue!” “slave!” and “villain!” a coyldc cote now and
 than, —

When the wife hath given it,³ she wil say, “Alas, goodman!”
 Such were better unmarried, my maisters, I trow,
 Then all their life after be matched with a shrow.

Enter PREPARATION.

PREP. With speed I am sent all things to prepare, 965
 My message to doe as the king did declare.
 His Grace doth meane a banquet to make,
 Meaning in this place repast for to take.
 Wel, the cloth shalbe laid, and all things in redines,
 To court to return, when doon is my busines. 970

AMB. A proper man and also a⁴ fit
 For the kings estate to prepare a banquet!

PREP. What, Ambidexter? Thou art not unknowen!
 A mischeefe on all good faces, so that I curse not mine owne!
 Now, in the knaves name, shake hands with me. 975

AMB. Wel said, goodman pouchmouth; your reverence I
 see.
 I will teach ye, if your manners no better be!
 A, ye slave, the king doth me a gentleman allow;
 Therefore I looke that to me ye should⁵ bow.

Fight.
 PREP. Good Maister Ambidexter, pardon my behaviour; 980
 For this your deed⁶ you are a knave for your labour!

AMB. Why, ye stale counterly villain, nothing but knave?

Fight.
 PREP. I am sorry your maistership offended I have;
 Shake hands, that betweene us agreement may be.

¹ E. Alde *omits* that.

⁵ Haw. Haz. shall.

² So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. be all-to scratched.

³ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. in.

⁴ E. Alde *omits* a.

⁶ E. Alde, deeds.

I was over-shot with my-selfe, I doo see. 985
 Let me have your helpe this furniture to provide
 The king from this place wil not long abide.

Set the fruit on the boord.

AMB. Content: it is the thing that I would wish;
 I my-selfe wil goe fetch one¹ dish.

Let the VICE fetch² a dish of nuts and let them fall in the bringing of them in.

PREP. Clenly, Maister Ambidexter; for faire on the
 ground they lye. 990

AMB. I will have them up againe by-and-by.

PREP. To see all in redines I will put you in trust;
 There is no nay, to the court needs I must.

Exit PREPARATION.

AMB. Have ye no doubt, sir, but all shalbe wel.
 Mary, sir, as you say, this geer dooth excell! 995

All things is in a readines, when they come hither,—
 The kings Grace and the queene both together.

I beseech ye, my maisters, tell me, is it not best,
 That I be so bolde as to bid a guest?

He is as honest a man as ever spurd cow,— 1000

My cosin Cutpursse, I meane; I beseech ye, judge you.
 Beleeve me, cosin, if to be the kings guest ye could be taken,
 I trust that offer will never³ be forsaken.

But, cosin, because to that office ye are not like to come,
 Frequent your exercises, a horne on your thum, 1005

A quick eye, a sharpe knife, at hand a receiver;
 But then take heed, cosin, ye be a clenly convayour.

Content your-selfe, cosin; for this banquet you are unfit,
 When such as I at the same am unworthy⁴ to sit.

Enter KING, QUEENE, and his traine.⁵

KING. My queen and lords, to take repast, let us attempt
 the same; 1010

¹ Haw. Haz. on.

⁴ Haw. Haz. am not worthy.

² E. Allde, fetch; Haw. fet; Haz. set.

³ Haw. Haz. would not.

⁵ Haw. Haz. Queen, Lords, &c.

Heer is the place ; delay no time, but to our purpose frame.

QUEENE. With willing harts your whole behest we minde
for to obay.

ALL. And we, the rest of princes traine, will doo as you
doo say.

Sit at the banquet.

KING. Me think mine eares doth wish the sound of
musicks harmony ;

Heer, for to play before my Grace, in place I would them
spy.

1015

Play at the banquet.

AMB. They be at hand, sir, with sticke and fiddle ;
They can play a new daunce, called Hey-diddle-diddle.

KING. My queene, perpend ; what I pronounce, I wil
not violate,
But one thing which my hart makes glad I minde to
explicate :

You know in court uptrained is a lyon very yong ;
Of one litter two whelps beside, as yet not very strong ;
I did request one whelpe to see and this young lyon fight ;
But lion did the whelpe convince by strength of force and
might.

1020

His brother whelpe, perceiving that the lion was too good,
And he by force was like to see the other whelp his blood,
With force to lyon he did run, his brother for to helpe, —
A wonder great it was to see that freendship in a whelpe ! —
So then the whelps between them both the lyon did convince,
Which thing to see before mine eyes did glad the hart of
prince.

1025

At this tale tolde, let the QUEENE weep.

QUEENE. These words to heare makes stilling teares
issue from christall eyes.

1030

KING. What, doost thou meane, my spouse, to weep for
losse of any prise?

QUEENE. No, no, O king, but as you see freendship in
brothers whelp,

When one was like to have repulse, the other yeelded helpe.
 And was this favour shewd in dogs, to shame of royall king?
 Alack, I wish these eares of mine had not once heard this
 thing!

1035

Even so should you, O mighty king, to brother beene a stay,
 And not, without offence to you, in such wise him to slay.
 In all assaies it was your part his cause to have defended,
 And, who-so-ever had him misused, to have them repre-
 hended.

But faithfull love was more in dog then it was in your
 Grace.

1040

KING. O cursed caitive vicious and vile, I hate thee in
 this place!

This banquet [now] is at an end; take all these things
 away.

Before my face thou shalt repent the words that thou dost
 say.

O wretch most vile, didst thou the cause of brother mine so
 tender

The losse of him should greeve thy hart, — he being none
 offender?

1045

It did me good his death to have, so will it to have thine;
 What frendship he had at my hands, the same even thou
 shalt finde.

I give consent, and make a-vow, that thou shalt dye the
 death;

By Cruels sword and Murder fel even thou shalt lose thy¹
 breth.

Ambidexter, see with speed to Cruelty ye goe;
 Cause him hither to approche, Murder with him also.

1050

AMB. I am redy for to fulfil,
 If that it be your Graces will.²

KING. Then nought oblight my message given; absent
 thy-selfe away.

AMB. Then in this place I will no longer stay.

1055

¹ Haw. Haz. the.

² *These two lines as one in all the editions.*

[*Aside*]¹ If that I durst, I would mourne your case ;
But, 'alas! I dare not, for feare of his Grace.

Exit AMBIDEXTER.

KING. Thou cursed Iill, by all the gods I take an othe
and swere,
That flesh of thine these hands of mine in peeces small could
tere ;
But thou shalt dye by dent of sword : there is no freend ne
fee 1060

Shall finde remorse at princes hand to save the life of thee.

QUEENE. O mighty king *and* husband mine, vouchsafe
to heare me speak,
And licence give to spouse of thine her patient minde to
breake!

For tender love unto your Grace my words I did so frame ;
For pure love doth hart of king me violate and blame. 1065
And to your Grace is this offence that I should purchase
death?

Then cursed time that I was queene, to shorten this my
breth!

Your Grace doth know, by mariage true I am your wife and
spouse,

And one to save anothers helth at trothplight made our
vowes ;

Therefore, O king, let loving queen at thy hand finde
remorse, 1070

Let pitie be a meane to quench that cruell raging force,
And pardon, plight from princes mouth, yeeld grace unto
your queen,

That amity with faithfull zeal may ever be us between!

KING. A, caitive vile, to pitie thee my hart it is not bent,
Ne yet to pardon your offence it is not mine intent. 1075

FIRST LORD. Our mighty prince, with humble sute of
your Grace this² I crave,

¹ Haz. *supplies aside at the beginning of the preceding line, but that line may have been a reply to the king.*

² So E. Alde, Haw. ; Haz. of you this grace.

That this request it may take place, your favour for to have.
 Let mercy yet abundantly the life of queen preserve,
 Sith she in¹ most obedient wise² your Graces will doth
 serve.

As yet your Grace but while with her hath had cohabitation, 1080
 And sure this is no desert why to yeeld her indignation.
 Therefore, O king, her life prolong, to joy her daies in blisse!

SECOND LORD. Your Grace shal win immortall fame in
 graunting unto this.

She is a queene whose goodly hue excelles the royall rose,
 For beauty bright Dame Nature she a large gift did
 dispose. 1085

For comelines who may compare? Of all she beares the bell.
 This should give cause to move your Grace to love her very
 wel.

Her silver brest³ in those your armes to sing the songs of
 love,—

Fine qualities most excellent to be in her you prove ;
 A precious pearle of prise to prince, a iewell passing all. 1090
 Therefore, O king, to beg remorse on both my knees I fall ;
 To graunt her grace to have her life, with hart I doo desire.

KING. You villains twain, with raging force ye set my
 hart on fire!

If I consent that she shall dye, how dare ye crave her life?
 You two to aske this at my hand dooth much inlarge my
 strife. 1095

Were it not for shame, you two should dye, that for her life
 do sue!

But favour mine from you is gone ; my lords, I tell you true.
 I sent for Cruelty of late ; if he would come away,
 I would commit her to his hands his cruell part to play.
 Even now I see where he dooth come ; it dooth my hart
 delight. 1100

¹ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. is.

² So Haw.; Haz. wife; *my collator makes no remark as to the reading of E. Alde.*

³ Haz. breasts; E. Alde, Haw, brest.

Enter CRUELTY and MURDER.

CRUEL. Come, Murder, come; let us goe forth with
might;

Once againe the kings commaundement we must fulfill.

MURD. I am contented¹ to doo it with a good will.

KING. Murder and Cruelty, for both of you I sent,
With all festination your offices to frequent. 1105

Lay holde on the queene; take her to your power,
And make her away within this houre!

Spare for no feare, I doo you full permit.

So I from this place doo meane for to flit.

BOTH. With couragious harts, O king, we will obay. 1110

KING. Then come, my lords, let us departe away.

BOTH THE LORDS. With hevy harts we will doo all your
Grace dooth say. *Exeunt KING and LORDS.*

CRUEL. Come, lady and queene, now are you in our
handling;

In faith, with you we will use no dandling.

MURD. With all expedition I, Murder, will take place; 1115
Though thou be a queene, ye be under my grace.

QUEENE. With patience I will you both obay.²

CRUEL. No more woords, but goe with us away!²

QUEENE. Yet, before I dye, some psalme to God let me
sing.

BOTH. We be content to permit you that thing. 1120

QUEENE. [*sings*] Farwell, you ladies of the court,

With all your masking hue!

I doo forsake these brodered gardes

And all the fashions new,

The court and all the courtly train 1125

Wherin I had delight;

I banished am from happy sporte,

And all by spitefull spite;

Yet with a ioyfull hart to God

A psalme I meane to sing, 1130

¹ *Misprinted* contended in E. Alde.

² In E. Alde these two words are interchanged.

Forgiving all [men] and the king
Of eche kinde of thing.

Sing and exeunt.

Enter AMBIDEXTER weeping.

AMB. A, a, a, a! I cannot chuse but weepe for the queene! *Summary of plot*
Nothing but mourning now at the court there is seene.
Oh, oh, my hart, my hart! O, my bum will break! 1135
Very greefe so torments me that scarce I can speake.
Who could but weep for the losse of such a lady?
That cannot I doo, I sweare by mine honestie.
But, Lord! so the ladies mourne, crying "Alack!"
Nothing is worne now but onely black: 1140
I beleeve all [the]¹ cloth in Watling Street to make gowns
would not serve, —
If I make a lye, the devill let ye² starve!
All ladyes mourne, both yong and olde;
There is not one that weareth a points woorth of golde.
There is a sorte for feare for³ the king doo pray 1145
That would have him dead, by the masse, I dare say.
What a king was he that hath used such tyranny!
He was akin to Bishop Bonner, I think verily!
For both their delights was to shed blood,
But never intended to doo any good. 1150
Cambises put a iudge to death, — that was a good deed, —
But to kill the yong childe was worse to proceed,
To murder his brother and then his owne wife, —
So help me God and holidom, it is pitie of his life!
Heare ye? I will lay twenty thousand pound 1155
That the king himselfe dooth dye by some wound.
He hath shed so much blood that his will be shed;
If it come so⁴ to passe, in faith, then is he sped.

Enter the KING, without a gowne, a sword thrust up into his side, bleeding.

KING. Out! alas! what shal I doo? my life is finished!
Wounded I am by sodain chaunce, my blood is minished. 1160

¹ *Supplied by Haz.*

³ *So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. of.*

² *So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. me.*

⁴ *E. Alde omits so.*

Gogs hart, what meanes might I make, my life to preserve?
Is there nought to be my helpe? nor is there nought to
serve?

Out upon the court and lords that there remaine!
To help my greefe in this my case wil none of them take
paine?

Who but I in such a wise his deaths wound could have
got? 1165

As I on horse back up did leap, my sword from scabard
shot,

And ran¹ me thus into the side, as you right well may see, —
A marvels chaunce unfortunate that in this wise should be!
I feele my-selfe a-dying now, of life bereft am I,
And Death hath caught me with his dart, for want of blood
I spy. 1170

Thus gasping heer on ground I lye; for nothing I doo
care;

A just reward for my misdeeds my death doth plaine declare.

Heere let him quake and stir.

AMB. How now, noble king? pluck up your hart!
What, will you dye, and from us depart?
Speake to me and ye be alive! 1175
He cannot speak. But beholde, now with Death he doth
strive.

Alas, good king! alas, he is gone!
The devill take me if for him I make any mone.
I did prognosticate of his end, by the masse;
Like as I did say, so is it come to passe! 1180
I wil be gone; if I should be found heere,
That I should kill him it would appeer.
For feare with his death they doo me charge,
Farwell, my maisters, I will goe take barge;
I meane to be packing; now is the tide; 1185
Farwell, my maisters, I will no longer abide!

haw Exit AMBIDEXTER.

¹ So E. Alde, Haw.; Haz. run.

Enter three LORDS.

FIRST LORD. Beholde, my lords, it is even so as he to
us did tell :

His Grace is dead, upon the ground, by dint¹ of sword most
fel.

SECOND LORD. As he in saddle would have leapt, his
sword from sheath did goe,²

Goring him up into the side, — his life was ended so. 1190

THIRD LORD. His blood so fast did issue out that nought
could him prolong ;

Yet, before he yeilded up the ghost, his hart was very
strong.

FIRST LORD. A just reward for his misdeeds the God
above hath wrought,

For certainly the life he led was to be counted nought.

SECOND LORD. Yet a princely buriall he shall have,
according his estate ; 1195

And more of him heere at this³ time we have not to dilate.

THIRD LORD. My lords, let us take him up, to carry him
away !

BOTH. Content we are with one accord to doo as you
doo say.

Exeunt all.

EPILOGUE.⁴

Right gentle audience, heere have you perused

The tragicall history of this wicked king.

According to our duty, we have not refused,

But to our best intent exprest everything.

We trust none is offended for this our dooing ;

Our author craves likewise, if he have squared amisse,

By gentle admonition to know where the fault is. 1205

His good will shall not be neglected to amend the same.

Praying all to beare, therefore, with this³ simple deed

¹ Haw. Haz. dent.

³ Haw. Haz. his.

² *Misprinted gee in E, Alde.*

⁴ Haw. Haz. Epilogus.

Untill the time serve a better he may frame, —
 Thus yeelding you thanks, to end we decreed
 That you so gently have suffered us to proceed,
 In such patient wise as to heare and see, —
 We can but thank ye therfore, we can doo no more, we ! — 1212

As duty bindes us, for our noble Queene let us pray,
 And for her Honorable Councel, the truth that they may
 use,

To practice iustice and defend her Grace eche day ;
 To maintain Gods woord they may not refuse,
 To correct all those that would her Grace *and* Graces
 lawes abuse ;

Beseeching God over us she may raigne long,
 To be guided by truth and defended from wrong. 1219

“ Amen,” quod Thomas Preston.

*Imprinted at London
 by Edward Allde.*

Presented on decorated scaffold in
Queen's Hall, Westminster.

Thomas Norton and Thomas
Sackville, did much toward
preparing Eng. language for
future use. ~~note in Eng~~
The Tragidie of Ferrex
blanks verse - this is first
and Porrex,
play in blanks verse.

set forth without addition or alte-
ration but altogether as the same was shewed
on stage before the Queenes Maiestie,
about nine yeares past, *vz.*, the
xviij day of Ianuarie 1561.
by the Gentlemen of the
Inner Temple.

Saw students of inner Temple.
S. wrote "mirror for Magistrate"
non-dramatic. Opens something

Seen and allowed &c.

like Dante's "Inferno": tells
magistrates to beware.

Shows influence of study of

Imprinted at London by
John Daye, dwelling ouer
Alderfgate.

Seneca, famous Latin writer
who studied Greek models.

Norton was student of S. and

211

translated some of his works.

Shows between acts. Greek fashion

Five classic drama followed
Greek, Corneille, Racine.

This play, under the title *Gorboduc*, was licensed to William Griffith in 1565 and printed by him in the same year. In 1570 it appeared under the title *Ferrex and Porrex*, with an address from the publisher, John Day, declaring the first edition to have been surreptitious and defective. In 1590 it was reprinted from the first edition with a few modernizations of spelling and diction. These three editions are indicated in the footnotes by A., B., and C.

The first edition was carefully reprinted for the Shakespeare Society in 1847 by W. D. Cooper. The second edition was reprinted in modernized spelling by R. W. Sackville-West in 1859 (*The Works of Thomas Sackville, Lord Buckhurst*). In 1883 Miss Lucy Toulmin Smith published a critical edition (*Englische Sprach- und Literaturdenkmale*, vol. I.), with the variants of the three old editions.

In spelling I have followed the second edition; in punctuation, capitalization, use of stage-directions, etc., I have followed modern usage. In the footnotes will be found the significant variants of the first edition, and a few of the more interesting readings of the third. The three modern editions are indicated in the footnotes by Co., S.-W., and Sm., respectively.

THE NAMES OF THE SPEAKERS.

GORBODUC, *king of Great Brittain.*

VIDENA, *queene, and wife to king Gorboduc.*

FERREX, *elder sonne to king Gorboduc.*

PORREX, *yonger sonne to king Gorboduc.*

CLOTYN, *duke of Cornewall.*

FERGUS, *duke of Albanie.*

MANDUD, *duke of Loegriss.¹*

GWENARD, *duke of Cumberland.*

EUBULUS, *secretarie to the king.²*

AROSTUS, *a counsellor to the king.³*

DORDAN, *a counsellor assigned by the king to his eldest sonne, Ferrex.*

PHILANDER, *a counsellor assigned by the king to his yongest⁴ sonne, Porrex.*

Both being of the olde kinges counsell before.

HERMON, *a parasite remaining with Ferrex.*

TYNDAR, *a parasite remaining with Porrex.*

NUNTIUS, *a messenger of the elder brothers death.*

NUNTIUS, *a messenger of Duke Fergus rising in armes.*

MARCELLA, *a lady of the queenes priuie-chamber.*

CHORUS, *foure auncient and sage men of Brittain.*

[SCENE: *Britain.*]

¹ A. Leagre.

² A. adds Gorboduc.

³ A. of King Gorboduc.

⁴ A. yonger.

could see them. Mutities of time, place,
and action, (within 24 hrs.), was
evident way. Same part of town.
Scene not changed in five acts.
no sub-plots in story. This
play doesn't do all this.
THE P[RINTER]¹ TO THE READER.²

Where this Tragedie was for furniture of part of the grand
Christmasse in the Inner Temple first written about nine
yeares agoe by the Right Honourable Thomas, now Lorde
Buckherst, and by T. Norton, and after shewed before her
Maiestie, and neuer intended by the authors therof to be
published; yet one W. G. getting a copie therof at some
yongmans hand that lacked a litle money and much discre-
tion, in the last great plage, an[no] 1565, about v yeares
past, while the said lord was out of England, and T. Norton
farre out of London, and neither of them both made priuie,
put it forth excedingly corrupted, — euen as if by meanes of
a broker, for hire, he should haue entised into his house a
faire maide and done her villanie, and after all-to-bescratched
her face, torne her apparell, berayed and disfigured her, and
then thrust her out of dores dishonested. In such plight,
after long wandring, she came at length home to the sight of
her frendes, who scant knew her but by a few tokens and
markes remaying. They — the authors, I meane — though
they were very much displeased that she so ranne abroad
without leaue, whereby she caught her shame, as many
wantons do, yet seing the case, as it is, remedillesse, haue,
for common honestie and shamefastnesse, new apparelled,
trimmed and attired her in such forme as she was before.
In which better forme since she hath come to me, I haue
harbored her for her frendes sake and her owne; and I do
not dout her parentes the authors will not now be discontent
that she goe abroad among you good readers, so it be in
honest companie. For she is by my encouragement and
others somewhat lesse ashamed of the dishonestie done to her,

¹ Letters in brackets supplied by Miss Smith.

² This Address is omitted by S.-W.; in B. Sm. it follows The Argument.

because it was by fraude and force. If she be welcome among you and gently entertained in fauor of the house from whence she is descended and of her owne nature courteously disposed to offend no man, her frendes will thanke you for it. If not, but that she shall be still reproched with her former missehap, or quarelled at by enuious persons, she, poore gentlewoma[n],¹ wil surely play Lucreces part, and of her-self die for shame; and I shall wishe that she had taried still at home with me, where she was welcome, for she did neuer put me to more charge but this one poore blacke gowne lined with white that I haue now geuen her to goe abroad among you withall.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE TRAGEDY.²

Gorboduc, king of Brittain, diuided his realme in his lifetime to his sonnes, Ferrex and Porrex; the sonnes fell to discention;³ the yonger killed the elder; the mother, that more dearely loued the elder, for reuenge killed the yonger; the people, moued with the crueltie of the fact, rose in rebellion and slew both father and mother; the nobilitie assembled and most terribly destroyed the rebels; and afterwardes, for want of issue of the prince, whereby the succession of the crowne became vncertaine, they fell to ciuill warre, in which both they and many of their issues were slaine, and the land for a long time almost desolate and miserably wasted.

¹ Letter in brackets supplied by Miss Smith.

² In B. Sm. this is on the back of the titlepage.

³ A. to dyuision and discention.

Dumb show of play.
 Every act introduced by a
 symbolic pantomime.
 Play in "Hamlet" given beforehand
 in dumb show.

... frequent change of place, and great deal of time indicated.

Probably written to prevent intro into Eng. of a foreign element, into (*) Countries of Eng. deperidated ideas

[GORBODUC; OR, FERREX AND PORREX.]

of Eng. power being united with any other throne.

The Order of the Domme Shew before the First Act, and the Signification Thereof.

First the musicke of violenze began to play, during which came in vpon the stage sixe wilde men, clothed in leaues; of whom the first bare in his necke a fagot of small stickes, which they all, both seuerally and together, assayed with all their strengthes to breake, but it could not be broken by them. At the length, one of them plucked¹ out one of the stickes and brake it, and the rest plucking out all the other stickes one after an-other did easely breake them,² the same being seuered, which, being conioyned, they had before attempted in vaine. After they had this done, they departed the stage; and the musicke ceased. Hereby was signified that a state knit in vnitie doth continue strong against all force, but being diuided is easely destroyed: As befell vpon Duke Gorboduc diuiding his land to his two sonnes, which he before held in monarchie, and vpon the discension of the brethren to whom it was diuided.

Plot is modified of old Greek plot, "Oedipus" their play source of King Lear Fletcher's "Tales of the Mother"

This play is the source of other plays.

"A kingdom divided is no kingdom"

wished to show the Queen this moral.

Actus Primus. Scena Prima.

Symmetay.

[A room in GORBODUC'S palace.]

no natural VIDENA. FERREX. grouping of characters.

and Schiller's "Mind of the Present"

VID. The silent night, that brings the quiet pawse,
From painefull trauailes of the wearie day,
Prolonges my carefull thoughtes, and makes me blame
The slow Aurore, that so for loue or shame
Doth long delay to shewe her blushing face;
And now the day renews my griefull plaint.

5

FERR. My gracious lady and my mother deare,
Pardon my grieffe for your so grieued minde,

¹ C. S.-W. pulled.

² A. omits them.

To aske what cause tormenteth so your hart.

VID. So great a wrong, and so vniust déspite, 10
Without all cause, against all course of kinde!

FERR. Such causelesse wrong and so vniust despite
May haue redresse, or, at the least, reuenge.

VID. Neither, my sonne ; such is the froward will,
The person such, such my missehappe and thine. 15

FERR. Mine know I none but grief for your distresse.

VID. Yes, mine for thine, my sonne. A father? No ;
In kinde a father, not¹ in kindliness.

FERR. My father? Why, I know nothing at all
Wherein I haue misdome vnto his Grace. 20

VID. Therefore the more vnkinde to thee and mee!
For, knowing well, my sonne, the tender loue
That I haue euer borne and beare to thee,
He, greued thereat, is not content alone
To spoile thee of my sight,² my chiefest ioye ; 25

But thee of thy birthright and heritage,
Causelesse, vnkindly and in wrongfull wise,
Against all lawe and right, he will bereaue :
Halfe of his kingdome he will geue away.

FERR. To whom?

VID. Euen to Porrex, his yonger sonne, 30

Whose growing pride I do so sore suspect
That, being raised to equall rule with thee,
Mee thinkes I see his envious hart to swell,
Filled with disdain and with ambitious hope.³
The end the goddes do know, whose altars I 35

Full oft haue made in vaine of cattell slaine
To send the sacred smoke to Heauens throne
For thee, my sonne, if thinges do⁴ so succede
As now my ielous mind misdemeth sore.

FERR. Madam, leaue care and carefull plaint for me. 40
Just hath my father bene to euery wight ;
His first vniustice he will not extend

¹ A. but not.

² Qy. To spoile me of thy sight.

³ A. pride.

⁴ A. omits do.

To me, I trust, that geue no cause therof.

My brothers pride shall hurt him-selfe, not me.

VID. So graunt the goddes! But yet thy father so 45

Hath firmly fixed his vnmoued minde

That plaintes and prayers can no whit auaille, —

For those haue I assaied, — but euen this day

He will endeuour to procure assent

Of all his counsell to his fonde deuise. 50

FERR. Their ancestors from race to race haue borne

True fayth to my forefathers and their seede ;

I trust they eke will beare the like to me.

VID. There resteth all. But, if they faile there-of, 55

And if the end bring forth an ill¹ successe,

On them and theirs the mischief shall befall ;

And so I pray the goddes requite it them,

And so they will, for so is wont to be.

When lordes, and trusted rulers vnder kinges,

To please the present fancie of the prince, 60

With wrong transpose the course of gouernance,

Murders, mischief or ciuill sword at length,

Or mutuall treason, or a iust reuenge

When right-succeeding line returnes againe,

By Ioues iust iudgement and deserued wrath 65

Bringes them to cruell² and reprochfull death

And rootes their names and kindredes from the earth.

FERR. Mother, content you ; you shall see the end.

VID. The end? Thy end, I feare! Ioue end me first!

Actus Primus. Scena Secunda.

[*The council-chamber of GORBODUC.*]

GORBODUC. AROSTUS. PHILANDER. EUBULUS.

GORB. My lords, — whose graue aduise and faithful aide

Haue long vpheld my honour and my realme,

And brought me to³ this age from tender yeres,

* 1 A. euill.

2 A. ciuill.

3 A. C. from.

Guidyng so great estate with great renowme, —
 Nowe more importeth mee than ¹ erst to vse 5
 Your fayth and wisdomie, — whereby yet I reigne, —
 That, when by death my life and rule shall cease,
 The kingdome yet may with vnbroken course
 Haue certayne prince, by whose vndoubted right
 Your wealth and peace may stand in quiet stay ; 10
 And eke that they whome nature hath preparte,
 In time to take my place in princely seate,
 While in their fathers tyme their pliant youth
 Yeldes to the frame of skilfull gouernance,
 Maye so be taught and trayned in noble artes, 15
 As, what their fathers which haue reigned before
 Haue with great fame deriued downe to them,
 With honour they may leaue vnto their seede ;
 And not be thought,² for their vnworthy life
 And for their lawless swaruyng out of kinde, 20
 Worthy to lose what lawe and kind them gaue ;
 But that they may preserue the common peace —
 The cause that first began and still mainteines
 The lyneall course of kinges inheritance —
 For me, for myne, for you, and for the state, 25
 Whereof both I and you haue charge and care.
 Thus do I meane to vse your wonted fayth
 To me and myne, and to your natiue lande.
 My lordes, be playne, without all wrie respect
 Or poysonous craft to speake in pleasyng wise, 30
 Lest, as the blame of yll-succedyng thinges
 Shall light on you, so light the harmes also.

AROS. Your good acceptance so, most noble king,
 Of suche our³ faithfulnessse as heretofore
 We haue employed in dueties to your Grace 35
 And to this realm, whose worthy head you are,
 Well proues that neyther you mistrust at all
 Nor we shall neede in ⁴ boasting wise to shewe

¹ A. C. the.³ A. C. your.² A. C. taught.⁴ A. C. no.

Our trueth to you, nor yet our wakefull care
 For you, for yours, and for our natiue lande. 40
 Wherefore, O kyng, — I speake as one for¹ all,
 Sithe all as one do beare you egall faith, —
 Doubt not to vse our² counsellis and our² aides,
 Whose honours, goods and lyues are whole auowed,
 To serue, to ayde and to defende your Grace. 45

GORB. My lordes, I thanke you all. This is the case :
 Ye know, the gods, who haue the soueraigne care
 For kings, for kingdomes and for common-weales,
 Gaue me two sonnes in my more lusty age,
 Who nowe in my decayeing³ yeres are growen 50
 Well towards ryper state of minde and strength
 To take in hande some greater princely charge.
 As yet they lyue and spende their⁴ hopefull daies
 With me and with their mother here in courte.
 Their age nowe asketh other place and trade, 55
 And myne also doth aske an-other change :
 Theirs to more trauaile, myne to greater ease.
 Whan fatall death shall ende my mortall life,
 My purpose is to leaue vnto them twaine
 The realme diuided in two⁵ sondry partes : 60
 The one Ferrex, myne elder sonne, shall haue,
 The other shall the yonger,⁶ Porrex, rule.
 That both my purpose may more firmly⁷ stande
 And eke that they may better rule their charge,
 I meane forthwith to place them in the same, 65
 That in my life they may both learne to rule
 And I may ioy to see their ruling well.
 This is, in summe, what I woulde haue ye wey :
 First, whether ye allowe my whole deuise
 And thinke it good for me, for them, for you, 70
 And for our cuntry, mother of vs all ;

1 A. C. for one as.

5 A. B. C. into two.

2 A. C. their.

6 A. C. other.

3 A. deceyuyng.

7 A. framelie.

4 B. C. omit their.

And, if ye like it and allowe it well,
 Then, for their guydinge and their gouernaunce,
 Shew forth such meanes of circumstance ¹
 As ye thinke meete to be both knowne and kept. 75
 Loe, this is all ; now tell me your aduise.

AROS. And this is much, and asketh great aduise ;
 But, for my part, my soueraigne lord and kyng,
 This do I thinke : your Maiestie doth know
 How, vnder you, in iustice and in peace, 80
 Great wealth and honour long we haue enioy'd,
 So as we can not seeme with gredie mindes
 To wisse for change of prince or gouernaunce ;
 But, if we ² lyke your purpose and deuise,
 Our lyking must be deemed to proceede 85
 Of rightfull reason and of heedefull care,
 Not for ourselues, but for the ³ common state,
 Sithe our owne state doth neede no better change.
 I thinke in all as erst your Grace hath saide.
 Firste, when you shall vnlode your aged mynde 90
 Of heuye care and troubles manifolde,
 And laye the same vpon my lordes your sonnes,
 Whose growing yeres may beare the burden long, —
 And long I pray the goddes to graunt it so ! —
 And in your life while you shall so beholde 95
 Their rule, their vertues and their noble deedes,
 Suche as their kinde behighteth to vs all,
 Great be the profites that shall growe therof :
 Your age in quiet shall the longer last ;
 Your lasting age shalbe their longer stay ; 100
 For cares of kynges that rule, as you have ruled,
 For publique wealth and not for priuate ioye,
 Do wast mannes lyfe, and hasten crooked age
 With furrowed face and with enfeebled lymmes
 To draw on creepyng death a swifter pace. 105

¹ This line has only four feet ; the insertion of to me or I pray after
 forth would restore the metre.

² A. C. ye.

³ A. our.

They two yet yong, shall beare the parted¹ reigne
 With greater ease than one, nowe olde, alone
 Can welde the whole, for whom muche harder is
 With lessened strength the double weight to beare.
 Your eye, your counsell, and the graue regarde 110
 Of father,² yea, of such a fathers name,
 Nowe at beginning of their sondred reigne,
 When is the³ hazarde of their whole successe,
 Shall bridle so their force of youthfull heates,
 And so restreine the rage of insolence, 115
 Whiche most assailes the yonge and noble minds,
 And so shall guide and traine in tempred stay
 Their yet greene, bending wittes with reuerent awe,
 As⁴ — now inured with vertues at the first, —
 Custome, O king, shall bring delightfulnessse ; 120
 By vse of vertue, vice shall growe in hate.
 But, if you so dispose it that the daye
 Which endes your life shall first begin their reigne,
 Great is the perill what will⁵ be the ende,
 When such beginning of such liberties, 125
 Voide of suche stayes⁶ as in your life do lye,
 Shall leaue them free to randon⁷ of their will,
 An open praie to traiterous flatterie, —
 The greatest pestilence of noble youthe ;
 Whiche perill shalbe past, if in your life 130
 Their tempred youthe with aged fathers awe
 Be brought in vre of skilfull stayednesse ;
 And in your life their liues disposed so,
 Shall length your noble life in ioyfulnessse.
 Thus thinke I that your Grace hath wisely thought, 135
 And that your tender care of common weale
 Hath bred this thought, so to diuide your lande
 And plant your sonnes to beare the present rule

¹ A. C. partie.⁵ C. shall.² A. C. fathers.⁶ A. C. states.³ A. When it is.⁷ A. C. to free randon.⁴ A. C. And.

While you yet liue to see their ruinge well,
 That you may longer lyue by ioye therein. 140
 What furder ¹ meanes behouefull are and meete,
 At greater ² leisure may your Grace deuise,
 When all haue said, and when we be agreed
 If this be best to part the realme in twaine
 And place your sonnes in present gouernement ; 145
 Whereof, as I haue plainly said my mynde,
 So woulde I here the rest of all my lordes.

PHIL. In part I thinke as hath bene said before ;
 In parte, agayne, my minde is otherwise.
 As for diuiding of this realme in twaine, 150
 And lotting out the same in egall partes
 To either of my lordes your Graces sonnes,
 That thinke I best for this your realmes behofe,
 For profite and aduaancement of your sonnes,
 And for your comferte and your honour eke. 155
 But so to place them while your life do ³ last,
 To yelde to them your royall gouernaunce,
 To be aboue them onely in the name
 Of father, not in kingly state also,
 I thinke not good for you, for them, nor vs. 160
 This kingdome, since the bloudie ciuill field
 Where Morgan slaine did yeld his conquered parte
 Unto his cosins sworde in Camberland,
 Conteineth all that whilome did suffice
 Three noble sonnes of your forefather Brute. 165
 So your two sonnes it maye suffice also.⁴
 The moe, the stronger, if they gree in one.
 The smaller compasse that the realme doth holde,
 The easier is the swey thereof to welde,
 The nearer justice to the wronged poore, 170
 The smaller charge, — and yet ynoughe for one.
 And, whan the region is diuided so
 That brethren be the lordes of either parte,

¹ C. further.³ C. doth.² A. great.⁴ A. C. also suffice.

Such strength doth Nature knit betwene them both
 In sondrie bodies by conioyned loue 175
 That, not as two, but one of doubled force,
 Eche is to other as a sure defence;
 The noblenesse and glory of the one
 Doth sharpe the courage of the others mynde
 With vertuous enuie to contende for praise. 180
 And suche an egalnesse hath Nature made
 Betwene the brethren of one fathers seede
 As an vnkindly wrong it seemes to bee
 To throwe the brother¹ subiect vnder feete
 Of him whose peere he is by course of kinde. 185
 And Nature, that did make this egalnesse,
 Ofte so repineth² at so great a wrong
 That ofte she rayseth vp a grudginge grieffe
 In yonger brethren at the elders state,
 Wherby both townes and kingdomes haue ben rased, 190
 And famous stockes of royall bloud destroied:
 The brother, that shoulde be the brothers aide
 And haue a wakefull care for his defence,
 Gapes for his death, and blames the lyngering yeres
 That draw³ not forth his ende with faster course; 195
 And oft, impacient of so longe delayes,
 With hatefull slaughter he preuentes⁴ the Fates,
 And heapes⁵ a iust rewarde for brothers bloode,
 With endlesse vengeaunce, on his stocke for aye.
 Suche mischiefes here are wisely mette withall, 200
 If egall state maye nourishe egall loue,
 Where none hath cause to grudge at others good.
 But nowe the head to stoupe beneth them bothe,
 Ne kind ne reason ne good ordre beares.
 And oft it hath ben seene, where Natures course⁶ 205

¹ A. C. other.

² Dods. says C. has sore pineth; Sm. records no such variant.

³ Sm. gives reading of A. C. as brings; Co. prints A. bring; Dods. gives C. as brings.

⁵ A. C. keepes.

⁴ A. presentes.

⁶ A. C. that where nature.

Hath ben peruerted in disordered wise,
 When fathers cease to know that they should rule,
 The ¹ children cease to know they should obey ;
 And often ouerkindly tendernesse
 Is mother of vnkindly stubbornnesse. 210
 I speake not this in enuie or reproche,
 As if I grudged the glorie of your sonnes, —
 Whose honour I besech the goddes encrease ! —
 Nor yet as if I thought there did remaine
 So filthie cankers in their noble brestes 215
 Whom I esteeme — which is their greatest praise —
 Undoubted children of so good a kyng ;
 Onelie I meane to shewe, by ² certeine rules
 Whiche Kinde hath graft within the mind of man,
 That Nature hath her ordre and her course, 220
 Which being broken doth corrupt the state
 Of myndes and thinges, euen in the best of all.
 My lordes your sonnes may learne to rule of you ;
 Your owne example in your noble courte
 Is fittest guyder of their youthfull yeares. 225
 If you desire to see ³ some present ioye
 By sight of their well rulynge in your lyfe,
 See them obey, so shall you see them rule :
 Who-so obeyeth not with humblenesse
 Will rule with outrage and with insolence. 230
 Longe maye they rule, I do beseche the goddes ;
 But ⁴ longe may they learne, ere they begyn to rule !
 If Kinde and Fates ⁵ woulde suffre, I would wisse
 Them aged princes and immortall kinges.
 Wherefore, most noble kynge, I well ⁶ assent, 235
 Betwene your sonnes that you diuide your realme,
 And, as in kinde, so match them in degree.
 But, while the goddes prolong your royall life,
 Prolong your reigne ; for therto lyue you here,

¹ A. C. And.² A. C. my.³ A. C. seeke.⁴ S.-W. omits but, for the metre ; the omission of they would obtain the same effect.⁵ C. saies.⁶ C. will.

And therefore haue the goddes so long forborne 240
 To ioyne you to them-selues, that still you might
 Be prince and father of our common-weale.
 They, when they see your children ripe to rule,
 Will make them rouse, and will remoue you hence,
 That yours, in right ensuyng of your life, 245
 Maye rightly honour your immortall¹ name.

EUB. Your wonted true regarde of faithfull hartes
 Makes me, O kinge, the bolder to presume
 To speake what I conceiue within my brest,
 Although the same do not agree at all 250
 With that which other here my lordes haue said,
 Nor which yourselfe haue seemed best to lyke.
 Pardon I craue, and that my wordes be demde
 To flowe from hartie zeale vnto your Grace,
 And to the safetie of your common-weale. 255
 To parte your realme vnto my lordes your sonnes
 I thinke not good for you, ne yet for them,
 But worste of all for this our natiue lande.
 Within² one land one single rule is best :
 Diuided reignes³ do make diuided hartes, 260
 But peace preserues the countrey and the prince.
 Suche is in man the gredy minde to reigne,
 So great is his desire to climbe alofte,
 In worldly stage the stateliest partes to beare,
 That faith and iustice and all kindly loue 265
 Do yelde vnto desire of soueraignitie
 Where egall state doth raise an egall hope
 To winne the thing that either wold attaine.
 Your Grace remembreth how in passed yeres
 The mightie Brute, first prince of all this lande, 270
 Possessed the same and ruled it well in one ;
 He, thinking that the compasse did suffice
 For his three sonnes three kingdoms eke to make,
 Cut it in three, as you would now in twaine ;

¹ A. C. mortall.³ C. regions.² A. C. For with.

But how much Britnish ¹ bloud hath since bene spilt, 275
 To ioyne againe the sondred vnitie ;
 What princes slaine before their timely houre ; ²
 What wast of townes and people in the lande ;
 What treasons heaped on murders and on spoiles,
 Whose iust reuenge even yet is scarcely ceased, 280
 Ruthefull remembraunce is yet rawe ³ in minde !
 The gods forbyd the like to chaunce againe !
 And you, O king, geue not the cause therof !
 My lord Ferrex, your elder sonne, perhappes,
 Whome kinde and custome geues a rightfull hope 285
 To be your heire and to succede your reigne,
 Shall thinke that he doth suffre greater wrong
 Than he perchaunce will beare, if power serue.
 Porrex, the younger, so vpraised ⁴ in state,
 Perhappes in courage will be rayсед also. 290
 If flatterie, then, whiche fayles not to assaile
 The tendre mindes of yet vnskilfull youth,
 In one shall kinde and encrease disdainē,
 And ⁵ enuie in the others harte enflame,
 This fire shall waste their loue, their liues, their land,
 And ruthefull ruine shall destroy them both. 295
 I wishe not this, O kyng, so to befall,
 But feare the thing that I do most abhorre.
 Geue no beginning to so dreadfull ende ;
 Kepe them in order and obedience, 300
 And let them both, by now obeying you,
 Learne such behauiour as beseemes their state, —
 The elder, myldenesse in his gouernaunce,
 The yonger, a yelding contentednesse.
 And kepe them neare vnto your presence still, 305
 That they, restreyned by the awe of you,
 May liue in compasse of well tempred staye
 And passe the perilles of their youthfull yeares.
 Your aged life drawes on to febler tyme,

¹ A. C. Brutish.³ A. C. had.⁵ C. In.² A. C. honour.⁴ A. C. vnpraised.

Wherin you shall lesse able be to beare 310
 The trauailes that in youth you haue susteyned
 Both in your persones and your realmes defence.
 If, planting now your sonnes in furder partes,
 You sende them furder from your present reach,
 Lesse shall you know how they them-selues demeane ;¹ 315
 Traiterous corrupters of their plyant youth
 Shall have, vnspied, a mucche more free accesse ;
 And, if ² ambition and inflamed disdaine
 Shall arme the one, the other, or them both,
 To ciuill warre or to vsurping pride, 320
 Late shall you rue that you ne recked before.
 Good is, I graunt, of all to hope the best,
 But not to liue still dreadlesse of the worst.
 So truste the one that the other be foresene.
 Arme not vnskilfulnesse with princely power ; 325
 But you, that long haue wisely ruled the reignes
 Of royaltie within your noble realme,
 So holde them, while the gods for our auayles
 Shall stretch the thred of your prolonged daies.
 To soone he clambe into the flaming carre 330
 Whose want of skill did set the earth on fire.
 Time, and example of your noble Grace,
 Shall teach your sonnes both to obey and rule.
 When time hath taught them, time shal make them place, —³
 The place that now is full : and so, I pray, 335
 Long it remaine, to comfort of vs all!
 GORB. I take your faithful harts in thankful part.
 But, sithe I see no cause to draw my minde
 To feare the nature of my louing sonnes,
 Or to misdeme that enuie or disdaine 340
 Can there worke hate where nature planteth loue,
 In one selfe purpose do I still abide.
 My loue extendeth egally to both ;
 My lande suffiseth for them both also.
 Humber shall parte the marches of theyr realmes : 345

¹ A. C. demaund.² A. C. of.³ A. C. pace.

The sotherne part the elder shall possesse ;
 The no[r]therne shall Porrex, the yonger, rule.
 In quiet I will passe mine aged dayes,
 Free from the trauaile and the painefull cares
 That hasten age vpon the worthiest kinges. 350
 But, lest the fraude that ye do seeme to feare
 Of flattering tongues corrupt their tender youth,
 And wrythe them to the wayes of youthfull lust,
 To climyng pride or to reuenging hate,
 Or to neglecting of their carefull charge, 355
 Lewdely to lyue in wanton recklesnesse,
 Or to oppressing of the rightfull cause,
 Or not to wreke the wronges done to the poore,
 To treade downe truth or fauour false deceite,
 I meane to ioyne to eyther of my sonnes 360
 Some one of those whose long approued faith
 And wisdome tryed may well assure my harte
 That mynyng fraude shall finde no way to crepe
 Into their fensed eares with graue aduise.
 This is the ende, and so I pray you all 365
 To beare my sonnes the loue and loyaltie
 That I haue founde within your faithfull brestes.

AROS. You nor your sonnes, our soueraign lord, shal want
 Our faith and seruice while our liues do last!

Exeunt.

CHORUS.

When settled stay doth holde the royall throne
 In stedfast place by knowen and doubtles right,
 And chiefly when discent on one alone
 Makes single and vnparted reigne to light,
 Eche change of course vnioynts the whole estate,
 And yeldes it thrall to ruyne by debate. 6

The strength that, knit by faste ¹ accorde in one,
 Against all forrein power of mightie foes

¹ A. C. laste.

Could of it-selfe defende it-selfe alone,
 Disioined once, the former force doth lose.
 The stickes that, sondred, brake so soone in twaine,
 In faggot bounde attempted were in vain. 12

Oft tender minde, that leades the parcial eye
 Of erring parentes in their childrens loue,
 Destroyes the wrongly loued childe thereby.
 This doth the proude sonne of Apollo proue,
 Who, rashely set in chariot of his sire,
 Inflamed the parched earth with heauens fire. 18

And this great king, that doth deuide his land
 And change the course of his discending crowne
 And yeldes the reigne into his childrens hande,
 From blisfull state of ioye and great renowne
 A myrrour shall become to princes all
 To learne to shunne the cause of suche a fall. 24

End of the First Act.

The Order and Signification of the Domme Shew
 before the Second Acte.

First, the musicke of cornettes began to playe, during which came in vpon the stage a king accompanied with a nombre of his nobilitie and gentlemen; and, after he had placed him-self in a chaire of estate prepared for him, there came and kneled before him a graue and aged gentelman, and offred vp a cuppe vnto him of wyne in a glasse, which the king refused; after him commes a braue and lustie yong gentleman and presentes the king with a cup of golde filled with poyson, which the king accepted, and, drinking the same, immediatly fell downe dead vpon the stage, and so was carried thence away by his lordes and gentelmen; and then the musicke ceased. Hereby was signified, that, as glasse by nature holdeth no poyson, but is clere and may easily be seen through, ne boweth by any arte: so a faythfull counsellour holdeth no treason, but is playne and open, ne yeldeth to any vndiscrete affection, but geueth¹ holsome counsell, which the yll-aduised prince refuseth. The delightfull golde filled with poyson betokeneth flattery, which vnder faire seeming of pleasaunt wordes beareth deadly poyson, which destroieth² the prince that receyueth it; as befell in the two brethren, Ferrex and Porrex, who, refusing the holsome aduise of grave counsellours, credited these yong paracites, and brought to³ them-selues death and destruction therby.

¹ C. giueth.

² So A. C.; B. destroyed.

³ C. vnto.

Actus Secundus. Scena Prima.

[*The court of FERREX.*]

FERREX. HERMON. DORDAN.

FERR. I meruaile much what reason ledde the king,
My father, thus without all my desert,
To reue me halfe the kingdome, which by course
Of law and nature should remayne to me.

HER. If you with stubborne and vntamed pryde 5
Had stood against him in rebelling wise,
Or if with grudging minde you had enuied
So slow a slidyng of his aged yeres,
Or sought before your time to haste the course
Of fatall death vpon his royall head, 10
Or stained your stocke with murder of your kyn,
Some face of reason might perhaps haue seemed
To yelde some likely cause to spoyl ye thus.

FERR. The wrekeful gods powre on my cursed head 15
Eternall plagues and neuer-dying woes,
The hellish prince adiudge my dampned ghost
To Tantaes thirste, or proude Ixions wheele,
Or cruell gripe to gnaw my growing harte,
To during tormentes and vnquenched flames,
If euer I conceyued so foule a thought 20
To wisse his ende of life, or yet of reigne!

DOR. Ne yet your father, O most noble prince
Did euer thinke so fowle a thing of you ;
For he, with more than fathers tendre loue,
While yet the fates do lende him life to rule, — 25
Who long might lyue to see your ruling well, —
To you, my lorde, and to his other sonne,
Lo, he resignes his realme and royaltie :
Which neuer would so wise a prince haue done,
If he had once misdemed that in your harte 30
There euer lodged so vnkinde a thought.

But tendre loue, my lorde, and setled truste
 Of your good nature and your noble minde
 Made him to place you thus in royall throne,
 And now to geue you half his realme to guide, — 35
 Yea, and that halfe which in ¹ abounding store
 Of things that serue to make a welthy realme,
 In stately cities, and in frutefull soyle,
 In temperate breathing of the milder heauen,
 In thinges of nedefull vse, which frendly sea 40
 Transportes by traffike from the forreine partes,
 In flowing wealth, in honour and in force,
 Doth passe the double value of the parte
 That Porrex hath allotted to his reigne.
 Such is your case; such is your fathers loue. 45

FERR. Ah loue, my frendes, — loue wrongs not whom he
 loues!

DOR. Ne yet he wrongeth you, that geueth you
 So large a reigne ere that the course of time
 Bring you to kingdome by discended right,
 Which time perhaps might end your time before. 50

FERR. Is this no wrong, say you, to reauue from me
 My ² natiue right of halfe so great a realme,
 And thus to matche his yonger sonne with me
 In egall power and in as great degree?
 Yea, and what sonne? The sonne whose swelling pride 55
 Woulde neuer yelde one point of reuerence
 Whan I the elder and apparaunt heire
 Stoode in the likelihode to possesse the whole;
 Yea, and that sonne which from his childish age
 Enuieth myne honour and doth hate my life. 60
 What will he now do, when his pride, his rage,
 The mindfull malice of his grudging harte,
 Is armed with force, with wealth and kingly state?

HER. Was this not wrong, — yea, yll-aduised wrong,
 To giue so mad a man so sharpe a sworde? 65
 To so great perill of so great missehappe

¹ A. C. within.

² Co. By; *perhaps a misprint.*

Wide open thus to set so large a waye?

DOR. Alas, my lord, what griefull thing is this,

That of your brother you can thinke so ill?

I neuer saw him vtter likelie signe

70

Whereby a man might see or once misdeme

Such hate of you ne such unyielding pride.

Ill is their counsell, shamefull be their ende,

That, raysing such mistrustfull feare in you,

Sowing the seede of such vnkindly hate,

75

Trauaile by treason¹ to destroy you both.

Wise is your brother, and of noble hope,

Worthie to welde a large and mightie realme :

So much a stronger frende haue you therby,

Whose strength is your strength, if you gree in one.

80

HER. If Nature and the goddes had pinched so

Their flowing bountie and their noble giftes

Of princelie qualities from you, my lorde,

And powrde them all at ones in wastfull wise

Upon your fathers yonger sonne alone,

85

Perhappes there be that in your preiudice

Would say that birth should yeld to worthinesse.

But, sithe in eche good gift and princelie arte²

Ye are his matche, and in the chiefe of all,

In mildenesse and in sobre gouernaunce,

90

Ye farre surmount ; and sith there is in you

Sufficing skill and hopefull towardnesse

To weld the whole and match your elders prayse,

I see no cause why ye should loose the halfe ;

Ne would I wisse you yelde to such a losse,

95

Lest your milde sufferance of so great a wronge

Be deemed cowardishe and simple dreade,

Which shall geue courage to the fierie head

Of your yonge brother to inuade the whole.

While yet, therefore, stickes in the peoples minde

100

The lothed wrong of your disheritaunce ;

And ere your brother haue, by settled power,

¹ A. C. reason.

² A. C. acte.

By guilefull cloke of an alluring showe,
 Got him some force and fauour in the¹ realme ;
 And while the noble queene, your mother, lyues,
 To worke and practise all for your auaille, — 105
 Attempt redresse by armes, and wreake your-self
 Upon his life that gayneth by your losse,
 Who nowe, to shame of you, and grieffe of vs,
 In your owne kingdome triumphes ouer you. 110
 Shew now your courage meete for kingly state,²
 That they which haue auowed to spend their goods,
 Their landes, their liues and honours in your cause,
 May be the bolder to mainteyne your parte,
 When they do see that cowarde feare in you . 115
 Shall not betray ne faile their faithfull hartes.
 If once the death of Porrex ende the strife,
 And pay the price of his vsurped reigne,
 Your mother shall perswade the angry kyng.
 The lords, your frends, eke shall appease his rage ; 120
 For they be wise, and well they can forsee
 That ere longe time your aged fathers death
 Will bryng a time when you shall well requite
 Their frendlie fauour, or their hatefull spite,
 Yea, or their slackenesse to auauance your cause. 125
 “ Wise men do not so hang on passing state
 “ Of present princes, chiefly in their age,
 “ But they will further cast their reaching eye
 “ To viewe and weye the times and reignes to come.”³
 Ne is it likely, though the kyng be wrothe, 130
 That he yet will or that the realme will beare
 Extreme reuenge vpon his onely sonne ;
 Or, if he woulde, what one is he that dare
 Be minister to such an enterprise?
 And here you be now placed in your owne, 135

¹ A. C. this.² A. C. estate.³ Here and elsewhere in the play quotation-marks are used, after the fashion of the time, to call particular attention to certain sententious remarks.

Amyd your frendes, your vassalles and your strength.
 We shall defende and kepe your person safe,
 Till either counsell turne his tender minde
 Or age or sorrow end his werie dayes.

But, if the feare of goddes and secrete grudge 140

Of Natures law, repining at the fact,

Withholde your courage from so great attempt,

Know ye that lust of kingdomes hath no law :

The goddes do beare and well allow in kinges

The thinges [that] ¹ they abhorre in rascall routes. 145

“ When kinges on slender quarrells runne to warres,

“ And then, in cruell and vnkindely wise,

“ Commaund theftes, rapes, murders of innocentes,

“ The ² spoile of townes, ruines ³ of mighty realmes, —

“ Thinke you such princes do suppose ⁴ them-selues 150

“ Subiect to lawes of Kinde and feare of gods? ”

Murders and violent theftes in priuate men ⁵

Are hanius crimes and full of foule reproch,

Yet none offence, but deckt with glorious name

Of noble conquestes, in the handes of kinges. 155

But, if you like not yet so hote deuise,

Ne list to take such vauntage of the time,

But, though with perill of your owne estate,⁶

You will not be the first that shall inuade ;

Assemble yet your force for your defence, 160

And, for your safetie, stand vpon your garde.

DOR. O Heauen! was there euer heard or knowen

So wicked counsel to a noble prince?

Let me, my lorde, disclose vnto your Grace

This hainous tale, what mischiefe it containes, — 165

Your fathers death, your brothers and your owne,

¹ According to Co. Dods. Haw., the reading of B. is thinges that they ;
 but according to S.-W. Sm., it is thinges they.

² A. C. To.

³ A. C. and reignes.

⁴ A. C. suppresses.

⁵ In A. C. the order of lines is 154, 155, 152, 153.

⁶ A. C. with great perill of your state.

Your present murder and eternall shame.

Heare me, O king, and suffer not to sinke

So high a treason in your princely brest!

FERR. The mightie goddess forbid that euer I 170

Should once conceaue such mischief in my hart.

Although my brother hath bereft my realme,

And beare perhappes to me an¹ hatefull minde,

Shall I reuenge it with his death, therefore?

Or shall I so destroy my fathers life 175

That gaue me life? The gods forbid, I say.

Cease you to speake so any more to me;

Ne you, my frend, with answere once repeate

So foule a tale, — in silence let it die!

What lord or subiect shall haue hope at all 180

That vnder me they safely shall enioye

Their goods, their honours, landes and liberties,

With whom neither one onely brother deare

Ne father dearer could enioye their liues?

But, sith I feare my yonger brothers rage, 185

And sith perhappes some other man may geue

Some like aduise to moue his grudging head

At mine estate, — which counsell may perchance

Take greater force with him than this with me, —

I will in secrete so prepare myselfe 190

As, if his malice or his lust to reigne

Breake forth in² armes or sodeine violence,

I may withstand his rage and keepe mine owne.

[*Exeunt FERREX and HERMON.*]

DOR. I feare the fatall time now draweth on,

When ciuil hate shall end the noble line 195

Of famous Brute and of his royall seede.

Great Ioue, defend the mischiefes now at hand!

O that the secretaries wise aduise

Had erst bene heard, when he besought the king

Not to diuide his land nor send his sonnes 200

¹ According to Sm., A. has and.

² A. C. with.

To further partes from presence of his court,
 Ne yet to yelde to them his gouernaunce.
 Lo, such are they now in the royall throne
 As was rashe ¹ Phaeton in Phœbus carre ;
 Ne then the fiery stedes did draw the flame 205
 With wilder randon through the kindled skies
 Than traitorous counsell now will whirle about
 The youthfull heades of these vnskillfull kinges.
 But I hereof their father will enforme.
 The reuerence of him perhappes shall stay 210
 The growing mischiefes while they yet are greene.
 If this helpe not, then woe vnto them-selues,
 The prince, the people, the diuided land !

[Exit.]

Actus Secundus. Scena Secunda.

[The court of PORREX.]

PORREX. TYNDAR. PHILANDER.

PORR. And is it thus? and doth he so prepare
 Against his brother as his mortall foe?
 And now while yet his aged father liues?
 Neither regardes he him nqr feares he me?
 Warre would he haue? and he shall haue it so! 5
 TYND. I saw myselfe the great prepared store
 Of horse, of armour ² and of weapon ³ there ;
 Ne bring I to my lorde reported tales
 Without the ground of seen and searched trouth.
 Loe, secrete quarrels runne about his court, 10
 To bring the name of you, my lorde, in hate.
 Ech man almost can now debate the cause
 And aske a reason of so great a wrong :
 Why ⁴ he, so noble and so wise a prince,
 Is, as vnworthy, reft his heritage, 15

¹ C. that.³ A. C. weapons.² A. C. armours.⁴ A. C. While.

And why the king, misseledde by craftie meanes,
 Diuided thus his land from course of right.
 The wiser sort holde downe their griefull heades.
 Eche man withdrawes from talke and company
 Of those that haue bene knowne to fauour you. 20
 To hide the mischiefe of their meaning there,
 Rumours are spread of your preparing here.
 The rasçall numbers of [the]¹ vnskilfull sort
 Are filled with monstrous tales of you and yours.
 In secrete I was counselled by my frendes 25
 To hast me thence, and brought you, as you know,
 Letters from those that both can truely tell
 And would not write vnlesse they knew it well.

PHIL. My lord, yet ere you moue² vnkindly warre,
 Send to your brother to demaund the cause. 30
 Perhappes some traitorous tales haue filled his eares
 With false reportes against your noble Grace:
 Which once disclosed shall end the growing strife,
 That els, not stayed with wise foresight in time,
 Shall hazarde both your kingdomes and your liues. 35
 Send to your father eke; he shall appease
 Your kindled mindes, and rid you of this feare.

PORR. Ridde me of feare? I feare him not at all,
 Ne will to him ne to my father send.
 If danger were for one to tary there, 40
 Thinke ye it safetie to returne againe?
 In mischiefes such as Ferrex now intendes,
 The wonted courteous lawes to messengers
 Are not obserued, which in iuste warre they vse.
 Shall I so hazard any one of mine? 45
 Shall I betray my trusty frendes³ to him,
 That haue⁴ disclosed his treason vnto me?
 Let him entreate that feares! I feare him not.
 Or shall I to the king, my father, send?
 Yea, and send now, while such a mother liues, 50

¹ *Inserted from C.; according to Co., it is also found in A.*

² A. C. nowe.

³ A. C. friende.

⁴ A. C. hath.

That loues my brother and that hateth me?
 Shall I geue leasure, by my fonde delays,
 To Ferrex to oppresse me all¹ vnware?
 I will not. But I will inuade his realme
 And seeke the traitour prince within his court. 55
 Mischiefe for mischiefe is a due reward :
 His wretched head shall pay the worthy price
 Of this his treason and his hate to me.
 Shall I abide, and treat², and send, and pray,
 And holde my yelden throate to traitours knife, 60
 While I, with valiant minde and conquering force,
 Might rid myselfe of foes and winne a realme?
 Yet rather, when I haue the wretches head,
 Then to the king, my father, will I send.
 The bootelesse case may yet appease his wrath ; 65
 If not, I will defend me as I may.

[*Exeunt PORREX and TYNDAR.*]

PHIL. Lo, here the end of these two youthful kings,
 The fathers death, the ruine of their realmes !³
 “ O most vnhappy state of counsellors
 “ That light on so vnhappy lordes and times 70
 “ That neither can their good aduise be heard,
 “ Yet must they beare the blames of ill successe.”
 But I will to the king, their father, haste,
 Ere this mischiefe come to the⁴ likely end,
 That, — if the mindfull wrath of wrekefull gods, 75
 Since mightie Ilions fall not yet appeased
 With these poore remnantes of the Troian name,
 Haue not determined by⁵ vnmoued fate
 Out of this realme to rase the Brittithe line, —
 By good aduise, by awe of fathers name, 80
 By force of wiser lordes, this kindled hate
 May yet be quentched ere it consume us all.

[*Exit.*]

¹ A. C. at.

⁴ A. C. that.

² A. C. abide, entreate.

⁵ A. C. determinedlie.

³ A. C. the reigne of their two realmes.

CHORUS.

When youth, not bridled with a guiding stay,
 Is left to randon of their owne delight
 And welds whole realmes by force of soueraign sway,¹
 Great is the daunger of vnmaistred might,
 Lest skillesse rage throwe downe with headlong fall
 Their lands, their states, their liues, them-selues and al. 6

When growing pride doth fill the swelling brest,
 And gredy lust doth rayse the climbing minde,
 Oh hardlie maye the perill be represt:
 Ne feare of angrie goddes, ne lawes kinde,
 Ne countries care can fiered hartes restrayne,
 Whan force hath armed enuie and disdaine. 12

When kinges of foresette will neglect the rede
 Of best aduise and yelde to pleasing tales
 That do their fansies noysome humour feede,
 Ne reason nor regarde of right auailles:
 Succeding heapes of plagues shall teach, to late,
 To learne the mischiefes of misguided state. 18

Fowle fall the traitour false that vndermines
 The loue of brethren to destroye them both;
 Wo to the prince that pliant eare enclynys
 And yeldes his mind to poysonous tale that floweth
 From flattering mouth, and woe to wretched land
 That wastes it-selfe with ciuil sworde in hand! 24

Loe thus it is, poyson in golde to take
 And holsome drinke in homely cuppe forsake.

End of the Second Act.

¹ A. C. fraie.

The Order and Signification of the Domme Shewe
before the Thirde Act.

Firste the musicke of flutes began to playe, during which came in vpon the stage a company of mourners all clad in blacke, betokening death and sorowe to ensue vpon the ill-aduised-misgouernement and discention of bretherne : as befell vpon the murder of Ferrex by his yonger brother. After the mourners had passed thryse about the stage, they departed ; and than the musicke ceased.¹

Actus Tertius. Scena Prima.

[*The court of GORBODUC.*]

GORBODUC, EUBULUS, AROSTUS [*are present at the opening of the scene.*]

PHILANDER [*and*] NUNTIUS [*enter later.*]²

GORB. O cruel Fates, O mindful wrath of goddes !
Whose vengeance neither Simois stayned³ streames
Flouing with bloud of Troian princes slaine,
Nor Phrygian fieldes made ranck with corpses dead
Of Asian kynges and lordes, can yet appease ; 5
Ne slaughter of vnhappie Pryams race,
Nor Ilions fall made leuell with the soile,
Can yet suffice ; but still-continued rage
Pursues our lyues, and from the farthest seas
Doth chase the issues of destroyed Troye. 10
" Oh, no man happie till his ende be seene."
If any flowing wealth and seemyng ioye
In present yeres might make a happy wight,
Happie was Hecuba, the wofullest wretch
That euer lyued to make a myrrour of ; 15
And happie Pryam with his noble sonnes ;
And happie I, till nowe, alas, I see

¹ Sm. gives reading of A. as caused ; Co. prints ceased, without note.

² Sm. drops the names of PHILANDER and the MESSENGER from the heading of the scene on the ground that they are not present at the beginning, but it is customary in plays of this date to give the names of all who appear during the scene.

³ A. C. streined.

And feele my most vnhappye wretchednesse!
 Beholde, my lordes, read ye this letter here!
 Loe, it contains the ruine of our ¹ realme, 20
 If timelie speede prouide not hastie helpe.
 Yet, O ye goddes, if euer wofull kyng
 Might moue ye ² kings of kinges, wreke it on me
 And on my sonnes, not on this giltesse realme!
 Send down your wasting flames from wrathful skies 25
 Te reue me and my sonnes the hatefull breath!
 Read, read, my lordes! This is the matter why
 I called ye nowe to haue your good aduyse.

The letter from DORDAN, the Counsellour of the elder prince.

EUBULUS readeth the letter :

“ My Soueraigne Lord, what I am loth to write,
 But lothest am to see, that I am forced 30
 By letters nowe to make you vnderstande :
 My lord Ferrex, your eldest sonne, misledde
 By traitorous fraude ³ of yong vntempred wittes,
 Assembleth force agaynst your yonger sonne,
 Ne can my counsell yet withdrawe the heate 35
 And furyous panges of hys enflamed head.
 Disdaine, sayth he, of his disheritance ⁴
 Armes him to wreke the great pretended wrong
 With ciuyll sword vpon his brothers life.
 If present helpe do not restraine this rage, 40
 This flame will wast your sonnes, your land and you.

Your Maiesties faithfull and most humble subiect,

DORDAN.”

AROS. O king, appease your grieffe and stay your plaint!
 Great is the matter, and a wofull case ;
 But timely knowledge may bring timely ⁵ helpe.
 Sende for them both vnto your presence here : 45

¹ C. this.

⁴ A. C. inheritaunce.

² A. C. you.

⁵ C. manly.

³ A. C. traitours framde.

The reuerence of your honour, age and state,
 Your graue aduice, the awe of fathers name,
 Shall quicklie knit agayne this broken peace.
 And, if in either of my lordes your sonnes
 Be suche vntamed and vnyelding pride 50
 As will not bende vnto your noble hests, —
 If Ferrex, the elder sonne, can beare no peere,
 Or Porrex, not content, aspires to more
 Than you him gaue aboue his natiue right, —
 Ioyne with the iuster side ; so shall you force 55
 Them to agree, and holde the lande in stay.

EUB. What meaneth this? Loe, yonder comes in hast
 Philander from my lord your yonger sonne.

[Enter PHILANDER.]

GORB. The goddess sende ioyfull newes! •

PHIL. The mightie Ioue
 Preserue your Maiestie, O noble king! 60

GORB. Philander, welcome! But how doth my son?

PHIL. Your sonne, sir, lyues, and healthie I him left.
 But yet, O king, the ¹ want of lustfull health
 Could not be halfe so griefefull to your Grace
 As these most wretched tidynge that I bryng. 65

GORB. O heauens, yet more? not ² ende of woes to me?

PHIL. Tyndar, O king, came lately from the court
 Of Ferrex to my lord your yonger sonne,
 And made reporte of great prepared store
 For ³ warre, and sayth that it is wholly ment 70
 Agaynst Porrex, for high disdayne that he
 Lyues now a king and egall in degree
 With him that claimeth to succede the whole
 As by due title of, descending right.
 Porrex is nowe so set on flaming fire, 75
 Partely with kindled rage of cruell wrath,
 Partely with hope to gaine a realme thereby,
 That he in hast prepareth to inuade

¹ A. C. this.

² A. C. no.

³ A. C. Of.

His brothers land, and with vnkindely warre
 Threatens the murder of your elder sonne ; 80
 Ne could I him perswade that first he should
 Send to his brother to demaunde the cause,
 Nor yet to you to staie this ¹ hatefull strife.
 Wherefore, sithe there no more I can be hearde,
 I come my-selfe now to enforme your Grace, 85
 And to beseche you, as you loue the life
 And safetie of your children and your realme,
 Now to employ your wisdome and your force
 To stay this mischiefe ere it be to late.

GORB. Are they in armes? would he not sende to ² me? 90
 Is this the honour of a fathers name?
 In vaine we trauaile to asswage their mindes,
 As if their hartes, whome neither brothers loue
 Nor fathers awe nor kingdomes cares can moue,
 Our counsels could withdraw from raging heat. 95
 Ioue slay them both and end the cursed line!
 For, though perhappes feare of such mightie force
 As I, my lordes, ioyned with your noble aides,
 Maye yet raise shall repress ³ their present heate,
 The secret grudge and malice will remayne. 100
 The fire not quenched, but kept in close restraint,
 Fedde still within, breakes forth with double flame.
 Their death and myne must peaze the angrie gods.

PHIL. Yelde not, O king, so much to weake dispeire ;
 Your sonnes yet lyue, and long, I trust, they shall. 105
 If Fates had taken you from earthly life
 Before beginning of this ciuyll strife,
 Perhaps your sonnes in their vnmaistered youth,
 Loose from regarde of any lyuing wight,
 Would runne on headlong, with vnbridled race, 110
 To their owne death, and ruine of this realme ;
 But, sith the gods, that haue the care for kinges,
 Of thinges and times dispose the order so
 That in your life this kindled flame breakes forth,

¹ A. C. his.² A. C. for.³ A. expresse.

While yet your lyfe, your wisdome and your power 115
 May stay the growing mischiefe and repressé
 The fierie blaze of their inkindled¹ heate,
 It seemes — and so ye ought to deeme thereof —
 That louyng Ioue hath tempred so the time
 Of this debate to happen in your dayes 120
 That you yet lyuing may the same appeaze
 And adde it to the glory of your latter² age,
 And they, your³ sonnes, may learne to liue in peace.
 Beware, O king, the greatest harme of all,
 Lest by your waylefull plaints your hastened death 125
 Yelde larger⁴ roume unto their⁵ growing rage.
 Preserue your life, the onely hope of stay.
 And, if your Highnes herein list to vse
 Wisdome or force, counsell or knightly aide,
 Loe, we, our persons, powers and lyues, are yours : 130
 Use us tyll death, O king ! we are your owne.
 EUB. Loe, here the perill that was erst forsene,
 When you, O king, did first deuide your lande
 And yelde your present reigne vnto your sonnes.
 But now, O noble prince, now is no time 135
 To waile and plaine, and wast your wofull life.
 Now is the time for present good aduise.
 Sorow doth darke the iudgement of the wytte.
 “ The hart vnbroken, and the courage free
 “ From feble faintnesse of bootelesse despeire, 140
 “ Doth either ryse to safetie or renowme
 “ By noble valure of vnuanquisht minde
 “ Or yet doth perishe in more happy sort.”
 Your Grace may send to either of your sonnes
 Some one both wise and noble personage, 145
 Which with good counsell and with weightie name
 Of father shall present before their eyes

¹ C. vnkindled.

⁴ Co. gives B. as large; but Sm. has larger.

² The omission of latter would reduce this Alexandrine to a decasyllabic line, but the word appears in all the editions, as Co. points out.

³ C. your; A. B. our.

⁵ Co. gives C. as this.

Your hest, your life, your safetie and their owne,
 The present mischiefe of their deadly strife ;
 And, in the while, assemble you the force 150
 Which your commaundement and the spedy hast
 Of all my lordes here present can prepare.
 The terrour of your mightie power shall stay
 The rage of both, or yet of one at lest.

[Enter NUNTIUS.]

NUNT. O king, the greatest grieffe that euer prince dyd
 heare,¹ 155
 That euer wofull messenger did tell,
 That euer wretched lande hath sene before,
 I bryng to you. Porrex, your yonger sonne,
 With soden force inuaded hath the lande
 That you to Ferrex did allotte to rule, 160
 And with his owne most bloody hand he hath
 His brother slaine, and doth possesse his realme.

GORB. O Heauens, send down the flames of your reuenge !
 Destroy, I say, with flash of wrekefull fier
 The traitour sonne, and then the wretched sire ! 165
 But let vs go, that yet perhappes I may
 Die with reuenge, and peaze the hatefull gods.

[Exeunt.]

CHORUS.

The lust of kingdome² knowes no sacred faith,
 No rule of reason, no regarde of right,
 No kindly loue, no feare of heauens wrath ;
 But with contempt of goddes, and mans despise, 4
 Through blodie slaughter doth prepare the waies
 To fatall scepter and accursed reigne.
 The sonne so lothes the fathers lingering daies,
 Ne dreads his hand in brothers blode to staine. 8

¹ *This Alexandrine also is easy to reduce.*

² A. C. kingdomes.

O wretched prince, ne doest thou yet recorde
 The yet fresh murthers done within the lande¹
 Of thy forefathers, when the cruell sworde
 Bereft Morgan his life with cosyns hand? 12
 Thus fatall plagues pursue the giltie race,
 Whose murderous hand, imbrued with giltlesse blood,
 Askes vengeance still² before the heauens face,
 With endlesse mischiefes on the cursed broode. 16
 The wicked childe thus³ bringes to wofull sire
 The mournefull plaintes, to wast his very⁴ life.
 Thus do the cruell flames of ciuyll fier
 Destroy the parted reigne with hatefull strife.
 And hence doth spring the well from which doth flow
 The dead black streames of mourning, plaints and woe. 22

End of the Third Act.

The Order and Signification of the Domme Shew before the Fourth Act.

First the musick of howboies began to plaie, during which there came from vnder the stage, as though out of hell, three Furies, Alecto, Megera and Ctesiphone,⁵ clad in black garmentes sprinkled with bloud and flames, their bodies girt with snakes, their heds spred with serpentis in-stead of heare; the one bearing in her hand a snake, the other a whip, and the third a burning firebrand; ech driuing before them a king and a queene, which, moued by furies, vnnaturally had slaine their owne children: the names of the kings and queenes were these, Tantalus, Medea, Athamas, Ino, Cambises, Althea. After that the Furies and these had passed about the stage thrise, they departed; and than the musicke ceased. Hereby was signified the vnnaturall murders to follow, that is to say, Porrex slaine by his owne mother, and of King Gorboduc and Queene Viden, killed by their owne subiectes.

¹ A. lands.

⁴ A. wery; C. weary.

² A. C. *omit* still.

⁵ *So* A. B. C.

³ A. C. this.

Actus Quartus. Scena Prima.

[A room in GORBODUC'S palace.]

VIDEN sola.

[VID.] Why should I lyue, and linger forth my time
 In longer life to double my distresse?
 O me most wofull wight, whom no mishappe
 Long ere this day could haue bereued hence!
 Mought not these handes by fortune or by fate 5
 Haue perst this brest, and life with iron reft?
 Or in this palace here, where I so long
 Haue spent my daies, could not that happie houre
 Once, once haue hapt in which these hugie frames
 With death by fall might haue oppressed me? 10
 Or should not this most hard and cruell soile,
 So oft where I haue prest my wretched steps,
 Sometime had ruthe of myne accursed life,
 To rende in twayne, and ¹ swallow me therin?
 So had my bones possessed now in peace 15
 Their happie graue within the closed grounde,
 And greadie wormes had gnawen this pyned hart
 Without my feeling payne; so should not now
 This lyuing brest remayne the ruthefull tombe
 Wherin my hart yelden to death is graued, 20
 Nor driery thoughts, with panges of pining grieffe,
 My dolefull minde had not afflicted thus.
 O my beloued sonne, O my swete childe,
 My deare Ferrex, my ioye, my lyues delyght!
 Is my beloued ² sonne, is my sweete childe, 25
 My deare Ferrex, my ioye, my lyues delight,
 Murdered with cruell death? O hatefull wretch,
 O heynous traitour both to heauen and earth!
 Thou, Porrex, thou this damned dede hast wrought!

¹ B. omits and.² A. C. welbeloued.

Thou, Porrex, thou shalt dearely bye ¹ the same! 30
 Traitour to kinne and kinde, to sire and me,
 To thine owne fleshe, and traitour to thy-selfe,
 The gods on thee in hell shall wreke their ² wrath,
 And here in earth this hand shall take reuenge
 On thee, Porrex, thou false and caitife wight! 35
 If after bloud so eigre were thy thirst,
 And murderous minde had so possessed thee,
 If such hard hart of rocke and stonie flint
 Liue ³ in thy brest that nothing els could like
 Thy cruell tyrantes thought but death and bloud, 40
 Wilde sauage beasts, mought not their ⁴ slaughter serue
 To fede thy gredie will, and in the middest
 Of their entrailes to staine thy deadly handes
 With bloud deserued, and drinke thereof thy fill?
 Or, if nought els but death and bloud of man 45
 Mought please thy lust, could none in Brittain land,
 Whose hart betorne ⁵ out of his panting ⁶ brest
 With thine owne hand, or worke what death thou wouldest,
 Suffice to make a sacrifice to peaze ⁷
 That deadly minde and murderous thought in thee, 50
 But he who in the selfesame wombe was wrapped
 Where thou in dismall hower receiuedst life?
 Or, if nedes, nedes, thy ⁸ hand must ⁹ slaughter make,
 Moughtest thou not haue reached a mortall wound,
 And with thy sword haue pearsed this cursed wombe 55
 That the accursed Porrex brought to light,
 And geuen me a iust reward therefore?
 So Ferrex yet ¹⁰ sweete life mought haue enjoyed,
 And to his aged father comfort brought
 With some yong sonne, in whom they both might liue. 60

¹ A. C. aby.

⁶ A. louyng; C. louing.

² Co. *gives* B. *as the*; *but* Sm. *has* their.

³ A. lyued; C. liued.

⁷ A. appeaze; C. appease.

⁴ A. C. the.

⁸ C. this.

⁵ Co. *prints* be torne.

⁹ C. might.

¹⁰ Sm. *gives* A. C. *as if*; Co. *prints* A. *as of*.

But whereunto waste I this ruthfull speche
 To thee that hast thy brothers blood thus shed?
 Shall I still thinke that from this wombe thou sprong?
 That I thee bare? or take thee for my sonne?
 No, traitour, no! I thee refuse for mine. 65
 Murderer, I thee renounce; thou art not mine.
 Neuer, O wretch, this wombe conceiued thee,
 Nor neuer bode I painfull throwes for thee.
 Changeling to me thou art and not my childe,
 Nor to no wight that sparke of pitie knew. 70
 Ruthelesse, vnkinde, monster of natures worke,
 Thou neuer suckt the milke of womans brest,
 But from thy birth the cruell tigers¹ teates
 Haue nursed thee;² nor yet of fleshe and blood
 Formde is thy hart, but of hard iron wrought; 75
 And wilde and desert woods bredde thee to life.
 But canst thou hope to scape my iust reuenge?
 Or that these handes will not be wrooke³ on thee?
 Doest thou not know that Ferrex mother liues,
 That loued him more dearly than her-selfe? 80
 And doth she liue, and is not venged on thee? [Exit.]

Actus Quartus. Scena Secunda.

[The court of GORBODUC.]

GORBODUC [and] AROSTUS. EUBULUS, PORREX [and] MARCELLA [enter later].

GORB. We marvell much wherto this lingring stay
 Falles out so long. Porrex vnto our court
 By order of our letters is returned,
 And Eubulus receaued from vs by hest
 At his arrivall here to geue him charge 5
 Before our presence straight to make repaire, —
 And yet we haue⁴ no worde whereof he staves.

AROS. Lo, where he commes and Eubulus with him.

¹ A. C. tigres.

³ A. wrekte.

² A. C. omit thee.

⁴ C. heare.

[Enter EUBULUS and PORREX.]

EUB. According to your Highnesse hest to me,
Here haue I Porrex brought euen in such sort 10
As from his wried horse he did alight,
For that your Grace did will such hast therein.

GORB. We like and praise this spedy will in you
To worke the thing that to your charge we gaue.
Porrex, if we so farre should swarue from kinde 15
And from those¹ boundes which lawe of nature sets
As thou hast done by vile and wretched deede
In cruell murder of thy brothers life,
Our present hand could stay no longer² time,
But straight should bathe this blade in bloud of thee, 20
As iust reuenge of thy detested crime.
No, we should not offend the lawe of kinde
If now this sworde of ours did slay thee here ;
For thou hast murdered him whose heinous death
Euen natures force doth moue vs to reuenge 25
By bloud againe, and³ iustice forceth vs
To measure death for death, thy due desert.
Yet, sithens thou art our childe, and sith as yet
In this hard case what worde thou canst alledge
For thy defence by vs hath not bene heard, 30
We are content to stave our will for that
Which iustice biddes vs presently to worke,
And geue thee leaue to vse thy speche at full,
If ought thou haue to lay for thine excuse.

PORR. Neither, O king, I can or will denie 35
But that this hand from Ferrex life hath reft, —
Which fact how much my dolefull hart doth waile,
Oh would it mought as full appeare to sight
As inward grieffe doth poure it forth to me !
So yet, perhappes, if euer ruthefull hart, 40
Melting in tears within a manly brest,
Through depe repentance of his bloody fact,

¹ C. these.

² A. lenger.

³ A. but.

If euer grieffe, if euer wofull man
 Might moue regreite with sorrowe of his fault,
 I thinke the torment of my mournefull case, 45
 Knowen to your Grace as I do feele the same,
 Would force euen wrath her-selfe to pitie me.
 But, as the water troubled with the mudde
 Shewes not the face which els the eye should see,
 Euen so your irefull minde with stirred thought 50
 Cannot so perfectly discerne my cause.
 But this vnhappe, amongst so many happes,
 I must content me with, most wretched man,
 That to my-selfe I must reserue¹ my woe
 In pining thoughtes of mine accursed fact, 55
 Since I may not shewe here² my smallest grieffe
 Such as it is, and as my brest endures.
 Which I esteeme the greatest miserie
 Of all missehappes that fortune now can send :
 Not that I rest in hope with plaint and teares 60
 To³ purchase life ; for to the goddes I clepe
 For true recorde of this my faithfull speche, —
 Neuer this hart shall haue the thoughtfull dread
 To die the death that by your Graces dome,
 By iust desert, shall be pronounced to me, 65
 Nor neuer shall this tongue once spend the⁴ speche
 Pardon to craue, or seeke by sute to liue.
 I meane not this as though I were not touchde
 With care of dreadfull death, or that I helde
 Life in contempt ; but that I know the minde 70
 Stoupes to no dread, although the fleshe be fraile.
 And, for my gilt, I yelde the same so great
 As in my-selfe I finde a feare to sue
 For graunt of life.

GORB. In vaine, O wretch, thou shewest
 A wofull hart! Ferrex now lies in graue, 75
 Slaine by thy hand.

¹ A. C. referre.³ A. C. Should.⁴ A. C. this.² Co. says B. omits here ; but Sm. prints it, without remark.

By poysons force ; and had bereft me so,
 If mine owne seruant, hired to this fact
 And moued by trouth with hate¹ to worke the same,
 In² time had not bewrayed it vnto me. 115

Whan thus I sawe the knot of loue vnknitte,
 All honest league and faithfull promise broke,
 The law of kinde and trouth thus rent in twaine,
 His hart on mischief set, and in his brest
 Blacke treason hid, then, then did I despeire 120

That euer time could winne him frend to me.
 Then saw I how he smiled with slaying knife
 Wrapped vnder cloke, then saw I depe deceite
 Lurke in his face and death prepared for me.
 Euen nature moued me than to holde my life 125

More deare to me than his, and bad this hand, —
 Since by his life my death must nedes ensue,
 And by his death my life to³ be preserued, —
 To shed his bloud, and seeke my safetie so ;
 And wisdomed willed me without protract 130

In spedie wise to put the same in vre.
 Thus haue I tolde the cause that moued me
 To worke my brothers death ; and so I yeld
 My life, my death, to iudgement of your Grace.

GORB. Oh cruel wight, should any cause preuaile 135
 To make thee staine thy hands with brothers bloud?

But what of thee we will resolute doe
 Shall yet remaine vnknown. Thou in the meane
 Shalt from our royall presence banisht be
 Untill our princely pleasure furder shall 140

To thee be shewed. Depart therefore our sight,
 Accursed childe! [*Exit PORREX.*] What cruell destenie,
 What froward fate hath sorted vs this chauce,
 That euen in those where we should comfort find,
 Where our delight now in our aged dayes 145
 S[h]ould rest and be, euen there our onely grieffe

¹ Dods. Co. say B. omits hate.

² A. If.

³ Dods. Co. say B. has mote.

And depest sorrowes to abridge our life,
Most pyning cares and deadly thoughts do grow?¹

AROS. Your Grace should now in these graue yeres of
yours

Haue found ere this the price of mortall ioyes : 150

How short they be, how fading here in earth,

How full of change, how brittle our estate,

Of nothing sure saue onely of the death,

To whom both man and all the world doth owe

Their end at last. Neither should² natures power 155

In other sort against your hart preuaile

Than as the naked hand whose stroke assayes

The armed brest, where force doth light in vaine.

GORB. Many can yelde right sage and graue³ aduise

Of pacient sprite to others wrapped in woe, 160

And can in speche both rule and conquere kinde,

Who, if by prooffe they might feele natures force,

Would shew them-selues men, as they are in-dede,

Which now wil nedes be gods. But what doth meane

The sory chere of her that here doth come? 165

[Enter MARCELLA.]

MARC. Oh where is ruth or where is pitie now?

Whither is gentle hart and mercy fled?

Are they exiled out of our stony brestes,

Neuer to make returne? Is all the world

Drowned in bloud and soncke in crueltie? 170

If not in women mercy may be found,

If not, alas! within the mothers brest

To her owne childe, to her owne fleshe and bloud,

If ruthe be banished thence, if pitie there

May haue no place, if there no gentle hart 175

Do liue and dwell, where should we seeke it then?

GORB. Madame, alas! what meanes your woful tale?

MARC. O sillie woman I, why to this houre

Haue Kinde and Fortune thus deferred my breath,

¹ A. C. graue.

² A. C. shall.

³ A. C. graue and sage.

- That I should liue to see this dolefull day? 180
 Will euer wight beleue that such hard hart
 Could rest within the cruell mothers brest
 With her owne hand to slay her onely sonne?
 But out! alas! these eyes behelde the same,
 They saw the driery sight, and are become 185
 Most ruthfull recordes of the bloody fact.
 Porrex, alas! is by his mother slaine,
 And with her hand — a wofull thing to tell! —
 While slumbring on his carefull bed he restes,
 His hart, stabde¹ in with knife, is reft of life. 190
 GORB. O Eubulus, oh draw this sword of ours,
 And pearce this hart with speed! O hatefull light,
 O lothsome life, O sweete and welcome death!
 Deare Eubulus, worke this we thee besech.
 EUB. Pacient your Grace, perhappes he liueth yet, 195
 With wound receaued, but not of certaine death.
 GORB. O let us then repayre vnto the place,
 And see if Porrex liue, or² thus be slaine.

[*Exeunt GORBODUC and EUBULUS.*]

- MARC. Alas, he liueth not! It is to true
 That, with these eyes, of him a perelesse prince, 200
 Sonne to a king, and in the flower of youth,
 Euen with a twinke³ a senselesse stocke I saw.
 AROS. O damned deede!
 MARC. But heare hys⁴ ruthefull end!
 The noble prince, pearst with the sodeine wound,
 Out of his wretched slumber hastely start, 205
 Whose strength now fayling, straight he ouerthrew, —
 When in the fall his eyes euen new⁵ vnclosed
 Behelde the queene, and cryed to her for helpe.
 We then, alas! the ladies which that time
 Did there attend, seing that heynous deede, 210

¹ A. C. stalde.

³ Dods. Co. say B. has twinkle.

² A. C. if that Porrex or.

⁴ A. C. this.

⁵ Dods. Co. say B. has now; Sm. says B. new, C. now.

And hearing him oft call the wretched name
 Of mother, and to crye to her for aide
 Whose direfull hand gaue him the mortall wound,
 Pitying — alas ! for nought els could we do, —
 His ruthefull end, ranne to the wofull bedde, 215
 Dispoyled straight his brest, and, all we might,
 Wiped in vaine with napkins next at hand
 The sodeine streames of bloud that flushed fast
 Out of the gaping wound. O what a looke,
 O what a ruthefull stedfast eye, me thought, 220
 He fixt vpon my face, which to my death
 Will neuer part fro me, when with a braide
 A deepe-fet sigh he gaue, and therewithall
 Claspng his handes, to heauen he cast his sight !
 And straight — pale death pressing within his face — 225
 The flying ghost his mortall corpes forsooke.

AROS. Neuer did age bring forth so vile a fact!

MARC. O hard and cruell happe, that thus assigned
 Unto so worthy a wight so wretched end !
 But most hard, cruell hart, that could consent 230
 To lend the hatefull destenies that hand
 By which, alas, so heynous crime was wrought !
 O queene of adamant, O marble brest,
 If not the fauour of his comely face,
 If not his princely chere and countenance, 235
 His valiant actiue armes, his manly brest,
 If not his faire and seemely personage,
 His noble limmes in such proportion¹ cast
 As would have wrapt a sillie womans thought, —
 If this mought not haue moued thy bloody hart 240
 And that most cruell hand the wretched weapon
 Euen to let fall, and kiste him in the face,
 With teares for ruthe to reauē such one by death, —
 Should nature yet consent to slay her sonne ?
 O mother, thou to murder thus thy childe ! 245
 Euen Ioue with iustice must with lightning flames

¹ A. preparacion.

From heauen send downe some strange reuenge on thee.
 Ah noble prince, how oft haue I behelde
 Thee mounted on thy fierce and traumpling stede,
 Shining in armour bright before the tilt, 250
 And with thy mistresse sleue tied on thy helme,
 And charge thy staffe to please thy ladies eye,
 That bowed the head-peece of thy frendly foe!
 How oft in armes on horse to bend the mace!
 How oft in armes on foote to breake the sworde! 255
 Which neuer now these eyes may see againe.

AROS. Madame, alas, in vaine these plaints are shed!
 Rather with me depart, and helpe to swage¹
 The thoughtfull griefes that in the aged king
 Must needes by nature growe, by death of this 260
 His onely sonne, whom he did holde so deare.

MARC. What wight is that which saw that I did see,
 And could refraine to waile with plaint and teares?
 Not I, alas! that hart is not in me.
 But let vs goe, for I am greued anew 265
 To call to minde the wretched fathers woe. [Exeunt.]

CHORUS.

Whan greedy lust in royall seate to reigne
 Hath reft all care of goddes and eke of men,
 And cruell hart, wrath, treason and disdaine
 Within² ambitious brest are lodged, then
 Beholde how mischiefe wide her-selfe displayes,
 And with the brothers hand the brother slayes. 6

When bloud thus shed doth staine the³ heauens face,
 Crying to Ioue for vengeance of the deede,
 The mightie God euen moueth from his place,
 With wrath to wreke: then sendes he forth with spede
 The dreadfull Furies, daughters of the night,
 With serpent girt, carying the whip of ire,
 With heare of stinging snakes, and shining bright

¹ A. C. asswage.² A. C. Within the.³ A. C. this.

With flames and bloud, and with a brand of fire.
 These, for reuenge of wretched murder done,
 Do make¹ the mother kill her onely sonne. 16

Blood asketh blood, and death must death requite :
 Ioue by his iust and euerlasting dome
 Iustly hath euer so requited it.

The² times before recorde, and times to come
 Shall finde it true, and so doth present prooffe
 Present before our eyes for our behoofe. 22

O happy wight that suffres not the snare
 Of murderous minde to tangle him in blood ;
 And happy he that can in time beware
 By others harmes, and turne it to his good ;
 But wo to him that, fearing not to offend,
 Doth serue his lust and will not see the end. 28

End of the Fourth Act.

The Order and Signification of the Domme Shew before the Fifth Act.

First the drommes and flutes began to sound, during which there came forth vpon the stage a company of hargabusiers and of armed men all in order of battaile. These, after their peeces discharged, and that the armed men had three times marched about the stage, departed ; and then the drommes and fluits did cease. Hereby was signified tumults, rebellions, armes and ciuill warres to follow : as fell in the realme of Great Brittain, which by the space of fiftie yeares and more continued in ciuill warre betwene the Nobilitie after the death of King Gorboduc and of his issues, for want of certayne limitation in the³ succession of the crowne, till the time of Dunwallo Mollmutius, who reduced the land to monarchie.

Actus Quintus. Scena Prima.

[*The court of GORBODUC.*]

CLOTYN. MANDUD. GWENARD. FERGUS. EUBULUS.

CLO. Did euer age bring forth such tirants harts?
 The brother hath bereft the brothers life,

¹ C. Dooth cause.

² A. C. These.

³ B. omits the.

The mother she hath died her cruell handes
 In bloud of her owne sonne, and now at last
 The people, loe! forgetting trouth and loue, 5
 Contemning quite both law and loyall hart,
 Euen they haue slaine their soueraigne lord and queene.

MAND. Shall this their traitorous crime vnpunished rest?
 Euen yet they cease not, caryed on¹ with rage,
 In their rebellious routes to threaten still 10
 A new bloud-shed vnto the princes kinne,
 To slay them all, and to vproote the race
 Both of the king and queene: so are they moued
 With Porrex death, wherin they falsely charge
 The giltlesse king, without desert at² all, 15
 And traitorously haue murdered him therfore,
 And eke the queene.

GWEN. Shall subjectes dare with force
 To worke reuenge vpon their princes fact?
 Admit the worst that may, — as sure in this
 The deede was fowle, the queene to slay her sonne, — 20
 Shall yet the subiect seeke to take the sworde,
 Arise agaynst his lord, and slay his king?
 O wretched state, where those rebellious hartes
 Are not rent out euen from their liuing breastes,
 And with the body throwen vnto the foules 25
 As carrion foode, for terrour of the rest!

FERG. There can no punishment be thought to great
 For this so greuous cryme; let spede therfore
 Be vsed therin, for it behoueth so.

EUB. Ye all, my lordes, I see, consent in one, 30
 And I as one consent with ye in all.
 I holde it more than neede with sharpest law
 To punish this³ tumultuous bloody rage;
 For nothing more may shake the common state
 Than sufferance of vproares without redresse, 35
 Wherby how some kingdomes of mightie power,

¹ A. C. out.³ A. C. the.² Dods. Co. say B. omits at.

After great conquestes made, and flourishing
 In fame and wealth, haue ben to ruine brought,
 I pray to Ioue that we may rather wayle
 Such happe in them than wisse in our-selues. 40
 Eke fully with the duke my minde agrees,
¹ That no cause serues wherby the subiect maye
 Call to accompt the doynge of his prince,
 Muche lesse in bloode by sworde to worke reuenge,
 No more then maye the hande cut of the heade. 45
 In acte nor speache, no, not in secrete thoughte,
 The subiect maye rebell against his lorde,
 Or iudge of him that sittes in Cæsars seate,
 With grudging mind to² damne those he mislikes.
 Though kinges forget to gouerne as they ought, 50
 Yet subiectes must obey as they are bounde.
 But now, my lordes, before ye farder wade,
 Or spend your speach what sharpe reuenge shall fall
 By iustice plague on these rebellious wightes,
 Me thinkes ye rather should first search the way 55
 By which in time the rage of this vproare
 Mought be repressed and these great tumults ceased.
 Euen yet the life of Brittain land doth hang
 In traitours balaunce of vnegall weight.
 Thinke not, my lordes, the death of Gorboduc, 60
 Nor yet Videnæs bloud will cease their rage.
 Euen our owne lyues, our wiues and children deare,³
 Our countrey, dearest of all, in daunger standes
 Now to be spoiled, now, now, made desolate,
 And by our-selues a conquest to ensue. 65
 For, geue once swey vnto the peoples lustes
 To rush forth on, and stay them not in time,
 And, as the streame that rowleth downe the hyll,
 So will they headlong ronne with raging thoughtes
 From bloud to bloud, from mischiefe vnto moe, 70
 To ruine of the realm, them-selues, and all, —

¹ *Lines 42-49 omitted in B.; see Notes.*

² A. C. doo.

³ A. C. omit deare.

So giddy are the common peoples mindes,
 So glad of change, more wauering than the sea.
 Ye see, my lordes, what strength these rebelles haue,
 What hugie nombre is assembled still ; 75
 For, though the traiterous fact for which they rose
 Be wrought and done, yet lodge they still in field ;
 So that how farre their furies yet will stretch
 Great cause we haue to dreade. That we may seeke
 By present battaile to repress their power, 80
 Speede must we vse to leuie force therfore ;
 For either they forthwith will mischiefe worke
 Or their rebellious roares forthwith will¹ cease :
 These violent thinges may haue no lasting long.²
 Let vs therfore vse this for present helpe, 85
 Perswade by gentle speach, and offre grace
 With gift of pardon, saue vnto the chiefe,
 And that vpon condicion that forthwith
 They yelde the captaines of their enterprise,
 To beare such guerdon of their traiterous fact 90
 As may be both due vengeance to them-selues
 And holsome terrour to posteritie.
 This shall, I thinke, scatter³ the greatest part
 That now are holden with desire of home,
 Weried in field with cold of winters nightes, 95
 And some, no doubt, striken with dread of law.
 When this is once proclamed, it shall make
 The captaines to mistrust the multitude,
 Whose safetie biddes them to betray their heads, —
 And so much more bycause the rascall routes 100
 In thinges of great and perillous attemptes
 Are neuer trustie to the noble race.
 And, while we treat and stand on termes of grace,
 We shall both stay their furies rage the while
 And eke gaine time, whose onely helpe sufficeth 105
 Withouten warre to vanquish rebelles power.

¹ Dods. Co. *say C. has must.*² A. C. *londe.*³ A. C. *flatter.*

In the meane while make you in redynes
Such band of horsemen as ye may prepare.
Horsemen, you know, are not the commons strength
But are the force and store of noble men ; 110
Wherby the vnchosen and vnarmed sort
Of skillesse¹ rebelles, whome none other power
But nombre makes to be of dreadfull force,
With sodeyne brunt may quickly be opprest.
And, if this gentle meane of proffered grace 115
With stubborne hartes cannot so farre auayle
As to asswage their desperate courages,
Then do I wish such slaughter to be made
As present age and eke posteritie
May be adrad with horroure of reuenge 120
That iustly then shall on these rebelles fall.
This is, my lords,² the sum of mine aduise.

CLO. Neither this case admittes debate at large,
And, though it did, this speach that hath ben sayd
Hath well abridged the tale I would haue tolde. 125
Fully with Eubulus do I consent
In all that he hath sayd ; and, if the same
To you, my lordes, may seeme for best aduise,
I wish that it should streight be put in vre.

MAND. My lordes, than let vs presently depart 130
And follow this that liketh vs so well.

[*Exeunt all but FERGUS.*]

FERG. If euer time to gaine a kingdome here
Were offred man, now it is offred mee.
The realme is reft both of their king and queene,
The ofspring of the prince is slaine and dead, 135
No issue now remaines, the heire vnknownen ;
The people are in armes and mutynies ;
The nobles they are busied how to cease
These great rebellious tumultes and vproares ;
And Brittain land, now desert left alone 140

¹ A. C. skillishe.

² So A. C. ; B. lord.

Amyd these broyles, vncertayne where to rest,
 Offers her-selfe vnto that noble hart
 That will or dare pursue to beare her crowne.
 Shall I that am the Duke of Albanye,
 Discended from that line of noble bloud 145
 Which hath so long florished in worthy fame
 Of valiaunt hartes, such as in noble brestes
 Of right should rest aboue the baser sort,
 Refuse to venture ¹ life to winne a crowne?
 Whom shall I finde enmies that will withstand 150
 My fact herein, if I attempt by armes
 To seeke the same ² now in these times of broyle?
 These dukes power can hardly well appease
 The people that already are in armes.
 But, if perhappes my force be once in field, 155
 Is not my strength in power aboue the best
 Of all these lordes now left in Brittain land?
 And, though they should match me with power of men,
 Yet doubtfull is the chaunce of battailles ioyned.
 If victors of the field we may depart, 160
 Ours is the scepter then of Great Brittain;
 If slayne amid the playne this body lye,³
 Mine enmies yet shall not deny me this,
 But that I dyed geuing the noble charge
 To hazarde life for conquest of a crowne. 165
 Forthwith therefore will I in post depart
 To Albanye and raise in armour there
 All power I can; and here my secret friendes
 By secret practise shall sollicite still
 To seeke to wynne to me the peoples hartes. 170

*Exit.*¹ A. C. aduenture.² A. C. Fame.³ A. C. be.

Actus Quintus. Scena Secunda.

[*The court.*]EUBULUS [*alone*]. CLOTYN, MANDUD, GWENARD, AROSTUS, [*and*] NUNTIUS [*enter later*].

[EUB.] O Ioue, how are these peoples harts abusde!
 What blind fury thus headlong caries them,
 That, though so many bookes, so many rolles,
 Of auncient time recorde what greuous plagues
 Light on these rebelles aye, and though so oft
 Their eares haue heard their aged fathers tell
 What iuste reward these traitours still receyue, —
 Yea, though them-selues haue sene depe death and bloud
 By strangling cord and slaughter of the sword
 To such assigned, yet can they not beware,
 Yet can ¹ not stay their lewde ² rebellious handes,
 But, suffring too ³ fowle treason to distaine
 Their wretched myndes, forget their loyall hart,
 Reiect all truth, and rise against their prince?
 A ruthefull case, that those, whom duties bond,⁴
 Whom grafted law by nature, truth and faith
 Bound to preserue their countrey and their king,
 Borne to defend their common-wealth and prince, —
 Euen they should geue consent thus to subuert
 Thee,⁵ Brittain land, and from thy ⁵ wombe should spring,⁶
 O native soile, those that will needs destroy
 And ruyne thee, and eke them-selues in fine!
 For lo, when once the dukes had offred grace
 Of pardon sweete, the multitude missledde
 By traitorous fraude of their vngracious heades,
 One sort that saw the dangerous sucresse
 Of stubborne standing in rebellious warre
 And knew the difference of princes power

¹ A. C. can they.⁴ A. C. bounde.² A. C. omit lewde.⁵ A. C. the.³ A. to; C. too; B. loe.⁶ A. C. bring.

From headlesse nombre of tumultuous routes,
 Whom common countreies care and priuate feare 30
 Taught to repent the errour¹ of their rage,
 Layde handes vpon the captaines of their band
 And brought them bound vnto the mightie dukes ;
 An-other² sort, not trusting yet so well
 The truth of pardon, or mistrusting more 35
 Their owne offence than that they could conceiue
 Such hope of pardon for so foule misdede,
 Or for that they their captaines could not yeld,
 Who, fearing to be yelded, fled before,
 Stale home by silence of the secret night ; 40
 The thirde, vnhappy and enraged³ sort
 Of desperate hartes, who, stained in princes bloud,
 From trayterous furour could not be withdrawen
 By loue, by law, by grace, ne yet by feare,
 By proffered life, ne yet by threatned death, 45
 With mindes hopelesse of life, dreadlesse of death,
 Carelesse of countrey and awelesse of God,
 Stoode bent to fight as Furies did them moue,
 With violent death to close their traiterous life.
 These all by power of horsemen were opprest, 50
 And with reuenging sworde slayne in the field
 Or with the strangling cord hangd on the tree,
 Where yet their⁴ carryen carcasses do preach⁵
 The fruites that rebelles reape of their vproares
 And of the murder of their sacred prince. 55
 But loe, where do approche the noble dukes
 By whom these tumults haue ben thus appeasde.

[Enter CLOTYN, MANDUD, GWENARD and AROSTUS.]

CLO. I thinke the world will now at length beware,
 And feare to put on armes agaynst their prince.

MAND. If not, those trayterous hartes that dare⁶ rebell, 60

¹ A. C. terrour.

⁴ A. C. the.

² B. And other.

⁵ A. C. proche.

³ A. C. vnraged.

⁶ A. doo.

Let them beholde the wide and hugie fieldes
 With bloud and bodies spread of¹ rebelles slayne,
 The lofty² trees clothed with the³ corpses dead
 That strangled with the corde do hang theron.

AROS. A iust rewarde, such as all times before 65
 Haue euer lotted to those wretched folkes.

GWEN. But what meanes he that commeth here so fast?

[Enter NUNTIUS.]

NUNT. My lordes, as dutie and my trouth doth moue
 And of my countrey worke a⁴ care in mee,
 That, if the spending of my breath auailed 70
 To do the seruice that my hart desires,
 I would not shunne to imbrace a present death,
 So haue I now, in that wherein I thought
 My trauayle mought performe some good effect,
 Ventred my life to bring these tydinges here: 75
 Fergus, the mightie Duke of Albanye,
 Is now in armes, and lodgeth in the fielde
 With twentie thousand men ; hether he bendes
 His spedy marche, and mindes to inuade the crowne ;
 Dayly he gathereth strength, and spreads abrode 80
 That to this realme no certeine heire remaines,
 That Brittain land is left without a guide,
 That he the scepter seekes for nothing els
 But to preserue the people and the land,
 Which now remaine as ship without a sterne. 85
 Loe, this is that which I haue here to say.⁵

CLO. Is this his fayth? and shall he falsely thus
 Abuse the vauntage of vnhappie times?
 O wretched land, if his outrageous pride,
 His cruell and vntempred wilfulnesse, 90
 His deepe dissembling shewes of false pretence,
 Should once attaine the crowne of Brittain land!

¹ A. C. with.

⁴ A. C. and.

² A. C. lustie.

⁵ A. C. hereto saide.

³ A. C. omit the.

Let vs, my lordes, with timely force resist
 The new attempt of this our common foe,
 As we would quench the flames of common fire. 95

MAND. Though we remaine without a certain prince
 To weld the realme or guide the wandring rule,
 Yet now the common mother of vs all,
 Our natie land, our countrey, that conteines
 Our wiues, children,¹ kindred, our-selues, and all 100
 That euer is or may be deare to man,
 Cries vnto vs to helpe our-selues and her.
 Let us aduaunce our powers to repress
 This growing foe of all our liberties.

GWEN. Yea, let vs so, my lordes, with hasty speede. 105
 And ye, O goddes, send vs the welcome death,
 To shed our bloud in field, and leaue us not
 In lothesome life to lenger out our dayes²
 To see the hugie heapes of these vnhappes
 That now roll downe vpon the wretched land, 110
 Where emptie place of princely gouernaunce,
 No certaine stay now left of doubtlesse heire,
 Thus leaue this guidelesse realme an open pray
 To endlesse stormes and waste of ciuill warre!

AROS. That ye, my lordes, do so agree in one 115
 To saue your countrey from the violent reigne
 And wrongfully vsurped tyrannie
 Of him that threatens conquest of you all,
 To saue your realme, and in this realme your-selues,
 From forreine thraldome of so proud a prince, 120
 Much do I prayse, and I besech the goddes
 With happy honour to requite it you.
 But, O my lordes, sith now the heauens wrath
 Hath reft this land the issue of their prince,
 Sith of the body of our late soueraigne lorde 125
 Remaines no moe since the yong kinges be slaine,
 And of the title of discended crowne

¹ *The rhythm of the line would be improved, as Kittredge suggests, by reading: Our children, wiues.*

² A. lyues; C. liues.

Uncertainly the diuerse mindes do thinke
 Euen of the learned sort, and more vncertainly
 Will parciall fancie and affection deeme, — 130
 But most vncertainly will climbing pride
 And hope of reigne withdraw to¹ sundry partes
 The doubtfull right and hopefull lust to reigne, —
 When once this noble seruice is atchieued
 For Brittain land, the mother of ye all, 135
 When once ye haue with armed force repress
 The proude attemptes of this Albanian prince
 That threatens thraldome to your natiue land,
 When ye shall vanquishers returne from field
 And finde the princely state an open pray 140
 To gredie lust and to vsurping power,
 Then, then, my lordes, if euer kindly care
 Of auncient honour of your auncesters,
 Of present wealth and noblesse of your stockes,
 Yea, of the liues and safetie yet to come 145
 Of your deare wiues, your children and your-selues,
 Might moue your noble hartes with gentle ruth,
 Then, then, haue pitie on the torne estate,
 Then helpe to salue the welneare hopelesse sore!
 Which ye shall do, if ye your-selues withhold 150
 The slaying knife from your owne mothers throate.
 Her shall you saue, and you and yours in her,
 If ye shall all with one assent forbear
 Once to lay hand or take vnto your-selues
 The crowne, by colour of pretended right 155
 Or by what other meanes so-euer it be,
 Till first by common councill of you all
 In Parliament the regall diademe
 Be set in certaine place of gouernaunce.
 In which your Parliament, and in your choise, 160
 Preferre the right, my lordes, without² respect
 Of strength or³ friendes or what-soeuer cause
 That may set forward any others part ;

¹ A. C. from.² B. with.³ A. C. of.

(For right will last, and wrong cannot endure.
 Right meane I his or hers vpon whose name *Allusion. 165 to*
 The people rest by meane of natie line *Queen Elizabeth*
 Or by the vertue of some former lawe,
 Already made their title to aduance.
 Such one, my lordes, let be your chosen king,
 Such one, so borne within your natie land, 170
 Such one preferre, and in no wise admitte
 The heauie yoke of forreine gouernaunce. |
 Let forreine titles yelde to publike wealth ;
 And with that hart wherewith ye now prepare
 Thus to withstand the proude inuading foe, 175
 With that same hart, my lordes, keepe out also
 Unnaturall thraldome of strangers reigne,
 Ne suffer you against the rules of kinde
 Your mother land to serue a forreine prince.
 EUB. Loe here the end of Brutus royall line, 180
 And loe the entry to the wofull wracke
 And vtter ruine of this noble realme !
 The royall king and eke his sonnes are slaine,
 No ruler restes within the regall seate,
 The heire, to whom the scepter longes, unknowen ; 185
 That to eche¹ force of forreine princes power
 Whom vauntage of our² wretched state may moue³
 By sodeine armes to gaine so riche a realme,
 And to the proud and gredie minde at home
 Whom blinded lust to reigne leades to aspire, 190
 Loe, Brittain realme is left an open pray,
 A present spoyle by conquest to ensue !
 Who seeth not now how many rising mindes
 Do feede their thoughts with hope to reach a realme?
 And who will not by force attempt to winne 195
 So great a gaine, that hope perswades to haue?
 A simple colour shall for title serue :
 Who winnes the royall crowne will want no right,

¹ C. the.³ A. C. omit may moue.² A. C. your.

Nor such as shall display by long discent
 A lineall race to proue him lawfull¹ king. 200
 In the meane-while these ciuil armes shall rage,
 And thus a thousand mischiefes shall vnfolde,
 And farre and neare spread the, O Brittain Land!
 All right and lawe shall cease; and he that had
 Nothing to-day to-morrowe shall enioye 205
 Great heapes of golde,² and he that flowed in wealth,
 Loe, he shall be bereft³ of life and all;
 And happiest he that then possesseth least.
 The wiues shall suffer rape, the maides defloured,
 And children fatherlesse shall weepe and waile. 210
 With fire and sworde thy natiue folke shall perishe.
 One kinsman shall bereaue an-others life;
 The father shall vnwitting slay the sonne;
 The sonne shall slay the sire and know it not.
 Women and maides the cruell souldiers sword 215
 Shall perse to death, and sillie children, loe,
 That playing⁴ in the streetes and fieldes are found,
 By violent hand shall close their latter day.
 Whom shall the fierce and bloody souldier
 Reserue to life? whom shall he spare from death? 220
 Euen thou, O wretched mother, halfe aliue,
 Thou shalt beholde thy deare and onely childe
 Slaine with the sworde while he yet suckes thy brest:
 Loe, giltlesse blood shall thus eche-where be shed.
 Thus shall the wasted soile yelde forth no fruite, 225
 But dearth and famine shall possesse the land.
 The townes shall be consumed and burnt with fire,
 The peopled cities shall waxe desolate;
 And thou, O Brittain,⁵ whilome in renowme,
 Whilome in wealth and fame, shalt thus be torne, 230
 Dismembred thus, and thus be rent in twaine,
 Thus wasted and defaced, spoyled and destroyed.

¹ A. C. him-selfe a.⁴ B. C. play.² A. C. good.⁵ A. C. O Brittain Land.³ A. C. reft.

These be the fruites your ciuil warres will bring.
 Hereto it commes when kinges will not consent
 To graue aduise, but followe wilfull will. 235
 This is the end when in fonde¹ princes hartes
 Flattery preuailes, and sage rede hath no place.
 These are the plages when murder is the meane
 To make new heires vnto the royall crowne.
 Thus wreke the gods when that the mothers wrath 240
 Nought but the bloud of her owne childe may swage.
 These mischiefes spring² when rebells will arise
 To worke reuenge and iudge their princes fact.
 This, this ensues when noble-men do faile
 In loyall trowth, and subiectes will be kinges. 245
 And this doth growe when, loe, vnto the prince
 Whom death or sodeine happe of life bereaues
 No certaine heire³ remaines, such certaine heire
 As not all-onely is the rightfull heire
 But to the realme is so made knowen⁴ to be, 250
 And trowth therby vested in subiectes hartes
 To owe fayth there where right is knowen to rest.
 Alas, in Parliament what hope can be,
 When is of Parliament no hope at all,
 Which, though it be assembled by consent, 255
 Yet is not likely with consent to end?
 While eche one for him-selfe or for his frend,
 Against his foe, shall trauaile what he may,
 While now the state left open to the man
 That shall with greatest force inuade the same, 260
 Shall fill ambitious mindes with gaping hope,
 When will they once with yelding hartes agree?
 Or, in the while, how shall the realme be vsed?
 No, no; then Parliament should haue bene holden,
 And certeine heirs appointed to the crowne, 265
 To stay the⁵ title of⁶ established right

¹ A. C. yonge.⁴ A. vnknown; C. vnknowne.² A. C. springes.⁵ A. C. their.³ A. C. certeintie.⁶ Dods, Co. say B. has on.

And in the people plant ¹ obedience,²
 While yet the prince did liue, whose name and power
 By lawfull sommons and authoritie
 Might make a Parliament to be of force, 270
 And might haue set the state ³ in quiet stay.
 But now, O happie man whom ⁴ spedie death
 Depriuies of life, ne is enforced to see
 These hugie mischiefes and these miseries,
 These ciuil warres, these murders and these wronges 275
 Of iustice. Yet must God ⁵ in fine restore
 This noble crowne vnto the lawfull heire ;
 For right will alwayes liue and rise at length,
 But wrong can neuer take deepe roote, to last.

THE END OF THE TRAGEDY.

¹ A. C. plant the people in.⁴ C. what.² *Misprinted* obedienhos in Sm.⁵ A. C. Ioue.³ C. Realme.

CAMPASPE

*Played before the Queenes
Maiestie on Twelفة
day at Night:*

*By her MAIESTIES
Children, and the Chil-
dren of Paules.*

Vignette, with
motto: "*Mollia
cum duris*"

LONDON,
Printed by *William Stansby,*
for *Edward Blount,*

1632.

Printed from "Sixe Covrt. Comedies," Edward Blount, London, 1632. The readings of the quartos are given on the authority of Fairholt, "The Dramatic Works of John Lilly," London, 1858. The titlepage is not a facsimile.

[DRAMATIS PERSONAE.]

ALEXANDER, <i>King of Macedon.</i>	SOLINUS	} <i>Citizens of Athens.</i>
HEPHESTION, <i>his General.</i>	SYLVIUS	
CLYTUS	PERIM	} <i>Sons to Sylvius.</i>
PARMENIO	MILO	
MILECTUS	TRICO	
PHRYGIUS		
	GRANICHUS, <i>Servant to Plato.</i>	
MELIPPUS, <i>Chamberlain to Alexander.</i>	MANES, <i>Servant to Diogenes.</i>	
ARISTOTLE	PSYLLUS, <i>Servant to Apelles.</i>	
PLATO	<i>Page to Alexander.</i>	
DIOGENES	<i>Citizens.</i>	
CRISIPPUS	<i>Soldiers.</i>	
CRATES	CAMPASPE	} <i>Theban Captives.</i>
CLEANTHES	TIMOCLEA	
ANAXARCHUS		
CRYSUS	LAIS, <i>a Courtezan.</i>	
APELLES, <i>a Painter.</i>		

SCENE: *Athens.*]

No connection between persons
and comic plots.

[CAMPASPE.]¹

The Prologue at the Blacke-Friers.

They that feare the stinging of waspes make fannes of peacocks tailes, whose spots are like eyes; and Lepidus, which could not sleepe for the chattering of birds, set vp a beast whose head was like a dragon: and wee, which stand in awe of report, are compelled to set before our owle Pallas shield, thinking by her vertue to couer the others deformity. It was a signe of famine to Ægypt when Nylus flowed lesse than twelue cubites or more than eighteene: and it may threaten despaire vnto vs if wee bee lesse courteous than you looke for or more cumbersome. But, as Theseus, being promised to be brought to an eagles nest, and, trauailing all the day, found but a wren in a hedge, yet said, "This is a bird": so, we hope, if the shower of our swelling mountaine seeme to bring forth some elephant, performe but a mouse, you will gently say, "This is a beast." Basill softly touched yieldeth a sweete sent, but chafed in the hand, a ranke sauour: we feare, euen so, that our labours slily² glanced on will breed some con-

¹ *In the first quarto (1584) the title of this play is "A moste excellent Comedie of Alexander, Campaspe, and Diogenes, played before the Queene's Maiestie on twelue day at night, by her Maiesties Children, and the Children of Paules. Imprinted at London, for Thomas Cadman, 1584." In the second edition, issued the same year by the same publisher, the title is changed to "Campaspe," and the play is said to have been given "on new yeares day at night." The title "Campaspe" was retained in the third quarto, 1591, and in Blount's edition. In Blount, however, the running title is, "A tragicall Comedie of / Alexander and Campaspe."*

² So Bl., and F. records no variant; but *qy.* slightly.

tent, but examined to the prooffe, small commendation. The haste in performing shall be our excuse. There went two nights to the begetting of Hercules; feathers appeare not on the phœnix vnder seuen moneths; and the mulberie is twelue in budding: but our trauailes are like the hares, who at one time bringeth forth, nourisheth, and engendreth againe; or like the brood of trochilus, whose egges in the same moment that they are laid become birds. But, howsoever we finish our worke, we craue pardon if we offend in matter, and patience if wee transgresse in manners. Wee haue mixed mirth with councell, and discipline with delight, thinking it not amisse in the same garden to sow pot-herbes that wee set flowers. But wee hope, as harts that cast their hornes, snakes their skins, eagles their bills, become more fresh for any other labour: so, our charge being shaken off, we shall be fit for greater matters. But, least, like the Myndians, we make our gates greater than our towne, and that our play runs out at the preface, we here conclude, — wishing that, although there be in your precise iudgements an vniuersall mislike, yet we may enjoy by your wonted courtesies a generall silence.

The Prologue at the Court.

We are ashamed that our bird, which fluttereth by twilight seeming a swan, should bee proued a bat, set against the sun. But, as Iupiter placed Silenus asse among the starres, and Alcibiades couered his pictures, being owles and apes, with a curtaine imbroidered with lions and eagles: so are we enforced vpon a rough discourse to draw on a smooth excuse, resembling lapidaries who thinke to hide the cracke in a stone by setting it deepe in gold. The gods supped once with poore Baucis; the Persian kings sometimes shaued stickes: our hope is your Highnesse wil at this time lend an eare to an idle pastime. Appion, raising Homer from hell, demanded only who was his father; and we, calling Alexander from his graue, seeke only who was his loue. Whatsoever wee present, we

wish it may be thought the dancing of Agrippa his shadowes, who, in the moment they were seene, were of any shape one would conceiue ; or lynces, who, hauing a quicke sight to discerne, haue a short memory to forget. With vs it is like to fare as with these torches, which giuing light to others consume themselues : and we shewing delight to others shame our-selues.

Actus primus. Scæna prima.

[*The audience-chamber of the palace.*]

CLYTUS [*and*] PARMENIO [*near the door*]. TIMOCLEA [*and*] CAMPASPE [*are brought in later as prisoners*]. ALEXANDER [*on the throne, attended by*] HEPHESTION.

CLYT. Parmenio, I cannot tell whether I should more commend in Alexanders victories courage or courtesie, in the one being a resolution without feare, in the other a liberalitie about custome. Thebes is razed, the people not racked ; towers throwne downe, bodies not thrust aside : a conquest without conflict, and a cruell warre in a milde peace. 5

PARME. Clytus, it becommeth the sonne of Philip to bee none other than Alexander is ; therefore, seeing in the father a full perfection, who could haue doubted in the sonne an excellency ? For, as the moone can borrow nothing else of the sunne but light : so, of a sire in whom nothing but vertue was, what could the childe receiue but singular ? It is for turkies to staine each other, not for diamonds : in the one to bee made a difference in goodnesse, in the other no comparison. 10

CLYTUS. You mistake mee, Parmenio, if, whilst I commend Alexander, you imagine I call Philip into question ; vnlesse, happily, you coniecture — which none of iudgement will conceiue — that, because I like the fruit, therefore I heaue at the tree, or, coueting to kisse the childe, I therefore goe about to poyson the teat. 20

PARME. I, but, Clytus, I perceiue you are borne in the east, and neuer laugh but at the sunne rising : which argueth,

though a dutie where you ought, yet no great deuotion where you might. 25

CLYTUS. We will make no controuersie of that which there ought to be no question; onely this shall be the opinion of vs both, that none was worthy to be the father of Alexander but Philip, nor any meete to be the sonne of Philip but Alexander.

[Enter SOLDIERS with spoils and TIMOCLEA, CAMPASPE and other prisoners.]

PARME. Soft, Clytus! behold the spoiles and prisoners. A 30
pleasant sight to vs, because profit is ioyned with honour; not much painfull to them, because their captiuitie is eased by mercie.

TIMO. [aside] Fortune, thou didst neuer yet deceiue vertue, because vertue neuer yet did trust fortune! Sword *and* fire 35
will neuer get spoyle where wisdome and fortitude beares sway. O Thebes, thy wals were raised by the sweetnesse of the harpe, but rased by the shrilnes of the trumpet. Alexander had neuer come so neer the wals, had Epaminondas walkt about the wals; and yet might the Thebanes haue beene 40
merry in their streets, if hee had beene to watch their towers. But destinie is seldome foreseene, neuer preuented. We are here now captiues, whose neckes are yoaked by force, but whose hearts cannot yeeld by death. — Come, Campaspe and the rest, let vs not be ashamed to cast our eyes on him on 45
whom we feared not to cast our darts.

PARME. Madame, you need not doubt; it is Alexander that is the conquerour.

TIMO. Alexander hath ouercome, not conquered.

PARME. To bring all vnder his subiection is to conquer. 50

TIMO. He cannot subdue that which is diuine.

PARME. Thebes was not.

TIMO. Vertue is.

CLYTUS. Alexander, as hee tendreth vertue, so hee will you. He drinketh not bloud, but thirsteth after honour; hee 55
is greedie of victorie, but neuer satisfied with mercie; in fight terrible, as becommeth a captaine; in conquest milde, as beseemeth a king: in all things — than which nothing can be greater — hee is Alexander.

CAMPAS. Then, if it be such a thing to be Alexander, I 60
hope it shall be no miserable thing to be a virgin. For, if hee
sauē our honours, it is more than to restore our goods; and
rather doe I wish he preserue our fame than our liues: which
if he doe, we will confesse there can be no greater thing than
to be Alexander. 65

ALEX. Clytus, are these prisoners? Of whence these spoiles?

CLYT. Like your Maiestie, they are prisoners, and of
Thebes.

ALEX. Of what calling or reputation?

CLYT. I know not, but they seeme to be ladies of honour. 70

ALEX. I will know. Madam, of whence you are I know,
but who I cannot tell.

TIMO. Alexander, I am the sister of Theagines, who fought
a battell with thy father before the citie of Chieronie,¹ where
he died — I say, which none can gainsay — valiantly. 75

ALEX. Lady, there seeme in your words sparkes of your
brothers deedes, but worsere fortune in your life than his death;
but feare not, for you shall liue without violence, enemies or
necessitie. But what are you, faire ladie? another sister to
Theagines? 80

CAMPAS. No sister to Theagines, but an humble hand-
maid to Alexander, born of a meane parentage but to extreme
fortune.

ALEX. Well, ladies, — for so your vertues shew you, what-
soeuer your births be, — you shall be honorably entreated. 85
Athens shall be your Thebes; and you shall not be as abiects
of warre, but as subiects to Alexander. Parmenio, conduct
these honourable ladies into the citie; charge the souldiers not
so much as in words to offer them any offence, and let all
wants bee supplied so farre forth as shall be necessarie for 90
such persons and my prisoners.

Exeunt PARME[NIO] & CAPTIUI.

[ALEX.] Hephestion,² it resteth now that wee haue as
great care to gouerne in peace as conquer in warre, that, while

¹ So first and second edd.; Bl. Chyeronite.

² In Blount this is printed as if it were the name of the speaker.

armes cease, arts may flourish, and, ioyning letters with launces, wee endeuour to bee as good philosophers as soul- 95 diers, knowing it no lesse prayse to bee wise than commendable to be valiant.

HEPHEST. Your Maiestie therein sheweth that you haue as great desire to rule as to subdue. And needs must that commonwealth be fortunate whose captaine is a philosopher 100 and whose philosopher a captaine. *Exeunt.*

Actus primus. Scæna secunda.

[*The market-place.*]

MANES. GRANICHUS. PSYLLUS.

MANES. I serue in-stead of a master a mouse, whose house is a tub, whose dinner is a crust, and whose bed is a boord.

PSYLLUS. Then art thou in a state of life which philosophers commend: a crum for thy supper, an hand for thy 5 cup, and thy clothes for thy sheets; for *Natura paucis contenta.*

GRANI. Manes, it is pitie so proper a man should be cast away vpon a philosopher; but that Diogenes, that dogge, should haue Manes, that dog-bolt, it griueth nature and 10 spiteth art: the one hauing found thee so dissolute — absolute, I would say — in bodie, the other so single — singular — in minde.

MANES. Are you merry? It is a signe by the trip of your tongue and the toyes of your head that you haue done 15 that to-day which I haue not done these three dayes.

PSYLLUS. Whats that?

MANES. Dined.

GRANI. I thinke Diogenes keepes but cold cheare!

MANES. I would it were so; but he keepeth neither hot 20 nor cold.

GRANI. What then? luke-warme? That made Manes runne from his master the last day.

PSYLLUS. Manes had reason, for his name foretold as
much. 25

MANES. My name? how so, sir boy?

PSYLLUS. You know that it is called *mons, a mouendo*,
because it stands still.

MANES. Good.

PSYLLUS. And thou art named Manes, *a manendo*, be- 30
cause thou runnest away.

MANES. Passing reasons! I did not run away, but retire.

PSYLLUS. To a prison, because thou wouldst haue leisure
to contemplate.

MANES. I will proue that my bodie was immortal, because 35
it was in prison.

GRANI. As how?

MANES. Did your masters neuer teach you that the soule
is immortall?

GRANI. Yes. 40

MANES. And the bodie is the prison of the soule?

GRANI. True.

MANES. Why then, this :¹ — to make my body immortall,
I put it in prison.

GRANI. Oh, bad! 45

PSYLLUS. Excellent ill!

MANES. You may see how dull a fasting wit is. There-
fore, Psyllus, let vs goe to supper with Granichus. Plato is
the best fellow of all philosophers. Give me him that reades
in the morning in the schoole and at noone in the kitchin. 50

PSYLLUS. And me!

GRANI. Ah, sirs, my master is a king in his parlour for
the body, and a god in his studie for the soule. Among all
his men he commendeth one that is an excellent musition;
then stand I by and clap another on the shoulder and say, 55
“This is a passing good cooke.”

MANES. It is well done, Granichus; for giue mee pleasure
that goes in at the mouth, not the eare, — I had rather fill
my guts than my braines.

¹ F. thus.

PSYLLUS. I serue Apelles, who feedeth mee as Diogenes 60
doth Manes; for at dinner the one preacheth abstinence, the
other commendeth counterfaiting. When I would eat meate,
he paints a¹ spit, and when I thirst, "O," saith he, "is not
this a faire pot?" and points to a table which contains the
Banquet of the Gods, where are many dishes to feed the eye, 65
but not to fill the gut.

GRANI. What doest thou then?

PSYLLUS. This doth hee then, — bring in many examples
that some haue liued by sauours, and proueth that much 70
easier it is to fat by colours, and telles of birdes that haue
beene fatted by painted grapes in winter, and how many haue
so fed their eyes with their mistresse picture that they neuer
desired to take food, being glutted with the delight in their
fauours. Then doth he shew me counterfeites, such as haue 75
surfeited with their filthy and lothsome vomites, and with
the riotous Bacchanalls of the god Bacchus and his disorderly
crew, which are painted all to the life in his shop. To con-
clude, I fare hardly, though I goe richly; which maketh me,
when I should begin to shadow a ladies face, to draw a
lambs head, and sometime to set to the body of a maid 80
a shoulder of mutton, for *Semper animus meus est in patinis*.

MANES. Thou art a god to mee; for, could I see but a
cookes shop painted, I would make mine eyes fatte as butter;
for I haue nought but sentences to fill my maw: as, *Plures*
occidit crapula quam gladius; Musa ieiunantibus amica; 85
Repletion killeth delicatly; and an old saw of abstinence by²
Socrates, — The belly is the heads graue. Thus with say-
ings, not with meate, he maketh a gallimafray.

GRANI. But how doest thou then liue?

MANES. With fine iests, sweet ayre and the dogs almes. 90

GRA. Well, for this time I wil stanch thy gut, and among
pots and platters thou shalt see what it is to serue Plato.

¹ Bl. omits a.

² All the old editions omit by; it appears in Dodsley, and a sixteenth century hand inserted it in ink in a copy of the third ed. now in the Garrick Collection.

PSYLLUS. For ioy of it, Grañichus, lets sing.

MANES. My voice is as cleare in the eueing as in the morning.

95

GRANI. An-other commoditie of emptines !

*Song.*¹

GRAN. O for a bowle of fatt canary,

Rich Palermo, sparkling sherry,

Some nectar else from Iuno's daiery :

O, these draughts would make vs merry ! 100

PSIL. O for a wench! — I deale in faces

And in other dayntier things.

Tickled am I in her embraces, —

Fine dancing in such fairy-ringes. 104

MA. O for a plump fat leg of mutton,

Veale, lambe, capon, pigge *and* conney!

None is happy but a glutton ;

None an asse but who wants money. 108

CH[ORUS]. Wines, indeed, *and* girles are good,

But braue victuals feast the bloud.

For wenches, wine and lusty cheere

Ioue would leape downe to surfet heere. 112

[*Exeunt.*]

Actus primus. Scæna tertia.

[ALEXANDER'S *palace.*]

MELIPPUS, PLATO, ARISTOTLE, CRYSIPPUS, CRATES, CLEANTHES, ANAXARCHUS, ALEXANDER, HEPHESTION, PARMENIO, CLYTUS [*and*] DIOGENES [*appear during the scene.*] [MELIPPUS *alone.*]

MELIP. I had neuer such adoe to warne schollers to come before a king! First, I came to Crisippus, a tall, leane old madman, willing him presently to appeare before Alexander. Hee stood staring on my face, neither mouing his eyes nor

¹ *The songs were first given in Bl.*

his body. I urging him to giue some answer, hee tooke vp a 5
 booke, sate downe, and saide nothing. Melissa, his maide,
 told mee it was his manner, and that oftentimes shee was fain
 to thrust meat into his mouth, for that he would rather sterue
 than cease studie. Well, thought I, seeing bookish men are
 so blockish and great clearkes such simple courtiers, I will 10
 neither be partaker of their *commons* nor their commenda-
 tions. From thence I came to Plato and to Aristotle and to
 diuers others, none refusing to come sauing an olde obscure
 fellow, who, sitting in a tub turned towards the sunne, read
 Greeke to a young boy. Him when I willed to appeare be- 15
 fore Alexander, he answered, "If Alexander would faine see
 mee, let him come to mee; if learne of me, let him come to
 mee; whatsoeuer it be, let him come to mee." "Why," said
 I, "he is a king." He answered, "Why, I am a philos-
 opher." "Why, but he is Alexander!" "I; but I am Di- 20
 ogenes." I was halfe angry to see one so crooked in his
 shape to bee so crabbed in his sayings; so, going my way, I
 said, "Thou shalt repent it, if thou comest not to Alexander."
 "Nay," smiling answered hee, "Alexander may repent it, if
 hee come not to Diogenes: vertue must be sought, not 25
 offered." And, so, turning himselfe to his cell, hee grunted
 I know not what, like a pig vnder a tub. But I must bee
 gone, the philosophers are comming. *Exit.*

[*Enter* PLATO, ARISTOTLE, CRYSIPPUS, CRATES, CLEANTHES, and ANAX-
 ARCHUS.]

PLATO. It is a difficult controuersie, Aristotle, and rather
 to be wondred at than beleued, how natural causes should 30
 worke supernaturall effects.

ARIST. I do not so much stand vpon the apparition is
 seene in the moone, neither the Demonium of Socrates, as
 that I cannot by naturall reason giue any reason of the ebbing
 and flowing of the sea; which makes me in the depth of my 35
 studies to crie out, *O ens entium, miserere mei!*

PLATO. Cleanthes and you attribute so much to nature
 by searching for things which are not to be found, that,
 whilst you studie a cause of your owne, you omitt the occa-

sion it-selfe. There is no man so sauage in whom resteth 40
not this diuine particle : that their¹ is an omnipotent, eternall
and diuine mouer, which may be called God.

CLEANT. I am of this minde, that that first mouer, which
you terme God, is the instrument of all the mouings which 45
we attribute to nature. The earth, which is masse, swimmeth²
on the sea, seasons diuided in themselues, fruits growing in
themselues, the maiestie of the skie, the whole firmament of
the world, *and* whatsoever else appeareth miraculous, — what
man almost of meane capacitie but can proue it natural?

ANAXAR. These causes shall be debated at our philosophers 50
feast, in which controuersie I will take part with Aristotle
that there is *Natura naturans*, and yet not God.

CRATES.³ And I with Plato that there is *Deus optimus
maximus*, and not Nature.

[Enter ALEXANDER and HEPHESTION.]

ARIST. Here commeth Alexander. 55

ALEX. I see, Hephestion, that these philosophers are
here attending for vs.

HEPHEST. They are not philosophers if they know⁴ not
their duties.

ALEX. But I much meruaile Diogenes should bee so 60
dogged.

HEP. I doe not thinke but his excuse will be better than
Melippus message.

ALEX. I will goe see him, Hephestion, because I long to
see him that would Alexander to come, to whom all the world 65
is like to come. — Aristotle and the rest, sithence my coming
from Thebes to Athens, from a place of conquest to a pallace
of⁵ quiet, I haue resolued with my-selfe in my court to haue
as many philosophers as I had in my camp souldiers. My
court shalbe a schoole, wherein I will haue vsed as great 70
doctrine in peace as I did in warre discipline.

¹ *A mere error ;* Bl's *spelling is, in general, very good.*

² *Qy. swimming.*

⁴ Third ed. *knewe.*

³ Bl. *Craterus.*

⁵ Bl. *omits of.*

AR. We are all here ready to be commanded, *and* glad we are that we are commanded, for that nothing better be-
c[o]mmeth kings than literature, which maketh *them* come as
neare to the gods in wisdome as they doe in dignitie. 75

ALEX. It is so, Aristotle, but yet there is among you, yea,
and of your bringing vp, that sought to destroy Alexander, —
Calistenes, Aristotle, whose treasons against his prince shall
not be borne out with the reasons of his philosophie.

AR. If euer mischief entred into the heart of Calistenes, 80
let Calistenes suffer for it; but that Aristotle euer imagined
any such thing of Calistenes, Aristotle doth denie.

ALEX. Well, Aristotle, kindred may blinde thee, *and*
affection me; but in kings causes I will not stand to schollers
arguments. This meeting shalbe for a commandement that 85
you all frequent my court. Instruct the young with rules,¹
confirme the olde with reasons; let your liues bee answerable
to your learnings, least my proceedings be contrary to my
promises.

HEPHEST. You said you would aske euery one of *them* a 90
question which yesternight none of vs could answeere.

ALEX. I will. Plato, of all beasts which is the subtilest?

PLATO. That which man hitherto neuer knew.

ALEX. Aristotle, how should a man be thought a god?

ARIST. In doing a thing vnpossible for a man. 95

ALEX. Crisippus, which was first, the day or the night?

CRISIP. The day, by a day.

ALEX. Indeede strange questions must haue strange
answers. Cleanthes, what say you, is life or death the
stronger? 100

CLEA. Life, that suffereth so many troubles.

ALEX. Crates, how long should a man liue?

CRATES. Till hee thinke it better to die than to liue.

ALE. Anaxarchus, whether doth the sea or the earth bring
forth most creatures? 105

¹ So the quartos; Bl. rulers, — probably not in allusion to the educa-
tional apparatus with which, not many years ago, the love of learning
was inculcated.

ANAX. The earth, for the sea is but a part of the earth.

ALEX.¹ Hephestion, me thinkes they haue answered all well; and in such questions I meane often to trie them.

HEPHEST. It is better to haue in your court a wise man than in your ground a golden mine. Therefore would I leaue 110 war, to study wisdom, were I Alexander.

ALEX. So would I, were I Hephestion. But come, let vs goe and giue release, as I promised, to our Theban thralls.²

Exeunt.

PLATO. Thou art fortunate, Aristotle, that Alexander is thy scholler. 115

ARIST. And all you happy that he is your soueraigne.

CRISIP. I could like the man well, if he could be contented to bee but a man.

ARISTO. He seeketh to draw neere to the gods in knowledge, not to be a god. 120

*[Enter DIOGENES.]*³

PLATO. Let vs question a little with Diogenes why he went not with vs to Alexander. Diogenes, thou didst forget thy duety, that thou wentst not with vs to the king.

DIOGE. And you your profession, that went to the king.

PL. Thou takest as great pride to be peeuish as others 125 do glory to be vertuous.

DIOG. And thou as great honour, being a philosopher, to be thought court-like as others shame, that be courtiers, to be accounted philosophers.

ARIST. These austere manners set aside, it is well knowne 130 that thou didst counterfeite money.

DIOG. And thou thy manners, in that thou didst not counterfeite money.

ARIST. Thou hast reason to contemne the court, being both in bodie and minde too crooked for a courtier. 135

DIOG. As good be crooked and indeuour to make my-selfe

¹ Bl. Ala.

² So the quartos; Bl. thrall.

³ In the Garrick copy of the third edition this stage-direction is inserted in ink by the hand of W. Neile, a contemporary of Lyly.

straight, from the court, as bee straight and learne to be crooked at the court.

CR. Thou thinkest it a grace to be opposite against Alexander. 140

DIOG. And thou to be iump with Alexander.

ANAX. Let vs goe, for in contemning him we shal better please him than in wondering at him.

ARIST. Plato, what doest thou thinke of Diogenes.

PLATO. To be Socrates furious. Let vs goe. 145

Exeunt PHILOSOPHI.

Actus secundus. Scæna prima.

[The market-place.]

DIOGENES, PSYLLUS, MANES, GRANICHUS *[and CITIZENS]*.

PS. Behold, Manes, where thy master is, seeking either for bones for his dinner or pinnes for his sleeues. I will goe salute him.

MANES. Doe so; but mum! not a word that you saw Manes. 5

GRANI. Then stay thou behinde, and I will goe with Psyllus.

[They go to DIOGENES.]

PSYL. All hayle, Diogenes, to your proper person!

DI. All hate to thy peeuish conditions.

GRANI. O dogge! 10

PSYL. What doest thou seeke for here?

DIOG. For a man and a beast.

GRANI. That is easie without thy light to bee found: be not all these men?

DIOG. Called men. 15

GR. What beast is it thou lookest for?

DIOG. The beast my man Manes.

PSYL. Hee is a beast indeed that will serue thee.

DIOG. So is he that begat thee.

GRA. What wouldest thou do, if thou shouldst find 20
Manes?

DIOG. Giue him leaue to doe as hee hath done before.

GR. Whats that?

DIOG. To run away.

P[SYL]. Why, hast thou no neede of Manes? 25

DIO. It were a shame for Diogenes to haue neede of Manes and for Manes to haue no neede of Diogenes.

GRANI. But put the case he were gone, wouldst thou entertaine any of vs two?

DIOG. Vpon condition. 30

PSYLLUS. What?

DIOG. That you should tell me wherefore any of you both were good.

GRANI. Why, I am a scholler and well seene in philosophy. 35

PSYLLUS. And I a prentice and well seene in painting.

DIOG. Well then, Granichus, be thou a painter to amend thine ill face; *and* thou, Psyllus, a philosopher to correct thine euill manners. But who is that? Manes?

MANES. I care not who I were, so I were not Manes. 40

GRANI. You are taken tardie.

PSYL. Let vs slip aside, Granichus, to see the salutation betweene Manes and his master.

[*They stand aside.*]

DIOG. Manes, thou knowest the last day I threw away my dish, to drinke in my hand, because it was superfluous; 45 now I am determind to put away my man and serue my selfe, *quia non egeo tui vel te.*

MANES. Master, you know a-while agoe I ran away; so doe I meane to doe againe, *quia scio tibi non esse argentum.*

DIOG. I know I haue no money, neither will haue euer¹ a 50 man, for I was resolued long sithence to put away both my slaues, — money and Manes.

MANES. So was I determind to shake of both my dogges, — hunger *and* Diogenes.

¹ So Bl.; Quartos, will I haue euer.

PSYLLUS. O sweet consent betweene a crowde and a
Iewes-harpe! 55

GRANI. Come, let vs reconcile them.

PSYL. It shall not neede, for this is their vse: now doe
they dine one vpon another. *Exit* DIOGENES.

GRANI. How now, Manes, art thou gone from thy
master? 60

MANES. No; I did but now binde my-selfe to him.

PS. Why, you were at mortall iarres.

MANES. In faith, no; we brake a bitter iest one vpon
another. 65

GRANI. Why, thou art as dogged as he.

PSYLLUS. My father knew them both little whelps.

MANES. Well, I will hie me after my master.

GRANI. Why, is it supper-time with Diogenes?

MANES. I, — with him at all time when he hath meate. 70

PSYL. Why then, euey man to his home; and let vs
steale out againe anone!

GRANI. Where shall we meete?

PSY. Why, at *Alae*¹ *vendibili suspensa haedera non est
opus.* 75

MANES. O Psyllus, *habeo te loco parentis*; thou blessest
me. *Exeunt.*

Actus secundus. Scæna secunda.

[*The market-place.*]

ALEXANDER, HEPHESTION [*and*] PAGE [*walking*]. DIOGENES [*in the
background*]. APELLES [*enters at the end of the scene*].

ALEX. Stand aside, sir boy, till you be called. Hephes-
tion, how doe you like the sweet face of Campaspe?

HEPHEST. I cannot but commende the stout courage of
Timoclea.

ALEX. Without doubt Campaspe had some great man to
her father. 5

¹ Bl. Ala.

HEPHEST. You know Timoclea had Theagines to her brother.

ALEX. Timoclea still in thy mouth? art thou not in loue?

HEPHEST. Not I.

10

ALEX. Not with Timoclea, you meane. Wherein you resemble the lapwing, who crieth most where her nest is not : and so you lead me from espying your loue with Campaspe, — you crie Timoclea.

HEPHEST. Could I as well subdue kingdomes as I can my thoughts, or were I as far from ambition as I am from loue, all the world would account mee as valiant in armes as I knovv my-selfe moderate in affection.

15

ALEX. Is loue a vice?

HEPHEST. It is no vertue.

20

ALEX. Well, novv shalt thou see what small difference I make betweene Alexander and Hephestion. And, sith thou hast beene alvvaies partaker of my triumphes, thou shalt bee partaker of my torments. I loue, Hephestion, I loue! I loue Campaspe, — a thing farre vnfit for a Macedonian, for a king, for Alexander. Why hangest thou downe thy head, Hephestion, blushing to heare that which I am not ashamed to tell?

25

HEPHEST. Might my words craue pardon and my counsell credit, I would both discharge the duetie of a subiect, for so I am, *and* the office of a friend, for so I will.

30

ALEX. Speake, Hephestion; for, whatsoever is spoken, Hephestion speaketh to Alexander.

HEPHEST. I cannot tell, Alexander, whether the report be more shamefull to be heard or the cause sorrowful to be beleued. What, is the son of Philip, king of Macedon, become the subiect of Campaspe, the captiue of Thebes? Is that minde whose greatnes the world could not containe drawn within the compasse of an idle alluring eie? Wil you handle the spindle with Hercules, when you should shake the speare with Achilles? Is the warlike sound of drum *and* trump turned to the soft noise of lyre *and* lute? the neighing of barbed steeds, whose lowdnes filled the aire with terrour and

35

40

whose breathes dimmed the sun with smoake, conuerted to
 delicate tunes and amorous glances? O Alexander, that soft 45
 and yeelding minde should not bee in him whose hard and
 vnconquerd heart hath made so many yeeld. But you loue!
 Ah grieffe! But whom? Campaspe. Ah shame! a maide
 forsooth vnknowne, vnnoble, and who can tell whether im-
 modest? whose eyes are framed by art to enamour and whose 50
 heart was made by nature to enchant. I; but she is beauti-
 full. Yea; but not therefore chaste. I; but she is comely
 in all parts of the bodie. But shee may bee crooked in some
 part of the minde. I, but shee is wise. Yea; but she is a
 woman. Beautie is like the black-berry, which seemeth red 55
 when it is not ripe, — resembling precious stones that are
 polished with honie, which, the smoother they looke, the
 sooner they breake. It is thought wonderfull among the sea-
 men that mugill, of all fishes the swiftest, is found in the
 belly of the bret, of all the slowest: and shall it not seeme 60
 monstrous to wise men that the heart of the greatest con-
 querour of the world should be found in the hands of the
 weakest creature of nature? of a woman? of a captiue? Her-
 myns haue faire skins, but foule liuers; sepulchres fresh
 colours, but rotten bones: women faire faces, but false 65
 hearts. Remember, Alexander, thou hast a campe to gouerne,
 not a chamber. Fall not from the armour of Mars to the
 armes of Venus, from the fierie assaults of warre to the
 maidenly skirmishes of loue, from displaying the eagle in
 thine ensigne to set downe the sparrow. I sigh, Alexander, 70
 that, where fortune could not conquer, folly should ouercome.
 But behold all the perfection that may bee in Campaspe: a
 haire curling by nature, not art, sweete alluring eyes, a faire
 face made in despite of Venus, and a stately port in disdaine
 of Iuno, a wit apt to conceiue and quicke to answeere, a skinne 75
 as soft as silke and as smooth as iet, a long white hand, a
 fine little foot, — to conclude, all parts answerable to the best
 part. What of this? Though she haue heauenly gifts, ver-
 tue and beautie, is shee not of earthly metall, flesh and bloud?
 You, Alexander, that would be a god, shew your-selfe in this 80

worse than a man, so soone to be both ouerseene and ouertaken in a woman, whose false teares know their true times, whose smooth words wound deeper than sharpe swords. There is no surfet so dangerous as that of honie, nor any poyson so deadly as that of loue: in the one physicke cannot 85
preuaile, nor in the other counsell.

ALEX. My case were light, Hephestion, and not worthy to be called loue, if reason were a remedie, or sentences could salue that sense cannot conceiue. Little do you know and therefore sleightly doe you regard the dead embers in a priuate 90
person or liue coales in a great prince, whose passions and thoughts doe as farre exceed others in extremetie as their callings doe in maiestie. An eclipse in the sunne is more than the falling of a starre: none can conceiue the torments of a king vnlesse he be a king, whose desires are not inferiour 95
to their dignities. And then iudge, Hephestion, if the agonies of loue be dangerous in a subiect, whether they be not more than deadly vnto Alexander, whose deepe and not-to-bee-conceiued sighes cleaue the heart in shiuers, whose wounded thoughts can neither be expressed nor endured. Cease then, 100
Hephestion, with arguments to seeke to refell that which with their deitie the gods cannot resist; and let this suffice to answere thee, that it is a king that loueth, and Alexander, whose affections are not to bee measured by reason, being immortall, nor, I feare me, to be borne, being intolerable. 105

HEPHEST. I must needs yeeld, when neither reason nor counsell can bee heard.

ALEX. Yeeld, Hephestion, for Alexander doth loue, and therefore must obtaine.

HEPHEST. Suppose shee loues not you? Affection com- 110
meth not by appointment or birth, and then as good hated as enforced.

ALEX. I am a king, and will command.

HEPHEST. You may, to yeeld to lust by force, but to consent to loue by feare you cannot. 115

ALEX. Why? What is that which Alexander may not conquer as he list?

HEPHEST. Why, that which you say the gods cannot resist, — loue.

ALEX. I am a conqueror, shee a captiue; I as fortunate 120
as shee faire; my greatnesse may answere her wants and the
gifts of my mind the modestie of hers: is it not likely then
that she should loue? Is it not reasonable?

HEPHEST. You say that in loue there is no reason; and
therefore there can be no likelihood. 125

ALEX. No more, Hephestion! In this case I will vse
mine owne counsell, and in all other thine aduice: thou mayst
be a good souldier, but neuer good louer. Call my page.
[Enter PAGE.] Sirrha, goe presently to Apelles and will him to
come to me without either delay or excuse. 130

PAGE. I goe. [Exit.]

ALEX. In the meane season, to recreate my spirits, being
so neere, wee will goe see Diogenes. And see where his tub
is! Diogenes!

DIOG. Who calleth? 135

ALEX. Alexander. How happened it that you would not
come out of your tub to my palace?

DIOG. Because it was as farre from my tub to your
palace as from your palace to my tub.

ALEX. Why then, doest thou owe no reuerence to kings? 140

DIOG. No.

ALEX. Why so?

DIOG. Because they be no gods.

ALEX. They be gods of the earth.

DIOG. Yea, gods of earth. 145

ALEX. Plato is not of thy minde.

DIOG. I am glad of it.

ALEX. Why?

DIOG. Because I would haue none of Diogenes minde
but Diogenes. 150

ALEX. If Alexander haue any-thing that may pleasure
Diogenes, let me know, and take it.

DIOG. Then take not from mee that you cannot giue
mee, — the light of the world.

ALEX. What doest thou want? 155

DIOG. Nothing that you haue.

ALEX. I haue the world at command.

DIOG. And I in contempt.

ALEX. Thou shalt liue no longer than I will.

DIOG. But I shall die, whether you will or no. 160

ALEX. How should one learne to bee content?

DIOG. Vnlearne to couet.

ALEXAND. Hephestion, were I not Alexander, I would wish to bee Diogenes!

HEPHEST. He is dogged, but discreet; I cannot tell how 165 sharpe, with a kind of sweetnes; full of wit, yet too-too wayward.

ALEX. Diogenes, when I come this way againe, I will both see thee and confer with thee.

DIOG. Doe. 170

[Enter APELLES.]

ALEX. But here commeth Apelles. How now, Apelles, is Venus face yet finished?

APEL. Not yet; beautie is not so soone shadowed whose perfection commeth not within the compasse either of cunning or of colour. 175

ALEX. Well, let it rest vnperfect, and come you with mee where I will shew you that finished by nature that you haue beene trifling about by art.

[Exeunt.]

Actus tertius. Scæna prima.

[The shop of APELLES.]

APELLES [and] CAMPASPE. [PSYLLUS in the background.]

APEL. Ladie, I doubt whether there bee any colour so fresh that may shadow a countenance so faire.

CAMP. Sir, I had thought you had bin commanded to paint with your hand, not to glose with your tongue. But, as I haue heard, it is the hardest thing in painting to set 5

downe a hard fauour; which maketh you to despaire of my face: and then shall you haue as great thankes to spare your labour as to discredit your art.

APEL. Mistris, you neither differ from your-selfe nor your sexe; for, knowing your owne perfection, you seeme to dispraise that which men most commend, drawing them by that meane into an admiration, where feeding them-selues, they fall into an extasie; your modestie being the cause of the one, and of the other your affections. 10

CAMP. I am too young to vnderstand your speech, though old enough to withstand your deuise. You haue bin so long vsed to colours¹ you can doe nothing but colour. 15

APEL. Indeed, the colours I see, I feare, will alter the colour I haue. But come, madam, will you draw neere? for Alexander will be here anon. Psyllus, stay you here at the window. If any enquire for me, answere, *Non lubet esse domi*. 20

Exeunt [APELLES and CAMPASPE].

Actus tertius. Scæna secunda.

[*The street before APELLES' shop.*]

PSYLLUS [*alone*]. MANES [*enters later*].

PSYLLUS. It is alwayes my masters fashion when any faire gentlewoman is to be drawne within to make me to stay without. But if hee should paint Iupiter like a bull, like a swanne, like an eagle, then must Psyllus with one hand grind colours and with the other hold the candle. But let him alone! The better hee shadowes her face, the more will he burne his owne heart. And now if any man could meet with Manes, who, I dare say, lookes as leane as if Diogenes dropped out of his nose — 5

[*Enter* MANES.]

MANES. And here comes Manes, who hath as much meate in his maw as thou hast honestie in thy head. 10

¹ *Misprinted* toc olours in Bl.

PSYLLUS. Then I hope thou art very hungry.

MANES. They that know thee know that.

PSYLLUS. But doest thou not remember that wee haue
certaine liquor to conferre withall? 15

MANES. I ; but I haue businesse, I must goe cry a thing.

PSYLLUS. Why, what hast thou lost?

MANES. That which I neuer had, — my dinner.

PSYLLUS. Foule lubber, wilt thou crie for thy dinner?

MANES. I meane I must crie, not as one would say, 20
“crie,” but “crie,” — that is make a noyse.

PSYLLUS. Why, foole, that is all one ; for, if thou crie,
thou must needs make a noyse.

MANES. Boy, thou art deceiued: “crie” hath diuers
significations, and may be alluded to many things ; “knaue” 25
but one, and can be applyed but to thee.

PSYLLUS. Profound Manes!

MANES. Wee Cynickes are mad fellowes. Didst thou not
finde I did quip thee?

PSYLLUS. No, verily ; why, what 's a quip? 30

MANES. Wee great girders call it a short saying of a
sharpe wit, with a bitter sense in a sweet word.

PSYLLUS. How canst thou thus diuine, diuide, define, dis-
pute, and all on the sodaine?

MANES. Wit will haue his swing ! I am bewicht, in- 35
spired, inflamed, infected!

PSYLLUS. Well, then will not I tempt thy gybing spirit.

MANES. Doe not, Psyllus, for thy dull head will bee but a
grindstone for my quicke wit, which if thou whet with ouer-
thwarts, *perijsti, actum est de te!* I haue drawne bloud at 40
ones braines with a bitter bob.

PSYLLUS. Let me crosse my-selfe ; for I die if I crosse
thee.

• MANES. Let me doe my businesse. I my-selfe am afraid 45
lest my wit should waxe warme, and then must it needs con-
sume some hard head with fine and prettie iests. I am some-
times in such a vaine that, for want of some dull pate to
worke on, I begin to gird my-selfe.

PSYLLUS. The gods shield me from such a fine fellow,
whose words melt wits like waxe. 50

MANES. Well then, let vs to the matter. In faith, my
master meaneth to-morrow to flie.

PSYLLUS. It is a iest.

MANES. Is it a iest to flie? Shouldst thou flie so soone,
thou shouldst repent it in earnest. 55

PSYLLUS. Well, I will be the cryer.

MANES AND PSYLLUS. (*one after another*) O ys! O ys!
O ys! All manner of men, women or children that will
come to-morrow into the market-place betweene the houres
of nine and ten shall see Diogenes the Cynicke flie.¹ 60

PSYLLUS. I doe not thinke he will flie.

MANES. Tush! say "flie."

PSYLLUS. Flie.

MANES. Now let vs goe; for I will not see him againe
till midnight, — I haue a backe way into his tub. 65

PSYLLUS. Which way callest thou the backe way, when
euery way is open?

MANES. I meane to come in at his backe.

PSYLLUS. Well, let vs goe away, that we may returne
speedily. 70

Exeunt.

Actus tertius. Scæna tertia.

[*The shop of APELLES.*]

APELLES [*and*] CAMPASPE.

APEL. I shall neuer draw your eyes well, because they
blinde mine.

CAMP. Why then, paint mee without eyes, for I am blind.

APEL. Were you euer shadowed before of any?

CAMP. No; and would you could so now shadow me that
I might not be perceiued of any! 5

APEL. It were pitie but that so absolute a face should
furnish Venus temple amongst these pictures.

¹ *As F. points out, PSYLLUS stops upon reaching this word.*

- CAMP. What are these pictures?
- APEL. This is Laeda, whom Ioue deceiued in likenesse of
a swan. 10
- CAMP. A faire woman, but a foule deceit.
- APEL. This is Alcmena, vnto whom Iupiter came in
shape of Amphitriou her husband, and begate Hercules.
- CAMP. A famous sonne, but an infamous fact. 15
- APEL. Hee might doe it, because he was a god.
- CAMP. Nay, therefore it was euill done because he was a
god.
- APEL. This is Danae, into whose prison Iupiter drizled a
golden showre, and obtained his desire. 20
- CAMP. What gold can make one yeeld to desire?
- APEL. This is Europa, whom Iupiter rauished ; this,
Antiopa.
- CAMP. Were all the gods like this Iupiter?
- APEL. There were many gods in this like Iupiter. 25
- CAMP. I thinke in those dayes loue was well ratified
among men on earth, when lust was so full authorised by the
gods in heauen.
- APEL. Nay, you may imagine there were women passing
aimable, when there were gods exceeding amorous. 30
- CAMP. Were women neuer so faire, men would be false.
- APEL. Were women neuer so false, men would be fond.
- CAMP. What counterfeit is this, Apelles?
- APEL. This is Venus, the goddessse of loue.
- CAMP. What, bee there also louing goddessses? 35
- APEL. This is shee that hath power to command the very
affections of the heart.
- CAMP. How is she hired? by prayer, by sacrifice, or
bribes?
- APEL. By prayer, sacrifice and bribes. 40
- CAMP. What prayer?
- APEL. Vowes irreuocable.
- CAMP. What sacrifice?
- APEL. Hearts euer sighing, neuer dissembling.
- CAMP. What bribes? 45

APEL. Roses and kisses. But were you neuer in loue?

CAMP. No, nor loue in me.

APEL. Then haue you iniuried many.

CAMP. How so?

APEL. Because you haue beene loued of ¹ many. 50

CAMP. Flattered perchance of some.

APEL. It is not possible that a face so faire and a wit so sharpe, both without comparison, should not be apt to loue.

CAMP. If you begin to tip your tongue with cunning, I pray dip your pensill in colours and fall to that you must doe, 55
not that you would doe.

Actus tertius. Scæna quarta.

[*The market-place or a street, and the shop of APELLES.*]

[*Enter*] CLYTUS [*and*] PARMENIO; [*to them*] ALEXANDER [*and*] HEPHESTION. CRYsus [*and*] DIOGENES [*enter unobserved*]. APELLES [*and*] CAMPASPE *remain from Scene iii*].

CLYTUS. Parmenio, I cannot tell how it commeth to passe that in Alexander now-a-dayes there groweth an vnpatient kind of life: in the morning he is melancholy, at noone sol-
emne, at all times either more sowre or seure than hee was
accustomed. 5

PARME. In kings causes I rather loue to doute than con-
iecture, and thinke it better to bee ignorant than inquisitive:
they haue long eares and stretched armes,—in whose heads
suspition is a prooffe, and to be accused is to be condemned.

CLYTUS. Yet betweene vs there can be no danger to find 10
out the cause, for that there is no malice to withstand it. It
may be an vnquenched thirst of conquering maketh him
vnquiet; it is not vnlikely his long ease hath altered his
humour; that he should be in loue it is impossible.²

¹ In my copy of Blount the "f" of this word, which stands at the outer margin, has disappeared.

² First ed. not impossible; Fairholt follows Blount in his text, but says in his note that the first ed. is right.

PAR. In loue, Clytus? No, no! it is as farre from his 15
 thought as treason in ours. He, whose euer-waking eye,
 whose neuer-tired heart, whose body patient of labour, whose
 minde vnsatiabie of victorie hath alwayes beene noted, can-
 not so soone be melted into the weake conceites of loue.
 Aristotle told him there were many worlds; and that he hath 20
 not conquered one that gapeth for all, galleth Alexander.
 But here he commeth.

[Enter ALEXANDER and HEPHESTION.]

ALEX. Parmenio and Clytus, I would haue you both
 readie to goe into Persia about an ambassage no lesse prof- 25
 itable to me than to your-selues honourable.

CLYTUS. Wee are readie at all commands, wishing noth-
 ing else but continually to be commanded.

ALEX. Well then, withdraw your-selues till I haue further
 considered of this matter.

Exeunt CLYTUS and PARMENIO.

[ALEX.] Now wee will see how Apelles goeth forward. I 30
 doubt me that nature hath ouercome art, and her counte-
 nance his cunning.

HEPHEST. You loue, and therefore think any-thing.

ALEX. But not so farre in loue with Campaspe as with
 Bucephalus, if occasion serue either of conflict or¹ conquest. 35

HEPHEST. Occasion cannot want if will doe not. Behold
 all Persia swelling in the pride of their owne power, the
 Scythians carelesse what courage or fortune can do, the
 Egyptians dreaming in the southsayings of their augures
 and gaping ouer the smoake of their beasts intralls. All 40
 these, Alexander, are to be subdued, if that world be not
 slipped out of your head which you have sworne to conquer
 with that hand.

ALEX. I confesse the labours fit for Alexander, and yet
 recreation necessarie among so many assaults, bloudie 45
 wounds, intolerable troubles. Giue me leaue a little, if not
 to sit, yet to breath. And doubt not but Alexander can,

¹ F. or of; Bl. of.

when he will, throw affections as farre from him as hee can cowardise. But behold Diogenes talking with one at his tub.

CRYSUS. One penny, Diogenes; I am a Cynicke. 50

DIOG. Hee made thee a begger that first gaue thee any-thing.

CRYSUS. Why, if thou wilt giue nothing, no-bodie will giue thee.

DIOG. I want nothing, till the springs drie and the earth perish. 55

CRYSUS. I gather for the gods.

DIOG. And I care not for those gods which want money.

CRYSUS. Thou art not a right Cynick, that wilt giue nothing. 60

DIOG. Thou art not, that wilt begge any-thing.

CRYSUS. Alexander! King Alexander! give a poore Cynick a groat!

ALEX. It is not for a king to giue a groat.

CRYSUS. Then giue me a talent. 65

ALEX. It is not for a begger to aske a talent; away!

[Approaches APELLES and CAMPASPE.] Apelles!

APEL. Here.

ALEX. Now, gentlewoman, doth not your beautie put the painter to his trumpe? 70

CAMP. Yes, my lord; seeing so disordered a countenance, hee feareth hee shall shadow a deformed counterfeite.

ALEX. Would he could colour the life with the feature! And, mee thinketh, Apelles, were you as cunning as report saith you are, you may paint flowres as well with sweet smels as fresh colours, obseruing in your mixture such things as should draw neere to their sauours. 75

APEL. Your Maiestie must know, it is no lesse hard to paint sauours than vertues; colours can neither speake nor thinke. 80

ALEX. Where doe you first begin, when you draw any picture?

APEL. The proportion of the face in iust compasse as I can.

ALEX. I would begin with the eye, as a light to all the rest. 85

APEL. If you will paint, as you are a king, your Maiestie may begin where you please ; but, as you would bee a painter, you must begin with the face.

ALEX. Aurelius would in one houre colour foure faces. 90

APEL. I maruaile in halfe an houre hee did not foure.

ALEX. Why, is it so easie?

APEL. No ; but he doth it so homely.

ALEX. When will you finish Campaspe?

APEL. Neuer finish ; for alwayes in absolute beauty there is somewhat about art. 95

ALEX. Why should not I by labour be as cunning as Apelles?

APEL. God shield you should haue cause to be so cunning as Apelles! 100

ALEX. Me thinketh foure colours are sufficient to shadow any countenance ; and so it was in the time of Phydias.

APEL. Then had men fewer fancies and women not so many fauours. For now, if the haire of her eye-browes be blacke, yet must the haire of her head be yellow ; the attire of her head must bee different from the habit of her bodie, else would the picture seeme like the blazon of ancient armory, not like the sweet delight of new-found amiableness. For, as in garden-knots diuersitie of odours make a more sweete sauour, or as in musique diuers strings cause a more delicate consent : so in painting, the more colours, the better counterfeit, — obseruing black for a ground and the rest for grace. 105

ALEX. Lend me thy pensill, Apelles : I will paint, and thou shalt iudge. 115

APEL. Here.

ALEX. The coale breakes.

APEL. You leane too hard.

ALEX. Now it blackes not.

APEL. You leane too soft. 120

ALEX. This is awrie.

APEL. Your eye goeth not with your hand.

ALEX. Novv it is worse.

APEL. Your hand goeth not with your minde.

ALEX. Nay, if all be too hard or soft, — so many rules 125
and regards that ones hand, ones eye, ones minde must all
draw together, I had rather bee setting of a battell than blot-
ting of a boord. But how haue I done here?

APEL. Like a king.

ALEX. I thinke so; but nothing more vnlike a painter. 130
Well, Apelles, Campaspe is finished as I wish. Dismiss her,
and bring presently her counterfeit after me.

APEL. I will.

[ALEXANDER *and* HEPHESTION *leave* APELLES.]

ALEX. Now, Hephestion, doth not this matter cotton as
I would? Campaspe looketh pleasantly; libertie will en- 135
crease her beautie, and my loue shall aduance her honour.

HEPHEST. I will not contrarie your Maiestie; for time
must weare out that loue hath wrought, *and* reason weane
what appetite nursed.

[*Exit* CAMPASPE.]

ALEX. How stately shee passeth by, yet how soberly, a 140
sweete consent in her countenance, with a chaste disdain, de-
sire mingled with coyresse, and — I cannot tell how to terme
it — a curst yeelding modesty.

HEPHEST. Let her passe.

ALEX. So shee shall for the fairest on the earth! 145

Exeunt.

Actus tertius. Scæna quinta.

[*The house of* APELLES.]

PSYLLUS [*and*] MANES. APELLES [*enters later*].

PSYLLUS. I shall be hanged for tarrying so long.

MANES. I pray God my master be not flowne before I
come!

PSYLLUS. Away, Manes! my master doth come!

[*Exit MANES; enter APELLES.*]

APEL. Where haue you beene all this while? 5

PSYLLUS. No-where but here.

APEL. Who was here sithens my comming?

PSYLLUS. No-bodie.

APEL. Vngracious wag, I perceiue you haue beene a-loy-
tering! was Alexander no-bodie? 10

PSYLLUS. He was a king; I meant no meane bodie.

APEL. I will cudgell your bodie for it, and then I will say
it was no bodie, because it was no honest bodie. Away! in!

Exit PSYLLUS.

[*APEL.*] Vnfortunate Apelles! and therefore vnfortunate
because Apelles! Hast thou by drawing her beautie brought 15
to passe that thou canst scarce draw thine owne breath? And
by so much the more hast thou increased thy care by how
much the more thou hast¹ shewed thy cunning? Was it not
sufficient to behold the fire, and warme thee, but with
Satyrus thou must kisse the fire and burne thee? O, Cam- 20
paspè, Campaspè! Art must yeeld to nature, reason to appe-
tite, wisdome to affection. Could Pigmalion entreate by
prayer to haue his iuory turned into flesh, *and* cannot Apelles
obtaine by plaints to haue the picture of his loue changed
into life? Is painting so farre inferiour to caruing? or dost 25
thou, Venus, more delight to bee hewed with chizels then
shadowed with colours? What Pigmalion, or what Pyrgo-
teles, or what Lysippus is hee that euer made thy face so
faire or spread thy fame so farre as I? Vnlesse, Venus, in
this thou enuiest mine art, that in colouring my sweet Cam- 30
paspè I have left no place by cunning to make thee so
amiable! But, alas! shee is the paramour to a prince!
Alexander, the monarch of the earth, hath both her body and
affection. For what is it that kings cannot obtaine by
prayers, threats and promises? Will not shee thinke it better 35
to sit vnder a cloth of estate, like a queene, than in a poore
shop, like a huswife; and esteeme it sweeter to be the concu-

¹ Bl. hast thou hast.

bine of the lord of the world than spouse to a painter in
 Athens? Yes, yes, Apelles, thou maist swimme against the
 streame with the crab, *and* feede against the winde with the 40
 deere, and pecke against the steele with the cockatrice:
 starres are to be looked at, not reached at; princes to be
 yeelded vnto, not contended with; Campaspe to be honoured,
 not obtained, to be painted, not possessed of thee. O faire
 face! O vnhappy hand, *and* why didst thou drawe it—so 45
 faire a face? O beautiful countenance! the expres image of
 Venus, but somewhat fresher, — the only patterne of that
 eternitie which Iupiter dreaming a-sleepe could not conceiue
 againe waking! Blush, Venus, for I am ashamed to ende
 thee! Now must I paint things vnpossible for mine art, but 50
 agreeable with my affections, — deepe and hollow sighes, sad
 and melancholie thoughtes, woundes and slaughters of con-
 ceits, a life posting to death, a death galloping from life, a
 wauering constancie, an vnsetled resolution, — and what not,
 Apelles? And what but Apelles? But, as they that are 55
 shaken with a feauer are to be warmed with cloathes, not
 groanes, and as he that melteth in a consumption is to be
 recured by colices, not conceits: so the feeding canker of
 my care, the neuer-dying worme of my heart is to bee killed
 by counsell, not cries, by applying of remedies, not by reply- 60
 ing of reasons. And, sith in cases desperate there must be
 vsed medicines that are extreame, I will hazard that little life
 that is left to restore the greater part that is lost; *and* this
 shall be my first practice, — for wit must worke where author-
 itie is not: As soone as Alexander hath viewed this portrai- 65
 ture, I will by deuise giue it a blemish, that by that meanes
 she may come againe to my shop; *and* then as good it were
 to vtter my loue and die with deniall as conceale it and liue
 in despaire. 69

Song by APELLES.

Cypid and my Campaspe playd
 At cardes for kisses; Cupid payd.
 He stakes his quiuer, bow *and* arrows,

His mothers doues *and* teeme of sparows ;
 Looses them too. Then downe he throwes
 The corrall of his lippe, the rose 75
 Growing on 's cheek, — but none knows how, —
 With these the cristall of his brow,
 And then the dimple of his chinne ;
 All these did my Campaspe winne.
 At last hee set her both his eyes ; 80
 Shee won, and Cupid blind did rise.
 O Loue, has shee done this to thee?
 What shall, alas ! become of mee?

Actus quartus. Scæna prima.

[*The market-place.*]

SOLINUS, PSYLLUS, GRANICHUS, MANES [*walking about*]. DIOGENES [*concealed in his tub*]. POPULUS [*enters later*].

SO. This is the place, the day, the time, that Diogenes hath appointed to flie.

PSYL. I will not loose the flight of so faire a foule as Diogenes is though my master cudgell my no body as he threatened. 5

GRAN. What, Psyllus, will the beast wag his wings to-day?

PSYL. Wee shall heare, for here commeth Manes. Manes, will it be?

MANES. Be? He were best be as cunning as a bee, or else shortly he will not bee at all! 10

GRAN. How is hee furnished to flie? hath he feathers?

MA. Thou art an asse! Capons, geese and owles haue feathers; he hath found Dedalus old waxen wings, and hath beene peeing them this moneth, he is so broad in the shoulders. O, you shall see him cut the ayre euen like a tortoys! 15

SOLI. Me thinkes so wise a man should not bee so mad. His body must needs be too heauie.

MANES. Why, hee hath eaten nothing this seuen-night but corke and feathers. 20

PSYL. Touch him, Manes.

MANES. Hee is so light that hee can scarce keepe him from flying at midnight.

POPULUS *intrat.*

MANES. See, they begin to flocke, and behold, my master bustels himsele to flie!

25

DIOG. You wicked and bewitched Athenians, whose bodies make the earth to groane, and whose breathes infect the ayre with stench, comè ye to see Diogenes flie? Diogenes commeth to see you sinke. Yea,¹ call me dogge! So I am, for I long to gnaw the bons in your skins. Yee tearme mee an hater of men. No; I am a hater of your manners. Your liues, dissolute, not fearing death, will proue your deaths desperat, not hoping for life. What do you else in Athens but sleepe in the day and surfeit in the night? Backe-gods in the morning with pride, in the euening belly-gods with gluttony! You flatter kings and call them gods: speak truth of your-selues and confesse you are diuels. From the bee you haue taken not the honey but the wax to make your religion, framing it to the time, not to the truth. Your filthy lust you colour vnder a courtly colour of loue, iniuries abroad vnder the title of policies at home; *and* secret malice creepeth vnder the name of publike iustice. You haue caused Alexander to drie vp springs *and* plant vines, to sow rocket and weed endiff, to sheare sheepe *and* shrine foxes. All conscience is sealed at Athens: swearing commeth of a hot mettle, lying of a quick wit, flattery of a flowing tongue, vndecent talke of a merry disposition. All things are lawfull at Athens: either you think there are no gods or I must think ye are no men. You build as though you should liue for-ouer *and* surfeit as though you should die to-morrowe. None teacheth true philosophie but Aristotle, because hee was the kings schoole-master! O times! O men! O corruption in manners! Remember that greene grasse must turne to drie hay. When you sleepe, you are not sure to wake; and when

30

35

40

45

50

¹ *Qy.* yee.

you rise, not certaine to lie downe. Looke you neuer so high, 55
 your heads must lie leuel with your feet. Thus haue I flowne
 ouer your disordered liues; and, if you will not amend your
 manners, I will studie to flie further from you, that I may be
 neerer to honestie.

SOLI. Thou rauest, Diogenes; for thy life is different 60
 from thy words. Did not I see thee come out of a brothell
 house? Was it not a shame?

DIOG. It was no shame to goe out; but a shame to
 goe in.

GRANI. It were a good deede, Manes, to beate thy 65
 master.

MANES. You were as good eate my master.

ONE OF THE PEOPLE. Hast thou made vs all fooles, and
 wilt thou not flie?

DIOG. I tell thee, vnlesse thou be honest, I will flie. 70

PEOPLE. Dog, dog, take a bone!

DIOG. Thy father need feare no dogs, but dogs thy father.

PEOPLE. We will tell Alexander that thou reprobust him
 behinde his back.

DIOG. And I will tell him that you flatter him before his 75
 face.

PEOPLE. Wee will cause all the boyes in the streete to
 hisse at thee.

DIOG. Indeede, I thinke the Athenians haue their chil-
 dren readie for any vice, because they bee Athenians. 80

MANES. Why, master, meane you not to flie?

DIOG. No, Manes, not without wings.

MANES. Euery-body will account you a liar.

DIOG. No, I warrant you, for I will alwayes say the
 Athenians are mischeuous. 85

PSYL. I care not; it was sport enough for mee to see
 these old huddles hit home.

GRANI. Nor I.

PSY. Come, let vs goe; and hereafter when I meane to
 rayle vpon any-body openly, it shall be giuen out I will flie. 90

Exeunt.

Actus quartus. Scæna secunda.

[A room in the palace.]

CAMPASPE [alone]. APELLES [enters later].

CAMPASPE. (*sola*) Campaspe, it is hard to iudge whether thy choyce be more vnwise or thy chance vnfortunate. Doest thou preferre —? but stay! vtter not that in wordes which maketh thine eares to glow with thoughts. Tush! better thy tongue wagge than thy heart breake. Hath a painter crept
5
further into thy minde than a prince? Apelles than Alexander? Fond wench, the basenes of thy minde bewraies the meannesse of thy birth. But, alas! affection is a fire which
10
kindleth as well in the bramble as in the oake, and catcheth hold where it first lighteth, not where it may best burne. Larkes, that mount aloft in the ayre, build their neasts below
in the earth: and women that cast their eyes vpon kings may
place their hearts vpon vassalls. A needle will become thy
fingers better than a lutè, *and* a distaffe is fitter for thy hand
than a scepter. Antes liue safely till they haue gotten wings,
15
and iuniper is not blowne vp till it hath gotten an high top: the meane estate is without care as long as it continueth without pride. But here *commeth* Apelles,—in whom I
would there were the like affection!

APELL. Gentlewoman, the misfortune I had with your
picture will put you to some paines to sit againe to be painted. 20

CAMP. It is small paines for mee to sit still, but infinite
for you to draw still.

APEL. No, madame; to painte Venus was a pleasure,
but to shadow the sweete face of Campaspe it is a heauen. 25

CAMP. If your tongue were made of the same flesh that
your heart is, your words would bee as your thoughts are;
but such a common thing it is amongst you to commend that
oftentimes for fashion sake you call them beautiful whom
you know blacke. 30

APEL. What might men doe to be beleeued?¹

¹ Bl. beceued.

CAMP. Whet their tongue on their hearts.

APEL. So they doe, and speake as they thinke.

CAMP. I would they did!

APEL. I would they did not!

35

CAMP. Why, would you haue them dissemble?

APEL. Not in loue, but their loue. But will you giue mee leaue to aske you a question without offence?

CAMP. So that you will answere mee another without excuse.

40

APEL. Whom doe you loue best in the world?

CA. He that made me last in the world.

APEL. That was a god.

CAMP. I had thought it had beene a man. But whom doe you honour most, Apelles?

45

APEL. The thing that is likest you, Campaspe.

CAMP. My picture?

APEL. I dare not venture vpon your person. But come, let vs go in; for Alexander will thinke it long till we returne.

Exeunt.

Actus quartus. Scæna tertia.

[*The palace.*]

CLYTUS. PARMENIO.

CLYT. We heare nothing of our embassage, — a colour, belike, to bleare our eyes or tickle our eares or inflame our hearts. But what doth Alexander in the meane season but vse for *tantara sol-fa-la*, for his hard couch downe-beds, for his handfull of water his standing-cup of wine?

5

PAR. Clytus, I mislike this new delicacie *and* pleasing peace. For what else do we see now than a kind of softnes in euery mans minde, bees to make their hiues in souldiers helmets, our steeds furnished with foot-clothes of gold in-steede of saddles of steele, more time to be required to scowre the rust of our weapons than there was wont to be in subduing the countries of our enemies? Sithence Alexander fell from his hard armour to his soft robes, behold the face of

10

his court: youths that were wont to carry deuices of victory
 in their shields engraue now posies of loue in their ringes; 15
 they that were accustomed on trotting horses to charge the
 enemy with a launce, now in easie coches ride vp and downe
 to court ladies; in-steade of sword and target to hazard their
 liues, vse pen and paper to paint their loues; yea, such a 20
 feare and faintnesse is growne in court that they wish rather
 to heare the blöwing of a horne to hunt than the sound of a
 trumpet to fight. O Philip, wert thou aliue to see this altera-
 tion, — thy men turned to women, thy souldiers to louers,
 gloues worne in veluet caps in-stead of plumes in grauen
 helmets, — thou wouldest either dye among them for sorrow 25
 or confound them for anger!

CLYT. Cease, Parmenio, least in speaking what becommeth
 thee not, thou feele what liketh thee not: truth is neuer with-
 out a scracht face; whose tongue, although it cannot be cut
 out, yet must it be tied vp. 30

PA. It griueth me not a little for Hephestion, who
 thirsteth for honour, not ease; but such is his fortune and
 neerenesse in friendship to Alexander that hee must lay a
 pillow vnder his head, when hee would put a target in his
 hand. But let vs draw in, to see how well it becomes them 35
 to tread the measures in a daunce that were wont to set the
 order for a march.

Exeunt.

Actus quartus. Scæna quarta.

[*The shop of APELLES.*]

APELLES. CAMPASPE.

APEL. I haue now, Campaspe, almost made an ende.

CAMP. You told mee, Apelles, you would neuer end.

APEL. Neuer end my loue, for it shalbe eternall.

CAMP. That is, neither to haue beginning nor ending.

APEL. You are disposed to mistake; I hope you do not 5
 mistrust.

CAMP. What will you say, if Alexander perceiue your loue?

APEL. I will say it is no treason to loue.

CAMP. But how if hee will not suffer thee to see my person. 10

APEL. Then will I gaze continually on thy picture.

CAMP. That will not feede thy heart.

APEL. Yet shall it fill mine eye. Besides, the sweet thoughts, the sure hopes, thy protested faith, wil cause me to embrace thy shadow continually in mine armes, of the which, by strong imagination, I will make a substance. 15

CAMP. Wel, I must be gone. But this assure your-selfe, that I had rather be in thy shop grinding colours than in Alexanders court following higher fortunes. 20

[*She leaves him.*]

CAMPASPE *alone.*

[CAMP.] Foolish wench, what hast thou done? That, alas! which cannot be vndone; and therefore I feare me vndone. But content is such a life I care not for abundance. O Apelles, thy loue commeth from the heart, but Alexanders from the mouth! The loue of kings is like the blowing of winds, which whistle sometimes gently among the leaues, *and* straight-waies turne the trees vp by the rootes; or fire, which warmeth afarre off, and burneth neere-hand; or the sea, which maketh men hoise their sailes in a flattering calme, and to cut their mastes in a rough storme. 25 They place affection by times, by policy, by appoyntment. If they frowne, who dares call them vnconstant; if bewray secrets, who will tearme them vntrue; if fall to other loues, who trembles not if he call them vnfaithfull? In kings there can bee no loue but to queenes, for as neere must they meete in maiestie as they doe in affection. It is requisite to stande aloofe from kings loue, Ioue, and lightening! 30 35

Exit.

Actus quartus. Scæna quinta.

[*The shop of APELLES.*]

APELLES. [ALEXANDER'S] PAGE.

APEL. Now, Apelles, gather thy wits together. Campaspe is no lesse wise then faire; thy-selfe must be no lesse cunning then faithfull. It is no small matter to be riually with Alexander.

[*Enter PAGE.*]

PAG. Apelles, you must come away quickly with the picture, the king thinketh that, now you haue painted it, you play with it. 5

APEL. If I would play with pictures, I haue enough at home.

PAGE. None perhaps you like so well. 10

APEL. It may be I haue painted none so well.

PA. I haue knowen many fairer faces.

APEL. And I many better¹ boyes. *Exeunt.*

Actus quintus. Scæna prima.

[*The market-place; DIOGENES' tub.*]

DIOGENES, SYLVIUS, PERIM, MILO, TRICO, MANES.

SY. I haue brought my sons, Diogenes, to be taught of thee.

DIOG. What can thy sonnes doe?

SYLU. You shall see their qualities. Dance, sirha!

Then PERIM danceth.

How like you this? doth he well? 5

DIOG. The better, the worser.

SYLUI. The musicke very good.

DIOG. The musitions very bad, who onely study to haue their strings in tune, neuer framing their manners to order.

¹ Bl. bettes.

SYLUI. Now shall you see the other : tumble, sirha! 10

MILLO tumbleth.

How like you this? Why do you laugh?

DIOG. To see a wagge that was borne to breake his neck by destinie to practise it by art.

MILLO. This dogge will bite me ; I will not be with him.

DIOG. Feare not, boy ; dogges eate no thistles. 15

PERIM. I maruell what dogge thou art, if thou be a dogge.

DIOG. When I am hungry, a mastife ; and when my belly is full, a spannell.

SYLUI. Dost thou beleue that there are any gods, that thou art so dogged? 20

DIOG. I must needs beleue there are gods ; for I thinke thee anemie to them.

SYLUI. Why so?

DIOG. Because thou hast taught one of thy sonnes to rule his legges and not to follow learning, the other to bend his bodie euery way and his minde no way. 25

PERIM. Thou doest nothing but snarle and barke, like a dogge.

DIO. It is the next vvay to driue away a theefe. 30

SYLUI. Now shall you heare the third, who sings like a nightingale.

DIOG. I care not ; for I haue a nightingale to¹ sing herselfe.

SYL. Sing, sirha! 35

TRVCO singeth:

Song.

What bird so sings, yet so dos wayle?

O 't is² the rauish'd nightingale.

"Iug, iug, iug, iug, tereu," shee cries ;

And still her woes at midnight rise.

¹ Bl. *omits* to.

² Bl. *t' is*.

Braue prick-song ! who is 't now we heare? 40
 None but the larke so shrill and cleare.
 How at heauens gats she claps her wings,
 The morne not waking till shee sings!
 Heark, heark, with what a pretty throat
 Poore Robin red-breast tunes his note ! 45
 Heark how the iolly cuckoes sing
 "Cuckoe," to welcome in the spring, —
 "Cuckoe," to welcome in the spring!

SYL. Loe, Diogenes, I am sure thou canst not doe so
 much. 50

DI. But there is neuer a thrush but can.

SY. What hast thou taught Manes, thy man?

DI. To be as vnlike as may be thy sons.

MANES. He hath taught me to fast, lie hard and run
 away. 55

SYL. How sayest thou, Perim? wilt thou bee with him?

PERIM. I, so he will teach me first to runne away.

DIOG. Thou needest not be taught, thy legges are so
 nimble.

SYLUI. How sayest thou, Milo? wilt thou be with him? 60

DIOG. Nay, hold your peace ; hee shall not.

SILUI. Why?

DIOG. There is not roome enough for him and me to
 tumble both in one tub.

SYLUI. Well, Diogenes, I perceiue my sonnes brooke not
 thy manners. 65

DIOG. I thought no lesse, when they knew my vertues.

SYLUI. Farewell, Diogenes ; thou neededst not haue
 scraped rootes, if thou wouldst haue followed Alexander.

DIOG. Nor thou haue followed Alexander, if thou hadst
 scraped rootes. 70

Exeunt.

Actus quintus. Scæna secunda.

[*The shop of APELLES.*]APELLES *alone.*

[APEL.] I feare mee, Apelles, that thine eyes haue
 blabbed that which thy tongue durst not! What little
 regard hadst thou! whilst Alexander viewed the counterfeit
 of Campaspe, thou stoodest gazing on her countenance. If
 he espie, or but suspect, thou must needs twice perish, — with 5
 his hate and thine owne loue. Thy pale lookes when he
 blushed, thy sad countenance when he smiled, thy sighes
 when he questioned, may breed in him a ielousie, perchance
 a frenzie. O loue! I neuer before knew what thou wert,
 and now hast thou made me that I know not what my-selfe 10
 am! Onely this I know, that I must endure intolerable
 passions for vnknowne pleasures. Dispute not the cause,
 wretch, but yeeld to it; for better it is to melt with desire
 than wrastle with loue. Cast thy-selfe on thy carefull bed,
 be content to liue vnknown *and* die vnfound. O Campaspe, 15
 I haue painted thee in my heart! Painted? nay, contrary
 to mine arte, imprinted! and that in such deepe characters
 that nothing can rase it out, vnlesse it rubbe my¹ heart out.

Exit.

Actus quintus. Scæna tertia.

[*The market-place.*]MILECTUS, PHRYGIUS, LAIS [*walking*]. DIOGENES [*in his tub*].

MIL. It shall goe hard but this peace shall bring vs some
 pleasure.

PHRI. Downe with armes, and vp with legges! This is
 a world for the nonce!

LAIS. Sweet youths, if you knew² what it were to saue 5
 your sweet blood, you would not so foolishly go about to

¹ Quartos *and* Bl. thy; *corr. by* Dods.² Bl. know.

spend it. What delight can there be in gashing, to make foule scarres in faire faces and crooked^d maimes in streight legges, as though men, being borne goodly by nature, would of purpose become deformed by folly? And all, forsooth, for a new-found tearme called "valiant," — a word which breedeth more quarrels than the sense can commendation. 10

MIL. It is true, Lais, a feather-bed hath no fellow. Good drinke makes good blood, and shall pelting words spill it?

PHRY. I meane to enjoy the world, and to draw out my life at the wire-drawers, not to curtall it off at the cutlers. 15

LA. You may talke of vvarre, speake bigge, conquer vworlds vvith great words; but stay at home, vvhere in-steade of alarums you shall haue dances, for hot battailes with fierce men gentle skirmishes with faire women. These pevvtter coates can neuer sit so well as satten doublets. Beleeue me, you cannot conceiue the pleasures of peace vnlesse you despise the rudenes of warre. 20

MIL. It is so. But see Diogenes prying ouer his tub! Diogenes, what sayest thou to such a morsell? [*Pointing to LAIS.*] 25

DIOG. I say I would spit it out of my mouth, because it should not poyson my stomacke.

PHRY. Thou speakest as thou art; it is noe meate for dogges.

DIOG. I am a dogge, and philosophy rates me from carrion.

LAIS. Vnciuil wretch, whose manners are answerable to thy calling, the time was thou vvouldest haue had my company, had it not beene, as thou saidst, too deare! 30

DI. I remember there was a thing that I repented mee of, and now thou hast told it. Indeed it vvvas too deare of nothing, and thou deare to no-bodie. 35

LAYS. Downe, villaine, or I will haue thy head broken!

MILE. Will you couch? [*Beating him.*]

PHRY. Auant, curre! Come, sweet Lays, let vs goe to some place and possesse peace. But first let vs sing; there is more pleasure in tuning of a voyce than in a volly of shot. 40

[*They sing.*]

MILEC. Now let vs make hast, least Alexander finde vs here!

Exeunt.

Actus quintus. Scæna quarta.

[*The market-place.*]¹ALEXANDER, HEPHESTION, PAGE [*together*]. DIOGENES [*in the back-ground*]. APELLES [*and*] CAMPASPE [*enter when called*].

ALEX. Me thinketh, Hephestion, you are more melancholy than you were accustomed, but I perceiue it is all for Alexander. You can neither brooke this peace nor my pleasure. Bee of good cheare ; though I winke, I sleepe not.

HEPHEST. Melancholy I am not, nor well content ; for, I know not how, there is such a rust crept into my bones with this long ease that I feare I shall not scowre it out with infinite labours. 5

ALEX. Yes, yes, if all the trauailes of conquering the world will set either thy bodie or mine in tune, we will vnder-take them. But what thinke you of Apelles? Did yee euer see any so perplexed? Hee neither answered directly to any question nor looked stedfastly vpon any-thing. I hold my life the painter is in loue. 10

HEPHEST. It may be ; for commonly we see it incident in artificers to be enamoured of their owne workes, as Archidamus of his wooden doue, Pygmalion of his iuorie image, Arachne of his vwooden swanne, — especially painters, who, playing with their owne conceits, now coueting² to draw a glancing eie, then a rolling, novv a vvinking, still mending it, neuer ending it, till they be caught vvith it, and then, poore soules ! they kisse the colours vvith their lips vvith vvwhich before they vvere loth to taint their fingers. 15 20

ALEX. I will find it out. Page, goe speedily for Apelles, will him to come hither ; and, when you see vs earnestly in talke, sodainly crie out : “ Apelles shop is on fire ! ” 25

PAGE. It shall be done.

¹ I have so assigned this scene because it can be so played, not because this was the intention of the author, who seems rather to have conceived one of those scenes in which all places lie adjacent to one another.

² Qy. read couet.

ALEX. For-get not your lesson. [Exit PAGE.]

HEPH. I maruell what your deuise shalbe.

ALEX. The euent shall proue. 30

HEPH. I pittie the poore painter, if he be in loue.

ALEX. Pitie him not, I pray thee. That seuered grauity set aside, what doe you thinke of loue?

HEPH. As the Macedonians doe of their hearbe beet, which, looking yellow in the ground and blacke in the hand, thinke it better seene than toucht. 35

ALEX. But what doe you imagine it to be?

HEPH. A word, by superstition thought a god, by vse turned to an humour, by selfe-will made a flattering madnesse.

ALEX. You are too hard-hearted to thinke so of loue. 40
Let vs goe to Diogenes. [They approach the tub.] Diogenes, thou mayst thinke it somewhat that Alexander commeth to thee againe so soone.

DIOG. If you come to learne, you could not come soone enough; if to laugh, you be come too soone. 45

HEPH. It would better become thee to be more courteous *and* frame thy-self to please.

DIOG. And you better to bee lesse, if you durst displease.

ALEX. What doest thou thinke of the time we haue here?

DIOG. That we haue little *and* lose much. 50

ALEX. If one be sicke, what wouldst thou haue him doe?

DIOG. Bee sure that hee make not his physician his heire.

ALEX. If thou mightest haue thy will, how much ground would content thee?

DIOG. As much as you in the end must be contented withall. 55

ALEX. What, a world?

DIOG. No; the length of my bodie.

ALEX. Hephestion, shall I bee a little pleasant with him?

HEPH. You may, but hee will be very peruerse with you. 60

ALEX. It skils¹ not; I cannot be angry with him. Diogenes, I pray thee what doest thou thinke of loue?

DIOG. A litle worsed than I can of hate.

¹ First ed. skilleth.

ALEX. And why?

DIOG. Because it is better to hate the things which make
to loue than to loue the things which giue occassion of hate. 65

ALEX. Why, bee not women the best creatures in the
world?

DIOG. Next men and bees.

ALEX. What doest thou dislike chiefly in a woman? 70

DIOG. One thing.

ALEX. What?

DIOG. That she is a woman.

ALEX. In mine opinion thou wert neuer borne of a woman,
that thou thinkest so hardly of women. But now commeth 75
Apelles, who, I am sure, is as farre from thy thoughts as thou
art from his cunning. Diogenes, I will haue thy cabin re-
moued neerer to my court, because I will be a philosopher.

DIOG. And when you haue done so, I pray you remoue
your court further from my cabin, because I will not be a 80
courtier.

[Enter APELLES.]

ALEX. But here commeth Apelles. Apelles, what peece
of worke haue you now in hand?

APEL. None in hand, if it like your Maiestie; but I am
deuising a platforme in my head. 85

ALEXAND. I thinke your hand put it in your head. Is it
nothing about Venus?

APELLES. No; but some-thing about¹ Venus.

PAGE. Apelles! Apelles! looke about¹ you, your shop is
on fire! 90

APEL. Aye mee! if the picture of Campaspe be burnt, I
am vndone.

ALEX. Stay, Apelles; no haste. It is your heart is on
fire, not your shop; and, if Campaspe hang there, I would
shee were burnt. But haue you the picture of Campaspe? 95

¹ In Bl. these two words (each standing at the end of a line) are inter-
changed. F. prints as I do; but, as he has no note, I do not know whether
he follows one of the older editions, or corrects by conjecture.

Belike you loue her well, that you care not though all be lost, so she be safe.

APEL. Not loue her? — but your Maiestie knowes that painters in their last workes are said to excell themselues; and in this I haue so much pleased my-selfe that the shadow 100
as much delighteth mee, being an artificer, as the substance doth others, that are amorous.

ALEX. You lay your colours grosly. Though I could not paint in your shop, I can spie into your excuse. Be not ashamed, Apelles; it is a gentlemans sport to be in loue. — 105
[To the PAGE.] Call hither Campaspe. — Me thinks I might haue beene made priuie to your affection; though my counsell had not bin necessary, yet my countenance might haue beene thought requisite. But Apelles, forsooth, loueth vnder hand, yea, and vnder Alexanders nose, and — but I say no 110
more!

APEL. Apelles loueth not so; but he liueth to doe as Alexander will.

[Enter CAMPASPE.]

ALEX. Campaspe, here is newes! Apelles is in loue with you. 115

CAMP. It pleaseth your Maiestie to say so.

ALEX. Hephestion, I will trie her too. Campaspe, for the good qualities I know in Apelles and the vertue I see in you, I am determind you shall enioy one another. How say you, Campaspe? Would you say, “I”? 120

CAMP. Your hand-maid must obey if you command.

ALEXAN. Thinke you not, Hephestion, that shee would faine be commanded?

HEPH. I am no thought-catcher, but I ghesse vnhappily.

ALEX. I will not enforce marriage where I cannot com- 125
pell loue.

CAMP. But your Maiestie may moue a question where you be willing to haue a match.

ALEX. Beleeue me, Hephestion, these parties are agreed; they would haue mee both priest and wisse. Apelles, 130
take Campaspe! Why moue yee not? Campaspe, take

Apelles! Will it not be? If you be ashamed one of the other, by my consent you shall neuer come together. But dissemble not, Campaspe: doe you loue Apelles?

CAMP. Pardon, my lord; I loue Apelles. 135

ALEX. Apelles, it were a shame for you, being loued so openly of so faire a virgin, to say the contrarie. Doe you loue Campaspe?

APEL. Onely Campaspe!

ALEX. Two louing wormes, Hephestion! I perceiue 140
Alexander cannot subdue the affections of men, though¹
conquer their countries. Loue falleth, like a dew, as well
vpon the low grasse as vpon the high cedar. Sparkes haue
their heat, ants their gall, flies their spleene. Well, enioy
one another. I giue her thee frankly, Apelles. Thou shalt 145
see that Alexander maketh but a toy of loue and leadeth
affection in fetters, vsing fancie as a foole to make him sport
or a minstrell to make him merry. It is not the amorous
glance of an eye can settle an idle thought in the heart. No,
no, it is childrens game, a life for seamsters and schollers: 150
the one, pricking in clouts, haue nothing else to thinke on;
the other, picking fancies out of books, haue little else to
maruaile at. Go, Apelles, take with you your Campaspe,
Alexander is cloyed with looking on that which thou won-
drest at. 155

APEL. Thankes to your Maiestie on bended knee: you haue honoured Apelles!

CAMP. Thankes, with bowed heart: you haue blessed Campaspe.

Exeunt [APELLES and CAMPASPE].

ALEX. Page, goe warne Clytus and Parmenio and the 160
other lords to be in a readinesse; let the trumpet sound;
strike² vp the drumme; and I will presently into Persia.
[Exit PAGE.] How now, Hephestion? is Alexander able to
resist loue as he list?

HEPH. The conquering of Thebes was not so honourable 165
as the subduing of these thoughts.

¹ F. though he, *without note.*

² *Misprinted trike in F.*

ALEX. It were a shame Alexander should desire to command the world, if he could not command himselfe. But come, let vs goe. I will trie whether I can better beare my hand with my heart than I could with mine eye. And, good Hephestion, when all the world is wonne and euery country is thine and mine, either find me out another to subdue, or, of my word, I will fall in loue!

Exeunt.

FINIS.

The Epilogue at the Blacke-Friers.

Where the rain-bow toucheth the tree, no caterpillars will hang on the leaues; where the glo-worme creepeth in the night, no adder will goe in the day: wee hope, in the eares where our trauales be lodged, no carping shall harbour in those tongues. Our exercises must be as your iudgement is: resembling water, which is alwayes of the same colour into what it runneth. In the Troyan horse lay couched souldiers, with children: and in heapes of many words, we feare, diuers vnfit, among some allowable. But, as Demosthenes with often breathing vp the hill amended his stammering, so wee hope with sundrie labours against the haire to correct our studies. If the tree be blasted that blossomes, the fault is in the winde and not in the root: and if our pastimes bee misliked that haue beene allowed,¹ you must impute it to the malice of others and not our endeouour. And so we rest in good case, if you rest well content!

The Epilogue at the Court.

We cannot tell whether wee are fallen among Diomedes birdes or his horses, — the one receiued some men with sweet notes, the other bit all men with sharpe teeth. But, as

¹ *It is obvious from this, even if it were not antecedently probable, that, although the Epilogue at the Court stands last, the performance at the Court came first.*

Homers gods conueyed them into cloudes whom they would
 haue kept from curses, and as Venus, least Adonis should be 5
 pricked with the stings of adders, couered his face with the
 wings of swannes, so, wee hope, being shielded with your
 Highnesse countenance, wee shall, though¹ heare the neigh-
 ing, yet not feele the kicking of those iades, and receiue,
 though no prayse, — which wee cannot deserue, — yet a par- 10
 don, which in all humilitie we desire. As yet we cannot tell
 what we should tearme our labours, iron or bullion; only it
 belongeth to your Maiestie to make them fit either for the
 forge or the mint, currant by the stampe or counterfeit by the
 anuill. For, as nothing is to be called white vnlesse it had 15
 beene named white by the first creature, so can there be
 nothing thought good in the opinion of others vnlesse it be
 christened good by the iudgement of your-selfe. For our-
 selues, againe, we are like these torches of waxe, of which,
 being in your Highnesse hands, you may make doues or 20
 vultures, roses or nettles, laurels for a garland or ealder for
 a disgrace.

¹ F. accepts Dods. emendation of inserting we; but it seems unnecessary.

FINIS.

THE
SCOTTISH
HISTORIE OF JAMES THE

fourth, flaine at *Flodden* :

Entermixed with a pleafant Comedie, presented by

Oboram King of *Fayeries* :

*As it hath bene fundrie times publikely
plaide.*

Written by *Robert Greene*, Maifter of Arts.

Omne tulit punctum.

Vignette.

LONDON

Printed by Thomas Creede. 1598.

May, 1594, a year and a half after the death of the author, this play was licensed for printing, but no copy of that edition is known to exist. I print from the same copy of Creede's edition (Mitford's copy, now in the British Museum) that was used by Dyce. In the footnotes I have pointed out the most important differences between my copyist's reading of Creede's edition (Cr.) and Dyce's edition (D.); but there are in the Scotch passages, which Dyce usually reproduced accurately, many insignificant differences of spelling, which I have noted only exceptionally. Grosart's edition (*Works of Robert Greene*, vol. XIII) is indicated by G.

[DRAMATIS PERSONAE.

OBERON, *King of Fairies.*

BOHAN, *a Scottish misanthrope.*

SLIPPER }
 NANO } *his sons.*

Fairies and other mutes.

KING OF SCOTS.

KING OF ENGLAND.

DOUGLAS }
 MORTON } *Scottish nobles.*
 ROSS }

BISHOP OF ST. ANDREWS.

SIR BARTRAM }
 SIR CUTHBERT ANDERSON } *Scottish gentlemen.*

EUSTACE, *an English gentleman.*

ATEUKIN, *a parasite.*

ANDREW }
 SLIPPER } *his servants.*

JAQUES, *a Frenchman.*

NANO, *the queen's dwarf.*

A Lawyer.

A Merchant.

A Divine.

*Lord Percy, Samles, Purveyor, Herald, Scout,
 Noblemen, Soldiers, Huntsmen, &c.*

DOROTHEA, *queen of Scots.*

COUNTESS OF ARRAN.

IDA, *her daughter.*

LADY ANDERSON.

Ladies and Servants.

SCENE: *Scotland.*]

THE SCOTTISH HYSTORIE OF IAMES THE
FOURTH, SLAINE AT FLODDEN.

[The Induction.]

Musicke playing within.

*Enter after*¹ OBERON,² *King of Fayries, an*³ *antique, who dance about a tombe plac't conueniently on the stage, out of the which suddainly starts vp as they daunce BOHAN, a Scot, attyred like a ridstall man, from whom the antique flyes.*⁴ OBERON *manet.*

BOHAN. Ay say, whats thou?

OBERON. Thy friend, Bohan.

BOHAN. What wot I or reck I that? Whay, guid man, I reck no friend, nor ay reck no foe; als ene to me! Git the ganging, and trouble not may whayet, or ays gar the recon
me nene of thay friend, by the Mary masse, sall I! 5

OBER. Why, angrie Scot, I visit thee for loue: then what mooues thee to wroath?

BOHAN. The deele awhit reck I thy loue. For I knowe too well that true loue tooke her flight twentie winter sence
to heauen; whither till ay can, weele I wot, ay sal nere finde
loue. An thou lou'st me, leaue me to my-selfe. But what
were those puppits that hopt and skipt about me year-whayle? 10

OBERON. My subiects.

BOH. Thay subiects? whay, art thou a king? 15

OBER. I am.

BOHAN. The deele thou art! whay, thou look'st not so

¹ Cr. G. After; D. Aster.

² Cr. G. Oberō.

⁴ So Cr; G. Antique[s] flye; D. Antics fly.

³ D. G. *having read after as a name or title are obliged to change an to and. They also change antique to antiques.*

big as the king of clubs nor so sharpe as the king of spades nor so faine as the king a daymonds.¹ Be the masse, ay take thee to bee the king of false harts: therefore, I rid thee, 20
away! or ayse so curry your kingdome that yous be glad to runne to saue your life.

OBER. Why, stoycall Scot, do what thou dar'st to me: heare is my brest, strike!

BOH. Thou wilt not threap me. This whiniard has gard 25
many better men to lope then thou. But how now? Gos sayds! what, wilt not out? Whay, thou wich! thou deele! Gads fute, may whiniard!

OBER. Why, pull, man! But what an twear out, how then?

BOH. This then, thou weart best begon first; for ayl so 30
lop thy lym that thouse go with half a knaues carkasse to the deele.

OBER. Draw it out. Now strike, foole. Canst thou not?

BOH. Bread ay Gad, what deele is in me? Whay, tell mee, 35
thou skipiack: what art thou?

OBER. Nay, first tell me what thou wast from thy birth, what thou hast past hitherto, why thou dwellest in a tombe *and* leauest the world; and then I will release thee of these bonds; before, not.

BOH. And not before, then needs must needs sal! I was 40
borne a gentleman of the best bloud in all Scotland, except the king. When time brought me to age, and death tooke my parents, I became a courtier; where, though ay list not praise my-selfe, ay engraued the memory of Boughon on the skin-coate of some of them, and reueld with the proudest. 45

OBER. But why, liuing in such reputation, didst thou leaue to be a courtier?

BOH. Because my pride was vanitie, my expence losse, my reward faire words and large promises, *and* my hopes spilt, for that after many yeares seruice one outran me,—and what 50
the deele should I then do there? No, no; flattering knaues that can cog and prate fastest speede best in the court.

OBER. To what life didst thou then betake thee?

¹ Cr. G. Adaymonds.

BOH. I then chang'd the court for the countrey, and the wars for a wife; but I found the craft of swaines more vile than the knauery of courtiers, the charge of children more heauie then seruants, and wiues tongues worse then the warres it-selfe; and therefore I gaue ore that, *and* went to the citie to dwell, *and* there I kept a great house with smal cheer, but all was nere the neere. 55
60

OBER. And why?

BOH. Because in seeking friends I found table-guests to eate me *and* my meat, my wiues gossops to bewray the secrets of my heart, kindred to betray the effect of my life. Which when I noted, — the court ill, the country worse, and the citie worst of all, — in good time my wife died, ay wood she had died twentie winter sooner, by the masse! — leauing my two sonnes to the world, I shut¹ my-selfe into this tombe, where, if I dye, I am sure I am safe from wilde beasts, but, whilst I liue, cannot be free *from* ill companie. Besides, now I am sure, gif all my friends faile me, I sall haue a graue of mine owne prouiding. This is all. Now what art thou? 65
70

OBER. Oberon, King of Fayries, that loues thee because thou hatest the world; and, to gratulate thee, I brought those antiques to shew thee some sport in daunsing, which thou haste loued well. 75

BOHAN. Ha, ha, ha! thinkest thou those puppits can please me? whay, I haue two sonnes, that with one Scottish gigge shall breake the necke of thy antiques. 80

OBER. That I would faine see.

BOHA. Why, thou shalt. Howe, boyes!

Enter SLIPPER and NANO.

Haud your clacks, lads; trattle not for thy life, but gather vppe your legges and daunce me forthwith a gigge worth the sight. 85

SLIP. Why, I must talk, on² I dy fort; wherefore was my tongue made?

¹ G. and shutting; D. "*some words wanting.*"

² D. *emends to an.*

BOHA. Prattle, an thou darst, one word more, and ais dab this whiniard in thy wembe.

OBER. Be quiet, Bohan! Ile strike him dumbe, and his brother too; their talk shal not hinder our gyg. Fall to it; dance, I say, man! 90

BOH. Dance, humer; ¹ dance, ay rid thee!

The two dance a gig devised for the nonst.

Now get you to the wide world with more then my father gaue me, — thats, learning enough, both kindes, knauerie *and* 95 honestie; and that I gaue you spend at pleasure.

OBER. Nay, for their sport I will giue them this gift: to the dwarfe I giue a quicke witte, prettie ² of body, and a warrant ³ his preferment to a princes service, where by his wisdome he shall gaine more loue then common; and to log- 100 gerhead your sonne I giue a wandering life, and promise he shall neuer lacke, and auow that, ⁴ if in all distresses he call vpon me, to helpe him. Now let them go.

Exeunt with curtesies.

BOH. Now, king, if thou bee a king, I will shew thee whay I hate the world by demonstration. In the yeare 1520 105 was in Scotland a king overruled with parasites, misled by lust, *and* many circumstances too long to trattle on now, much like our court of Scotland this day. That story haue I set down; gang with me to the gallery, *and* Ile shew thee the same in action by guid fellowes of our country-men; and 110 then, when thou seest that, iudge if any wise man would not leaue the world if he could.

OBER. That will I see; lead, and Ile follow thee.

Exeunt.

¹ In his note on this passage G. says: "Dyce, in his first edition, printed 'Heimore' from a modern text." This is misleading, especially when taken in connection with G.'s statement that the Huth copy of this play is unique. What Dyce says is that in the copy he used for his first edition the leaf containing this passage is modern. As I print from the copy used by Dyce, I abandon it and follow G. from l. 50 above to the end of this Induction.

² G. prettie[ness].

³ D. G. awarrant.

⁴ D. strikes out that.

OF IAMES THE FOURTH.¹*Laus Deo detur in eternum!*Actus² primus. Scena prima.[*The Scottish court.*]*Enter³ the KING OF ENGLAND, the KING OF SCOTS, DORITHE, his queen, the COUNTESSE, LADY IDA, with other LORDS; and ATEUKIN with them, aloofe.*

K. OF SCOTS. Brother of England, since our neighboring
land

And neare alliance doth⁴ inuite our loues,
The more I think vpon our last accord,
The more I greeue your suddaine parting hence.
First, lawes of friendship did confirme our peace; 5
Now, both the seale of faith and marriage-bed,
The name of father, and the style of friend.
These force in me affection full confirmd,
So that I greeue — and this my heartie grieue
The heauens record, the world may witness well — 10
To loose your presence, who are now to me
A father, brother and a vowed friend.

K. OF ENG. Link all these louely stiles, good king, in one;
And, since thy grieue exceeds in my depart,
I leaue my Dorithea to enioy 15
Thy whole compact of⁵ loues and plighted vowes.
Brother of Scotland, this is my ioy, my life,
Her fathers honour and her countries hope,
Her mothers comfort and her husbands blisse.
I tell thee, king, in louing of my Doll 20
Thou bindst her fathers heart and all his friends
In bands of loue that death cannot dissolue.

¹ Omitted by D. G.² Cr. Attus.³ In Cr. the stage-direction precedes Actus primus.⁴ D. changes to do.⁵ D. inserts of; G. reads compact[ed]. In Cr. l. 15 ends here.

K. OF SCOTS. Nor can her father loue her like to me.
 My liues light and the comfort of my soule,
 Faire Dorithea, that wast Englands pride, 25
 Welcome to Scotland! And, in signe of loue,
 Lo, I inuest thee with the Scottish crowne.
 Nobles and ladies, stoupe vnto your queene;
 And trumpets sound, that heralds may proclaime
 Faire Dorithea peerlesse queene of Scots! 30
 ALL. Long liue and prosper our faire q[ueene] of Scots!

Enstall and crowne her.

DOR. Thanks to the King of Kings for¹ my dignity;
 Thanks to my father, that prouides so carefully;
 Thanks to my lord and husband for this honor;²
 And thanks to all that loue their king and me! 35

ALL. Long liue faire Dorithea, our true queene!

K. OF E. Long shine the sun of Scotland in her pride,
 Her fathers comfort and faire Scotlands bride!
 But, Dorithea, since I must depart
 And leaue thee from thy tender mothers charge, 40
 Let me aduise my louely daughter first
 What best befits her in a forraine land:
 Liue, Doll, for many eyes shall looke on thee;
 Haue³ care of honor and the present state,
 For she that steps to height of maiestie 45
 Is euen the marke whereat the enemy aimes.
 Thy vertues shall be construed to vice,
 Thine affable discourse to abiect minde;
 If coy, detracting tongues will call thee proud:
 Be therefore warie in this slippery state; 50
 Honour thy husband, loue him as thy life;
 Make choyce of friends — as eagles of their yoong —
 Who sooth no vice, who flatter not for gaine,
 But loue such friends as do the truth maintaine.

¹ G. *inserts* this.

² G. honour.

³ D. *emends* to With, on account of the *previous line*.

Thinke on these lessons when thou art alone, 55
And thou shalt liue in health when I am gone.

DOR. I will engraue these precepts¹ in my heart ;
And, as the wind with calmnesse woes you hence,
Euen so I wish the heauens, in all mishaps,
May blesse my father with continuall grace. 60

K. OF E. Then, son, farwell ;
The fauouring windes inuites² vs to depart ;³
Long circumstance in taking princely leaues
Is more officious then conuenient.
Brother of Scotland, loue me in my childe ! 65
You greet me well, if so you will her good.

K. OF SC. Then, louely Doll, and all that fauor me,
Attend to see our English friends at sea ;
Let all their charge depend vpon my purse :
They are our neighbors, by whose kind accord 70
We dare attempt the proudest potentate.
Onely, faire countesse, and your daughter, stay ;
With you I haue some other thing to say.

Exeunt all saue the KING, the COUNTESSE, IDA, ATEUKIN, in all royaltie.⁴

K. OF S. [*aside*] So let them tryumph that haue cause to
ioy !
But, wretched king, thy nuptiall knot is death, 75
Thy bride the breeder of thy countries ill ;
For, thy false heart dissenting from thy hand,
Misled by loue, hast⁵ made another choyce, —
Another choyce, euen when thou vowdst thy soule
To Dorithea, Englands choysest pride. 80
O then thy wandring eyes bewicht thy heart !
Euen in the chappell did thy fancie change,
When, periur'd man, though faire Doll had thy hand,

¹ *This perhaps represents the pronunciation.*

² *D. changes to invite.*

³ *Lines 61, 62 as one in Cr.*

⁴ *In G. these three words precede saue.*

⁵ *D. emends to hath.*

The Scottish Idaes bewtie ¹ stale thy heart!
 Yet feare and loue hath ² tyde thy readie tongue 85
 From blabbing forth the passions of thy minde,
 Lest ³ fearefull silence haue in suttle lookes
 Bewrayd the treason of my new-vowd loue.
 Be faire and louely, Doll, but here 's the prize,
 That lodgeth here, and entred through mine eyes. 90
 Yet, how-so-ere I loue, I must be wise!—
 Now, louely countesse, what reward or grace
 May I imploy ⁴ on you for this your zeale
 And humble honors done vs in our court
 In entertainment of the English king? 95

COUNTESSE. It was of dutie, prince, that I haue done;
 And what in fauour may content me most
 Is that it please your Grace to giue me leauē
 For to returne vnto my countrey home.

K. OF SCOTS. But, louely Ida, is your mind the same? 100

IDA. I count of court, my lord, as wise men do:
 Tis fit for those that knowes ⁵ what longs thereto.
 Each person to his place: the wise to art,
 The cobbler to his clout, the swaine to cart.

K. OF SC. But, Ida, you are faire, and bewtie ⁶ shines 105
 And seemeth best where pomp her pride refines.

IDA. If bewtie ⁷— as I know there 's none in me—
 Were sworne my loue, and I his life should be,
 The farther from the court I were remoued,
 The more, I thinke, of Heauen I were beloued. 110

K. OF SCOTS. And why? ⁸

IDA. Because the court is counted Venus net,
 Where gifts and voves for stales are often set.
 None, be she chaste as Vesta, but shall meete
 A curious toong to charme her eares with sweet. 115

¹ G. beauty.

⁵ D. changes to know.

² D. changes to have.

⁶ G. beautie.

⁸ D. G. change to 'Less.

⁷ G. beutie.

⁴ D. changed to impose; but later restored the text.

⁸ The play contains Alexandrines, but, as short lines are even more common, I leave these two syllables as a line.

K. OF SCOTS. Why, Ida, then I see you set at naught,
The force of loue.

IDA. In sooth this is my thoght,
Most gracious¹ king, that they that little proue²
Are mickle blest from bitter sweets of loue.
And weele I wot, I heard a shepheard sing 120
That, like a bee, loue hath a little sting.
He lurkes in flowres, he pearcheth on the trees,
He on kings pillowes bends his prettie knees ;
The boy is blinde but when he will not spie ;
He hath a leaden³ foote, and wings to flie : 125
Beshrow me yet, for all these strange effects,
If I would like the lad, that so infects.

K. OF SCOTS. [*aside*] Rare wit, fair face, what hart could
more desire?
But Doll is faire, and doth concerne thee neere.⁴
Let Doll be faire, she is wonne ; but I must woe 130
And win faire Ida ; theres some choyce in two. —
But, Ida, thou art coy.

IDA. And why, dread king?

K. OF SCOTS. In that you will dispraise so sweet a thing
As loue. Had I my wish —

IDA. What then?

K. OF SCOTS. Then would I place
His arrow⁵ here, his bewtie in that face.⁶ 135

IDA. And were Apollo moued and rulde by me,
His wisdom should be yours, and mine his tree.

K. OF SCOTS. But here returnes our traine. Welcome,
faire Doll!⁷
How fares our father? is he shipt and gone?

*Enters the traine backe.*⁸

¹ G. gracious.

⁴ *Qy.* nigher, for rhyme.

² *In Cr. ll. 117, 118 as three, ending loue, king, proue.*

³ G. leaded.

⁵ G. arrows.

⁶ *In Cr. ll. 132–135 as seven, ending coy, king, sweet, wish, then, here, face.*

⁷ *In Cr. these three words are in l. 139.*

⁸ *G. silently transfers this stage-direction (with Enter for Enters) to the middle of l. 138.*

DOR. My royall father is both shipt and gone ; 140
 God and faire winds direct him to his home !

K. OF SC. Amen, say I ! [*aside*] Wold thou wert with him
 too !

Then might I haue a fitter time to woo. —

But, Countesse, you would be gone : therfore farwell !

Yet, Ida, if thou wilt, stay thou behind, 145

To accompany my queene ;

But, if thou¹ like the pleasures of the court —

[*Aside*] Or if she likte me, tho she left the court, —

What should I say ? I know not what to say. —

You may depart. And you, my curteous queene, 150

Leaue me a space ; I haue a waighte cause

To thinke vpon.² [*Aside*] Ida ! It nips me neere ;

It came from thence, I feele it burning heere.

Exeunt all sauing the KING and ATEUKIN.

K. OF SCOT. Now am I free from sight of common eie,
 Where to my-selfe I may disclose the grieffe 155
 That hath too great a part in mine affects.

ATEU. And now is my time by wiles *and* words to rise
 Greater then those that thinks³ themselues more wise.

K. OF SCOTS. And first, fond king, thy honor doth engraue
 Vpon thy browes the drift of thy disgrace : 160

Thy new-vowd loue in sight of God and men

Linke⁴ thee to Dorithea during life ;

For who more faire and vertuous then thy wife.

Deceitfull murtherer of a quiet minde,

Fond loue, vile lust, that thus misleads vs men 165

To vowe our faithes, and fall to sin againe !

But kings stoupe not to euery common thought.

Ida is faire and wise, fit for a king ;

And for faire Ida will I hazard life,

Venture my kingdome, countrey,⁵ and my crowne, — 170

¹ G. *inserts not.*

⁵ G. *country.*

² *In Cr. these three words are in l. 151.*

³ D. *changes to think.*

⁴ D, *changes to Links* ; G. *takes Linke as optative.*

Such fire hath loue to burne a kingdome downe !
 Say Doll dislikes that I estrange my loue, —
 Am I obedient to a womans looke?
 Nay, say her father frowne when he shall heare
 That I do hold faire Idaes loue so deare, — 175
 Let father frowne and fret, and fret and die,
 Nor earth nor heauen shall part my loue and I.
 Yea, they shall part vs, but we first must meet,
 And wo and win, and yet the world not seet.
 Yea, ther 's the wound! *And*, wounded with that thoght, 180
 So let me die ; for all my drift is naught !

ATEU. Most gracious and imperiall Maiestie. —

[*Aside*] A little flattery more were but too much !¹

K. OF S. Villaine, what art thou

That thus darest interrupt a princes secrets.² 185

ATEU. Dread king, thy vassall is a man of art,
 Who knowes by constellation of the stars,
 By oppositions and by dire³ aspects,
 The things are past and those that are to come.

K. OF S. But where 's thy warrant to approach my pres-
 ence? 190

ATEU. My zeale and ruth to see your Graces wrong
 Makes me lament I did detract so long.

K. OF S. If thou knowst thoughts, tell me what mean
 I now?

ATEU. Ile calculate the cause
 Of those your Highnesse smiles⁴ and tell your thoughts. 195

K. OF S. But, least thou spend thy time in idlenesse
 And misse the matter that my mind aimes at,
 Tell me :⁵ what star was opposite when that was thought?

He strikes him on the eare.

ATEU. Tis inconuenient, mightie⁶ potentate,

¹ Cr. gives this line to the KING; I accept D.'s transfer of it to ATEUKIN.

³ Cr. drie; D. dry; corr. by G.

² In Cr. ll. 184, 185 as one.

⁴ In Cr. l. 194 ends here.

⁵ D. gets rid of the Alexandrine by making a separate line of these two words.

⁶ G. mighty.

Whose lookes resembles ¹ Ioue in maiestie, 200
 To scorne the sooth of science with contempt.
 I see in those imperiall lookes of yours
 The whole discourse of loue : Saturn combust
 With direfull lookes at your natiuitie
 Beheld faire Venus in her siluer orbe. 205
 I know by certaine exiomies ² I haue read
 Your Graces griefs, *and*, further, can expresse
 Her name ³ that holds you thus in fancies bands.

K. OF S. Thou talkest wonders.

A TEU. Nought but truth, O king.
 Tis Ida is the mistresse of your heart, 210
 Whose youth must take impression of affects ;
 For tender twigs will bowe, and milder mindes
 Will yeeld to fancie, be they followed well.

K. OF S. What god art thou, composde in humane shape,
 Or bold Trophonius, to decide our doubts? 215
 How knowst thou this?

A TEU. Euen as I know the meanes
 To worke your Graces freedome and your loue.
 Had I the mind, as many courtiers haue,
 To creepe into your bosome for your coyne
 And beg rewards for euery cap and knee, 220
 I then would say : if that your Grace would giue
 This lease, this manor or this pattent seald,
 For this or that I would effect your loue ;
 But Ateukin ⁴ is no parasite, O prince !
 I know your Grace knowes schollers are but poore ; 225
 And therefore, as I blush to beg a fee,
 Your Mightnesse is so magnificent
 You cannot chuse but cast some gift apart
 To ease my bashfull need that cannot beg.

¹ D. G. resemble, *without note*.

² D. G. *modernize to axioms*.

³ *In Cr. these two words are in l. 207.*

⁴ *Here, and often elsewhere, a dissyllable ; for discussion of Fleay's inference, see Notes.*

As for your loue, oh, might I be employd, 230
 How faithfully would Ateukin compasse it!
 But princes rather trust a smoothing tongue
 Then men of art that can accept the time.

K. OF SCOTS. Ateu[kin], — if so thy name, for so thou
 saist, —

Thine art appeares in entrance of my loue ; 235
 And, since I deeme thy wisdom matcht with truth,
 I will exalt thee ; and thy-selfe alone
 Shalt be the agent to dissolue my grieffe.
 Sooth is, I loue, and Ida is my loue ;
 But my new marriage nips me neare, Ateukin, 240
 For Dorithea may not brooke th' abuse.

ATEU. These lets are but as moaths¹ against the sun,
 Yet not so great ; like dust before the winde,
 Yet not so light.² Tut ! pacifie your Grace :
 You haue the sword and scepter in your hand, 245
 You are the king, the state depends on you,
 Your will is law. Say that the case were mine, —
 Were she my sister whom your Highnesse loues,
 She shou'd³ consent, for that our liues, our goods,
 Depend on you. And, if your queene repine, 250
 Although my nature cannot brooke of blood,
 And schollers grieue to heare of murtherous deeds, —
 But if the lambe should let the Lyons⁴ way,
 By my aduise the lambe should lose her life.
 Thus am I bold to speake vnto your Grace, 255
 Who am too base to kisse your royall feete ;
 For I am poore, nor haue I land or⁵ rent
 Nor countenance here in court ; but, for my loue,
 Your Grace shall find none such within the realme !

K. OF S. Wilt thou effect my loue? shal⁶ she be mine? 260

¹ D. notes ; G. *thinks* moaths (moaths) a *misprint*.

² G. *proposes* the dust . . . is not.

³ G. should.

⁴ G. Lyon's.

⁵ D. G. nor, *without note*.

⁶ G. shall.

ATEU. Ile gather moly, rocus¹ and the earbes
That heales² the wounds of body and the minde ;
Ile set out charmes and spels ; nought else³ shalbe left
To tame the wanton if she shall rebell :
Giue me but tokens of your Highnesse trust. 265

K. OF S. Thou shalt haue gold, honor and wealth inough ;
Winne⁴ my loue, and I will make thee great.

ATEU. These words do make me rich, most noble prince ;
I am more proude of them then any wealth.
Did not your Grace suppose I flatter you, 270
Beleeue me I would boldly publish this :
Was neuer eye that sawe a sweeter face,
Nor neuer eare that heard a deeper wit ;
Oh God, how I am rauisht in your woorth !

K. OF S. Ateu[kin], follow me ; loue must haue ease. 275

ATEU. Ile kisse your Highnesse feet ; march when you
please. *Exeunt.*

[Act first. Scene second.]

[*The market-place.*]⁵

Enter SLIPPER, NANO, and ANDREW, with their billes, readie written, in their hands.

ANDREW. ⁶ Stand back, sir ; mine shall stand highest !

SLIP. Come vnder mine arme, sir, or get a footstoole ;
Or else, by the light of the moone, I must come to it.

NANO. Agree, my maisters ; euery man to his height !
Though I stand lowest, I hope to get the best maister. 5

¹ Cr. Moly-rocus ; Mitford, moly, crocus ; *but this seems doubtful.*

² D. *changes to heal.* ³ D. G. *reject else.*

⁴ Winne me my, etc., *would restore the metre ; but lines of nine syllables are common in Greene and Peele.* D. *suggests thou or but as missing ; G. accepts thou.*

⁵ *But the author probably had in mind some such place as St. Paul's, London.*

⁶ *From here to the entrance of ATEUKIN D. G. print as prose ; but as some of it seems to be a rude sort of verse, and as Cr. begins each line with a capital, I preserve the line-division of Cr.*

ANDR. Ere I will stoupe to a thistle, I will change turnes ;
As good lucke comes on the right hand as the left ;
Here 's for me !

[SLIP.] And me !

[NANO.] And mine !¹

[*They post their bills.*]

ANDR. But tell me, fellowes, till better occasion come :
Do you seeke maisters? 10

AMBO. We doo.

ANDR. But what can you do worthie preferment?

NANO. Marry I can smell a knaue from a rat.

SLIP. And I can licke a dish before a cat.

ANDR. And I can finde two fooles vnsought. 15

How like you that?

But in earnest now, tell me : of what trades are you two?

SLIP. How meane you that, sir? Of what trade?

Marry, Ile tell you, I haue many trades :

The honest trade when I needs must, 20

The filching trade when time serues,

The cousening trade as I finde occasion.

And I haue more qualities : I cannot abide a ful cup vnkist,

A fat capon vncaru'd,

A full purse vnpickt, 25

Nor a foole to prooue a iustice, as you do.

ANDR. Why, sot, why calst thou me foole?

NANO. For examining wiser then thy-selfe.

ANDR. So doth many more then I in Scotland.

NANO. Yea, those are such as haue more authoritie² then
wit, 30

And more wealth then honestie.

SLIP. This is my little brother with the great wit, ware
him!

But what canst thou do, tel me, that art so inquisitiue of vs?

¹ Cr. D. *assign* Here's for me, and me, and mine to ANDREW. G.'s *assignment*, adopted above, is supported by the repetition of ANDR. before l. 9. G. indicates in no way that he has emended Cr.

² G. does not notice the misprint.

ANDR. Any-thing that concernes a gentleman to do, that
can I do.

SLIP. So you are of the gentle trade? 35

ANDR. True.

SLIP. Then, gentle sir, leaue vs to our-selues ;
For heare comes one as if he would lack a seruant ere he
went.¹ *Ent[er] ATEU[KIN].*

[ATEU.] Why so, Ateukin, this becomes thee best :
Wealth, honour, ease, and angelles in thy chest. 40

Now may I say, as many often sing :

No fishing to the sea, nor seruice to a king.

Vnto this high promotions² doth belong,

Meanes to be talkt³ of in the thickest throng.

And first, to fit the humors of my lord, 45

Sweete layes and lynes of loue I must record ;

And such sweete lynes and louelayes Ile endite

As men may wish for, and my leech⁴ delight.

And next, a traine of gallants at my heeles,

That men may say the world doth run on wheeles ; 50

For men of art that rise by indirection

To honour and the fauour of their king,

Must vse all meanes to saue what they haue got,

And win their fauours whom he⁵ neuer knew.

If any frowne to see my fortunes such, 55

A man must beare a little, — not too much !

But in good time ! — these billes partend,⁶ I thinke,

That some good fellowes do for seruice seeke.

Read: “ If any gentleman, spirituall or temperall, will en-
tertaine out of his seruice, a yong⁷ stripling of the age of 30 60
yeares, thet⁶ can sleep with the soundest, eate with the hun-
griest, work with the sickest,⁸ lye with the lowdest, face with

¹ D. G. *print a stage-direction:* Andrew stands aside, which is not in
the copy made for me.

⁵ D. G. *change to* they.

² D. G. *change to* promotion.

⁶ *So* Cr.

³ *So* G. ; Cr. *talke* ; D. *talk'd*.

⁷ G. Young.

⁴ D. *emends to* liege, which is, of course, the meaning.

⁸ D. *had a friend who conjectured* sickerest, which instigated D. to con-
jecture stoutest.

the proudest, &c.,¹ that can wait in a gentlemans chamber when his maister is a myle of, keepe his stable when tis emptie and his purse when tis full, and hath many qualities woorse then all these, let him write his name and goe his way, and attendance shall be giuen." 65

ATEU. ² By my faith, a good seruant! which is he?

SLIP. Trulie, sir, that am I.

ATEU. And why doest thou write such a bill? 70
Are all these qualities in thee?

SLIP. O Lord, I, sir, and a great many more,
Some better, some worse, some richer, some porer.
Why, sir, do you looke so? do they not please you?

ATEU. Trulie, no; for they are naught, and so art thou; 75
If thou hast no better qualities, stand by!

SLIP. O, sir, I tell the worst first; but, and you lack a man,
I am for you, ile tell you the best qualities I haue.

ATEU. Be breefe then.

SLIP. If you need me in your chamber, 80
I can keepe the doore at a whistle; in your kitchin,
Turne the spit and licke the pan and make the fire burne.
But if in the stable —

ATEU.³ Yea, there would I vse thee.

SLIP. Why, there you kill me, there am I! ⁴ 85
And turne me to a horse *and* a wench, and I haue no peere!

ATEU. Art thou so good in keeping a horse?
I pray thee, tell me how many good qualities hath a horse.

SLIP. Why, so, sir: a horse hath two properties of a
man, —

That is, a proude heart, and a hardie stomacke; 90
Foure properties of a lyon, — a broad brest, a stiffe docket
(Hold your nose, master!), a wild countenance, and foure ⁵
good legs;

¹ As D. suggests in regard to another passage (see p. 350, below), the actor was allowed to interpret this &c. liberally.

² From here to the end of the scene D. G. print as prose; I follow Cr.

³ Cr. Steu.

⁵ Cr. G. 4.

⁴ D., probably not observing that this is a bit of slang, supposes the loss of some words; Mitford suggested there am I a per se.

Nine properties of a foxe, nine of a hare, nine of an asse,
And ten of a woman.

ATEU. A woman? why, what properties of a woman hath
a horse? 95

SLIP. O, maister, know you not that?

Draw your tables, and write what wise I speake :

First, a merry countenance ;

Second, a soft pace ;

Third, a broad forehead ; 100

Fourth, broad buttockes ;

Fift, hard of ward ;¹

Sixt, easie to leape vpon ;

Seuenth, good at long iourney ;

Eight, mouing vnder a man ; 105

Ninth, alway busie with the mouth ;

Tenth, euer chewing on the bridle.

ATEU. Thou art a man for me. Whats thy name?

SLIP. An auncient name, sir, belonging to the
Chamber and the night-gowne. Gesse you that. 110

ATEU. Whats that? Slipper?

SLIP. By my faith, well gest ; and so tis indeed.

Youle be my maister?

ATEU. I meane so.

SLIP. Reade this first. 115

ATEU. [*reads*] "Pleaseth it any gentleman to entertaine

A seruant of more wit then ² stature,

Let them subscribe, and attendance shall be giuen."

What of this?

SLIP. He is my brother, sir, and we two were borne to-
gether, 120

Must serue together, and will die together

Though we be both hangd.

ATEU. Whats thy name?

NANO. Nano.

ATEU. The etimologie of which word is "a dwarfe." 125
Art not thou the old Stoykes son that dwels in his tombe?

¹ G. warde.

² G. than.

AMBO. We are.

ATEU. Thou art welcome to me.

Wilt thou giue thy-selfe wholly to be at my disposition?

NANO. In all humilitie I submit my-selfe. 130

ATEU. Then will I deck thee princely, instruct thee courtly,
And present thee to the queene as my gift.

Art thou content?

NANO. Yes, and thanke your Honor too.

SLIP. Then welcome, brother, and fellow now! 135

ANDR. May it please your Honor to abase your eye so
lowe

As to looke either on my bill or my-selfe.

ATEU. What are you?

AN. By birth a gentleman, in profession a scholler,
And one that knew your Honor in Edenborough 140

Before your worthinesse cald you to this reputation.

By me, Andrew Snoord.

ATEU. Andrew, I remember thee; follow me,
And we will confer further; for my waightie affaires
For the king commands¹ me to be briefe at this time. 145

Come on, Nano; Slipper, follow!

Exeunt.

[Act first. Scene third.]

[*The house of SIR BARTRAM.*]

Enter SIR BARTRAM, with EUSTAS and others, booted.

S. BAR. But tell me louely Eustas, as thou lou'st me:

Among the many pleasures we haue past

Which is the rifest in thy memorie

To draw the ouer to thine auncient friend?

EU. What makes Sir Bartram thus inquisitiue? 5

Tell me, good knight: am I welcome or no?

SIR BAR. By sweet S. Andrew and may sale I sweare,
As welcom is my honest Dick to me

¹ D. *changes to command.*

As mornings sun or as the¹ watry moone
In merkist night when we the borders track. 10

I tell thee, Dick, thy sight hath cleerd my thoughts
Of many banefull troubles that there woond.

Welcome² to Sir Bartram as his life!

Tell me, bonny Dicke: hast got a wife?

EUST. A wife? God shield, Sir Bartram! that were ill 15
To leaue my wife and wander thus astray.

But time and good aduise, ere many yeares,

May chance to make my fancie bend that way.

What newes in Scotland? Therefore came I hither, —

To see your country, and to chat together. 20

SIR BAR. Why, man, our countries blyth, our king is well,

Our queene so-so, the nobles well and worse;

And weele are they that were³ about the king;

But better are the country gentlemen.

And I may tell thee, Eustace, in our liues 25

We old men neuer saw so wondrous change.

But leaue this trattle, and tell me what newes

In louely England with our honest friends.

EUST. The king, the court and all our noble friends

Are well, and God in mercy keepe them so! 30

The northren lords and ladies here-about

That knowes⁴ I came to see your queen and court

Commends⁵ them to my honest friend Sir Bartram, —

And many others that I haue not seene.

Among the rest, the Countesse Elinor, 35

From Carlile,⁶ where we merry oft haue bene,

Greets well my lord, and hath directed me,

By message, this faire ladies face to see.

¹ So D. G.; Cr. a.

² D. suggests *As welcome here, and But tell in next line*; G. *Aye welcome here and me my bonny in next line. I regard them as nine-syllabled lines.*

³ D. *emends to are, perhaps rightly.*

⁴ D. *changes to know.*

⁵ D. *changes to commend.*

⁶ In Cr. *these two words are in l. 35.*

[*Showing a picture.*]

SIR BAR. I tell thee, Eustace, lest¹ mine old eyes daze,
This is our Scottish moone and euenings pride; 40
This is the blemish of your English bride.

Who sailes by her are sure of winde at will;
Her face is dangerous, her sight is ill.
And yet, in sooth, sweet Dicke, it may be said:
The king hath folly; their 's vertue in the mayd. 45

EUST. But knows my friend this portrait? be aduisd.

SIR BAR. Is it not Ida the Countesse of Arains² daughters?

EUST. So was I told by Elinor of Carlile.
But tell me, louely Bartram: is the maid
Euil-inclind, misled, or concubine 50
Vnto the king or any other lord?³

BA. Shuld I be brief *and* true, then thus, my Dicke:
All Englands grounds yeelds⁴ not a blyther lasse,
Nor Europ can not match⁵ her for her gifts
Of vertue, honour, beautie, and the rest; 55

But our *fond* king, not knowing sin in lust,
Makes loue by endlesse meanes and precious gifts,
And men that see it dare not sayt, my friend,
But wee may wish that it were otherwise.
But I rid thee to view the picture still; 60
For by the persons sights⁶ there hangs som ill.

EUST.⁷ Oh, good Sir Bartram, you suspect I loue —
Then were I mad — her⁸ whom I neuer sawe!
But, how-so-ere, I feare not entising;

¹ D. G. *change to* 'less.

² G. Arain's.

³ *In Cr. ll. 49-51 as two, ending* inclind, lord.

⁴ D. *changes to* yield.

⁵ Cr. can art; D. *emends to* can surpass.

⁶ D. *emends to* sight (*not to* right, as G. says), which is better (*cf. l. 43*); G. *keeps* sights, but thinks it means eyes.

⁷ D. G. say Cr. assigns ll. 62-67 to BARTRAM; my copyist, who never undertakes to correct errors of the original, wrote B, and then erased it and wrote EUST.

⁸ Cr. hee; *corr. by* D.

Desire will giue no place vnto a king : 65
 Ile see her whom the world admires so much,
 That I may say with them, there liues none such.

BAR. Be Gad, and sal both see and talke with her ;
 And, when th' hast done, what-ere her beautie be,
 Ile warant¹ thee her vertue² may compare 70
 With³ proudest she that waits vpon your queen.

[Enter SERVANT.]

SERV.⁴ My ladie intreats your Worship in to supper.

BA. Guid, bony Dick, my wife will tel thee more,
 Was neuer no man⁵ in her booke before :
 Be Gad, shees blyth, faire, lewely,⁶ bony, &c.⁷ 75

Exeunt.

[*The End of the First Act.*]

[CHORUS.]

Enter BOHAN and the FAIRY KING after the First Act, to them a round of fairies, or some prittie dance.

BOH. Be Gad, gramersis, little king, for this !
 This sport is better in my exile life
 Then euer the deceitfuil werld could yeeld.

OBER. I tell thee, Bohan, Oberon is king 5
 Of quiet, pleasure, profit and content,
 Of wealth, of honor and of all the world ;
 Tide to no place, — yet all are tide to one.⁸
 Liue thou in⁹ this life, exilde from world and men,
 And I will shew thee wonders¹⁰ ere we part.

¹ G. warrant.

² D. G. vertues.

³ So Cr.; D. G., *silently*, With the; *I suppose with to have absorbed the unstressed the, just as this often absorbs unstressed is.*

⁴ Cr. EU.; *corr.* by D.

⁵ D. *in his first edition suggests woman; but apparently EUSTACE is meant.*

⁶ G. *changes to lovely.*

⁷ D. *suggests that the player was here to extemporize; see above, p. 345. G. plausibly suggests that it means "he goes out talking."*

⁸ D. *changes to me; but he misses the thought.*

⁹ D. G. *reject in.*

¹⁰ Cr. *wonters; corr. silently by D.*

BOH. Then marke my story¹ and the strange doubts² 10
 That follow flatterers, lust and lawlesse will,
 And then say I haue reason to forsake
 The world,³ and all that are within the same.
 Gow shrowd vs in our harbor, where wee⁴ see
 The pride of folly as it ought to be.

15
Exeunt.

After the First Act.⁵

[1.]

OBER. Here see I good fond actions in thy gyg
 And meanes to paint the worldes in-constant waies;
 But turne thine ene, see what⁶ I can commaund.

*Enter two battailes strongly fighting: the one, SEMIRAMIS;⁷ the other,
 STABROBATES;⁸ she flies, and her crowne is taken, and she hurt.*

[*Exeunt.*]

BOH. What gars this din of mirk and balefull harme,
 Where euery weane is all betaint with bloud? 5

OBER. This shewes thee, Bohan, what is worldly pompe.
 Simeramis, the proud Assirrian queene,

¹ Cr. stay; *emend.* by D.

² *Qy.* defeats; D. suggests debates.

³ *In Cr.* these two words are in l. 12.

⁴ *So G.*; Cr. we ele.

⁵ D. suggests that the three dumb-shows inserted here may perhaps have been meant for production after the first, second, and third acts. This may be true. G., misunderstanding gyg, thinks it clear that the first dumb-show should follow the "jig" in the Induction, but admits that his hypothesis does not explain the presence of "2" and "3," or even the last line of this section. It seems highly probable that they were composed as substitutes for three (or more) of the inter-scenes with dances; perhaps they came into the printer's hands on a loose sheet of MS. Cf. p. 354, n. 1.

⁶ Cr. which for; *emend.* by D.

⁷ Cr. Simi Ramis; *corr.* by D.; D. G. read Cr. here as Simi Ranus, and l. 7 as Simeranus.

⁸ Cr. Staurobates; *corr.* by D.

When Ninus died, did tene in¹ her warres
 Three millions of footemen to the fight,
 Fiue hundreth thousand horse, of armed chars 10
 A hundreth thousand more; yet in her pride
 Was hurt and conquered by Stabrobates.²
 Then what is pompe?

BOHAN. I see thou art³ thine ene,
 Thou bonny king, if princes fall from high:
 My fall is past, vntill⁴ I fall to die. 15
 Now marke my talke, and prosecute my gyg.

2.

OBER. How shuld these crafts withdraw thee from the
 world?
 But looke my Bohan, pompe⁵ allureth [thee].

*Enter CIRUS, KINGS⁶ humbling themselues; himselve crowned, by OLIUE
 PAT;⁷ at last dying, layde in a marbell tombe with this inscription:*

Who-so thou bee that passest by,—⁸
 For I know one shall passe,—knowe I
 Am⁹ Cirus [king] of Persia, 5
 And I prithe¹⁰ leaue me not thus like a clod of clay¹¹
 Wherewith my body¹² is couered. *All exeunt.*

¹ *Qy.* into; D. G. *emend* to levy in.

² Cr. S. Taurobates; *corr.* by D.

³ G. *suggests* hast for art.

⁴ G. vntil.

⁵ G. *inserts* again. .

⁶ Cr. king; *corr.* silently by D.

⁷ So Cr.; G. *emends* to Oliue and Palm; *but in Cr. Roman type is used as for proper names; I conjecture* ASPATIA, *cf.* Bacon and Bungay, 1141, — *the confusion in regard to* CYRUS *is easily intelligible.*

⁸ By is not in Cr., *but was supplied* by D.

⁹ Cr. D. I am.

¹⁰ G. *changes* to and I pray, and *transfers* to l. 5.

¹¹ *Whichever version of this inscription the author may have had in mind, this line ought to read:* Envy me not this clod of clay.

¹² G. *says* Cr. *has* bydy.

Enter the KING in great pompe, who reads it, & issueth, crieth: Vermeum.¹

BOHA. What meaneth this?

OBER. Cirus of Persia,
Mightie in life, within a marbell graue,
Was layde to rot, whom Alexander once
Beheld in-tombde,² and weeping did confesse
Nothing in life could scape from wrechednesse:³
Why then boast men? 10

BOH. What recke I then of life,
Who makes⁴ the graue my home,⁵ the earth my wife:
But marke mee more.⁶ 15

3.

BOH. I can no more, my patience will not warpe
To see these flatterers⁷ how they scorne and carpe.

OBER. Turne but thy head.

Enter four⁸ KINGS carr[ing] crowns, LADIES presenting odors to POTENTATE⁹ in-throned, who suddainly is slaine by his SERUANTS and thrust out; and so they eate. Exeunt.

[BOH.]¹⁰ Sike¹¹ is the werld, but whilke is he I sawe?

OBER. Sesostris, who was conquerour of the werld,
Slaine at the last, and stampd on by his slaues. 5

BOH. How blest are peur men then that know their
graue[s]!¹²
Now marke the sequell of my gig.

¹ D. G. *accept* Mitford's emendation *Ver meum*; but it seems unsuited to the occasion; see *Notes*, vol. III, on *Vermeum* (i.e., *Vermium*).

² G. in tombe.

³ G. wretchednesse.

⁴ So Cr. according to D. and my copyist; but G. says make.

⁵ So Collier; G. says Cr. has tumbe, D. says tombe, my copyist tomb.

⁶ D. G., apparently forgetting that this is an invitation to see another act of BOHAN's play, assign this line to OBERON.

⁷ Cr. flatteries; corr. by D.

⁸ Cr. our; corr. by D.

⁹ Cr. Potentates; corr. by D.

¹⁰ In Cr. BOHAN is, by mistake, omitted; corr. by D.

¹¹ G. Sicke.

¹² Corr. by D.

[4.]¹

BOH.² An he³ weele meete ends : the mirk and sable night
 Doth leaue the pering morne to prie abroade.
 Thou nill me stay ; haile then thou pride of kings,
 I ken the world, and wot well worldly things.
 Marke thou my gyg, in mirkest termes that telles 5
 The loathe of sinnes, and where corruption dwells.
 Haile me ne mere with showes of gudlie sights;
 My graue is mine, that rids me from despights.⁴

[5.]

[BOH.] Accept my gig, guid king, and let me rest ;
 The graue with guid men is a gay-built nest.

OBER. The rising sunne doth call me hence away ;
 Thankes for thy gyg, I may no longer stay.
 But, if my traine did wake thee from thy rest, 5
 So shall they sing thy lullabie to nest.

Actus secundus. Schena prima.

[The house of the COUNTESS OF ARRAN.]

*Enter the COUNTESSE OF ARRAN,⁵ with IDA, her daughter, in theyr porch,
 sitting at worke.⁶*

A song.⁷

COUNT. Faire Ida, might you chuse the greatest good
 Midst all the world, in blessings that abound,

¹ Kittredge points out that 3. 8 indicates the end of the passage relating to the third dumb-show (cf. 1. 16; 2. 15) and is inconsistent with 5. 1 and 4, and that the presence of BOH. before 4. 1 is another proof that a new section begins here. We have, therefore, not three, but four substitutes for the speeches of the CHORUS, which now appear at the ends of the Acts. But 4. 5 implies that there is more of the play, BOHAN'S "gyg," to come, whereas the whole passage here set apart as 5 seems to belong after the Fifth Act; and it will be observed that this extension of Kittredge's suggestion not only provides a CHORUS for each Act, but also clears up many obscurities of the text. The brevity of these speeches can be no argument against this theory; see the end of Act iii.

² So CR., according to my copyist, but D. G. do not print or mention the name. ³ G. omits he. ⁴ G. despights. ⁵ G. Arran.

⁶ G. work.

⁷ The song is not given.

Wherein, my daughter, shuld¹ your liking be?

IDA. Not in delights or pompe or maiestie.

COUNT. And why?

IDA. Since these are meanes to draw the minde 5
From perfect good and make true iudgement blind.

COUNT. Might you haue wealth, and fortunes rithest
store?

IDA. Yet would I, might I chuse, be honest poore ;
For she that sits at fortunes feete alowe
Is sure she shall not taste a further woe ; 10
But those that prancke one top of fortunes ball
Still feare a change, and, fearing, catch a fall.

COUNT. Tut, foolish maide, each one contemneth need.

IDA. Good reason why, they know not good indeed.

COUNT. Many marrie, then, on whom distresse doth loure. 15

IDA. Yes, they that vertue deeme an honest dowre.

Madame, by right this world I may compare
Vnto my worke, wherein with heedfull care
The heauenly workeman plants with curious hand —
As I with needle draw — each thing one land 20
Euen as hee list: some men like to the rose
Are fashioned fresh, some in their stalkes do close,
And borne do suddaine die ; some are but weeds,
And yet from them a secret good proceeds.
I with my needle, if I please, may blot 25
The fairest rose within my cambricke plot :
God with a becke can change each worldly thing,
The poore to earth,² the begger to the king.
What then hath man wherein hee well may boast,
Since by a becke he liues, a louer³ is lost? 30

Enter EUSTACE with letters.

COUNT. Peace, Ida, heere are straungers neare at hand.

EUST. Madame, God speed !

COUNT. I thanke you, gentle squire.

EUST. The countrie⁴ Countesse of Northumberland

¹ G. shold.

³ Mitford *suggested* flower.

² D. G. *change to rich.*

⁴ *Qy.* courteous.

Doth greete you well, and hath requested mee
To bring these letters to your ladiship.

35

He carries the letter[s].

COUNT. I thanke her Honour and your-selfe, my friend.

Shee receiues and peruseth them.

I see she meanes you good, braue gentleman,
Daughter, the Ladie Elinor salutes
Your-selfe as well as mee; then for her sake
T'were good you entertaind that courtiour well.

40

IDA. As much salute as may become my sex
And hee in vertue can vouchsafe to thinke
I yeeld him for the courteous countesse sake.
Good sir, sit downe; my mother heere and I
Count time mispent an endlesse vanitie.

45

EUST. [*aside*] Beyond report the wit, the faire, the shape!—
What worke you heere, faire mistresse? may I see it?

ID. Good sir, looke on; how like you this compact?

EUST. Me thinks in this I see true loue in act:
The woodbines¹ with their leaues do sweetly spred,
The roses blushing prancke them in their red,
No flower but boasts the beauties of the spring;
This bird hath life indeed, if it could sing.
What meanes, faire mistres, had you in this worke?

50

IDA. My needle, sir.

EUST. In needles then there lurke²
Some hidden grace, I deeme, beyond my reach.

55

ID. Not grace in *them*, good sir, but those that teach.

EUST. Say that your needle now were Cupids sting,—
[*Aside*] But ah! her eie must bee no lesse,
In which is heauen and heauenlinesse,
In which the foode of God is shut,
Whose powers the purest mindes do glut.

60

IDA. What if it were?

EUST. Then see a wondrous thing:

¹ G. woodbins.

² Cr. lurkes; *emend.* by D.; but possibly a perfect rhyme was not intended.

I feare me you would paint in Tereus¹ heart
Affection in his power and chiefest part.² 65

IDA. Good Lord, sir, no; for hearts but pricked soft
Are wounded sore, for so I heare it oft.

EUST. What reckes the wound,³ where but your happy eye
May make him liue whom Ioue hath iudgd to die.

IDA. Should life *and* death within this needle lurke, 70
Ile pricke no hearts, Ile pricke vpon my worke.

Enter ATEUKIN,⁴ with SLIPPER, the clowne.

COUN. Peace, Ida! I perceiue the fox at hand.

EUST. The fox? why, fetch your⁵ hounds *and* chace him
hence.

COUNT. Oh, sir, these great men barke at small offence.
Come, will it please you to enter, gentle sir? 75

Offer to exeunt.

ATEU.⁶ Stay, courteous ladies; fauour me so much
As to discourse a word or two apart.

COUNT. Good sir, my daughter learns this rule of mee,
To shun resort and straungers companie;
For some are shifting mates that carrie letters; 80
Some, such as you, too good, because our betters.

SLIP. Now I pray you, sir, what a-kin are you to a pick-
rell?

ATEU. Why, knaue?

SLIP. By my troth, sir, because I neuer knew a proper 85
scituation fellow of your pitch fitter to swallow a gudgin.

ATEU. What meanst thou by this?

SLIP. "Shifting fellow," sir; these be thy words, "shifting
fellow": this gentlewoman, I feare me, knew your⁷ bringing vp.

ATEU. How so? 90

SLIP. Why, sir, your father was a miller that could shift
for a pecke of grist in a bushell, and you⁸ a faire-spoken

¹ Cr. Teueus; *emend.* by D.

² Cr. parts; *emend.* by D.; *but see note on l. 55.*

³ Cr. fecond; *emend.* by D. ⁶ In Cr. ATEU. *is before l. 75; corr.* by D.

⁴ *Misprinted Ateuken in Cr.* ⁷ G. you[r].

⁵ Cr. our; D. G. your. ⁸ D. you[r].

gentleman that can get more land by a lye then an honest man by his readie mony.

ATEU. Catiue, what sayest thou? 95

SLIP. I say, sir, that if shee call you shifting knaue, you shall not put her to the prooffe.

ATEU. And why?

SLIP. Because, sir, liuing by your wit as you doo,¹ shifting is your letters pattents; it were a hard matter for mee to get 100 my dinner that day wherein my maister had not solde a dozen of deuices, a case of cogges and a shute of shifts in the morning. I speak this in your ² commendation, sir, *and* I pray you so take it.

ATEU. If I liue, knaue, I will bee reuenged! What 105 gentleman would entertaine a rascall, thus to derogate from his honour? [*Beats him.*]

IDA. My lord, why are you thus impatient?

ATEU. Not angrie, Ida, but I teach this knaue 110
How to behaue himselfe among his betters.
Behold, faire countesse, to assure your stay,
I heere present the signet of the king,
Who now by mee, faire Ida, doth salute you;
And, since in secret I haue certaine things
In his behalfe, good madame, to impart, 115
I craue your daughter to discourse a-part.

COUNT. Shee shall in humble dutie bee addrest
To do his Highnesse will in what shee may.

ID. Now, gentle sir, what would his Grace with me?

ATEU. Faire, comely nimph, the beautie of your face, 120
Sufficient to bewitch the heauenly powers,
Hath wrought so much in him that now of late
He findes himselfe made captiue vnto loue;
And, though his power and maiestie requires ³
A straight commaund before an humble sute, 125
Yet hee his mightinesse doth so abase
As to intreat your fauour, honest maid.

IDA. Is hee not married, sir, vnto our queen?

¹ G. do.

² G. you[r].

³ D. *changes to require.*

ATEU. Hee is.

IDA. And are not they by God accurst
That seuer them whom hee hath knit in one? 130

ATEU. They bee ; what then? Wee seeke not to displace
The princesse from her seate ; but, since by loue
The king is made your owne, hee¹ is resolute
In priuate to accept your dalliance,
In spight of warre,² watch, or worldly eye. 135

IDA. Oh how hee talkes! as if hee³ should not die!
As if that God in iustice once could winke
Vpon that fault I am a-sham'd to thinke!

ATEU. Tut, mistresse, man at first was born to erre ;
Women are all not formed to bee saints. 140
Tis impious for to kill our natie king,
Whom by a little faouour wee may saue.

IDA. Better then liue vnchaste, to liue⁴ in graue.

ATEU. Hee shall erect your state *and* wed you well.

IDA. But can his warrant keep my soule from hell? 145

ATEU. He will inforce, if you resist his sute.

ID. What tho? The world may shame to him account⁵
To bee a king of men and worldly pelfe,
Yet⁶ hath no⁷ power to⁷ rule and guide himselfe.

ATEU.⁸ I know you, gentle ladie, and the care 150
Both of your honour and his Graces health
Makes me confused in this daungerous state.

IDA. So counsell him, but sooth thou not his sinne ;
Tis vaine alurement that doth make him loue.
I shame to heare ; bee you a-shamde to mooue. 155

COUNT. [*aside*] I see my daughter growes impatient ;
I feare me hee pretends some bad intent.

ATEU. Will you dispise the king *and* scorne him so?

IDA. In all alleageance I will serue his Grace,

¹ Cr. shee ; *corr.* by D.

³ Cr. shee ; D. G. hee.

² *Qy.* wary ; D. *suggests,* and G. *accepts,* warre or.

⁴ D. G. *change* to lie.

⁵ *Qy.* impute.

⁶ G. *inserts* [h'].

⁷ *In Cr.* these two words are interchanged ; *corr.* by D.

⁸ *In Cr.* ATEU. *precedes* l. 149 ; *corr.* by D.

But not in lust, — oh, how I blush to name it! 160

ATEU. [*aside*] An endlesse worke is this; how should I
frame it?

They discourse privately.

SLIP. Oh, mistresse, may I turne a word vpon you?

COUNT.¹ Friend, what wilt thou?

SLIP. Oh what a happie gentlewoman bee you trulie! the
world reports this of you, mistresse, — that a man can no 165
sooner come to your house but the butler comes with a blacke-
iack, and sayes: “Welcome, friend; heeres² a cup of the best
for you.” Verilie, mistresse, you are said to haue the best
ale in al Scotland.

COUNT. Sirrha, go fetch him drinke. [*A SERVANT brings drink.*] 170
How likest thou this?

SLIP. Like it, mistresse? why this is quincy quarie, pepper
de watchet, single goby, of all that euer I tasted! Ile prooue
in this ale and tost the compasse of the whole world. First,
this is the earth; it lies³ in the middle a faire browne tost, a 175
goodly countrie for hungrie teeth to dwell vpon; next, this is
the sea, a faire⁴ poole for a drie tongue to fish in; now come
I, *and*, seing the world is naught, I diuide it thus; *and*, be-
cause the sea cannot stand without the earth, as Arist[otle]
saith, I put *them* both into their first chaos, which is my 180
bellie. And so, mistresse, you may see your ale is become a
myracle.

EUSTACE. A merrie mate, madame, I promise you!

COUNT. Why sigh you, sirrah?

SLIP. Trulie, madam, to think vpon the world, which 185
since I denounced it, keepes such a rumbling in my stomack
that vnlesse your cooke giue it a counterbuffe with some of
your rosted capons or beefe, I feare me I shal become a loose
body, so daintie, I thinke, I shall neither hold fast before nor
behinde. 190

COUNT. Go, take him in, and feast this merrie swaine.
Syrrrha, my cooke is your phisitian:

¹ Cr. ATEU.; *corr.* by D.; G. COUNT., *without note.*

² G. heere's.

³ Cr. ties; *corr.* by D.

⁴ G. fair.

He hath a purge for to disiest the world.

[*Exeunt* SLIPPER and SERVANT.]

ATEU. Will you not, Ida, grant his Highnesse this?

IDA. As I haue said, in dutie I am his; 195
For other lawlesse lusts, that ill beseeme him,
I cannot like, and good I will not deeme him.¹

COUNT. Ida, come in; and, sir, if so you please,
Come take a homelie widdowes² intertaine.

IDA. If he haue no great haste, he may come nye; 200
If haste, tho he be gone, I will not crie.

Exeunt [all but ATEUKIN].

ATEU. I see this labour lost, my hope in vaine;
Yet will I trie an-other drift againe. [Exit.]

[Act second. Scene second.]

[*The court.*]

Enter the BISHOP OF S. ANDREWES, EARLE DOUGLAS, MORTON, *with others, one way, with the Queene* [DOROTHEA] *with DWARFE*³ *an-other way.*

B. S. ANDR. Oh wrack of common-weale! Oh wretched state!

DOUG. Oh haplesse flocke,⁴ whereas the guide is blinde?

*They all are in a muse.*⁵

MORT. Oh heedlesse youth, where counsaile is dispis'd.⁶

DOROT. Come, prettie knaue, and prank it by my side:
Lets see your best attendaunce out of hande. 5

DWARFE. Madame, altho my lims are very small,
My heart is good; Ile serue you therewithall.

DORO. How if I were assaild? what couldst thou do?

DWARF. Madame, call helpe, and boldly fight it to.
Altho a bee be but a litle⁷ thing, 10

¹ D. *suggests* 'em.

⁵ G. *prints this as if it followed* l. 3 *in Cr.*

² G. widowes.

⁶ G. *despis'd.*

³ Cr. DWARFES, *which D. changes to NANO, saying that there is no other dwarf in the play; the others might be mutes, and consequently not be specifically mentioned elsewhere; but the emendation seems certain.*

⁴ G. flock.

⁷ G. little.

You know, faire queen, it hath a bitter sting.

DOR. How couldst thou do me good, were I in greefe?

DWAR. Counsell, deare princes, is a choyce releefe :
Tho Nestor wanted force, great was his wit ;
And, tho I am but weake, my words are fit. 15

S. AND. [*aside*] Like to a ship vpon the ocean seas,
Tost in the doubtfull streame without a helme,
Such is a monarke without good aduice.
I am ore-heard! Cast raine vpon thy tongue ;
Andrewes, beware, reproofe will breed a scar ! 20

MOR. Good day, my lord.

B. S. AND. Lord Morton, well ymet!
Whereon¹ deemes² Lord Douglas all this while?

DOUG. Of that which yours and my poore heart doth
break,
Altho feare shuts our mouths, we dare not speake.

DOR. [*aside*] What meane these princes sadly to consult? 25
Somewhat, I feare, betideth them amisse,
They are so pale in lookes, so vext in minde. —
In happie houre, the³ noble Scottish peeres,
Haue I incountred you! What makes you mourne?

B. S. AND. If we with patience may attention⁴ gaine, 30
Your Grace shall know the cause of all our grieffe.

DOR. Speake on, good father; come and sit by me :
I know thy care is for the common good.

B. S. AND. As fortune, mightie princes, reareth some
To high estate and place in common-weale, 35
So by diuine bequest to them is lent
A riper iudgement and more searching eye,
Whereby they may discerne the common harme ;
For, where importunes⁵ in the world are most,
Where all our profits rise and still increase, 40

¹ This is a nine-syllabled line, unless we read Whereupon.

² D. suggests, and G. accepts, dreames.

³ D. G. change to ye; it is not a mistake, cf. v. 1, 31.

⁴ Cr. attentiuē; emend. by D.

⁵ D. G. accept Collier's emendation, our fortunes.

There is our minde, thereon we meditate, —
 And what we do partake of good aduice,
 That we employ for to concerue the same.
 To this intent these nobles and my-selfe,
 That are, or should bee, eyes of common-weale, 45
 Seeing his Highnesse reachlesse course of youth,
 His lawlesse and vnbridled vaine in loue,
 His to intentiue trust too flatterers,
 His abiect care of councell and his friendes,
 Cannot but greeue ; and, since we cannot drawe 50
 His eye or iudgement to discerne his faults,
 Since we haue spake¹ and counsaile is not heard,
 I, for my part, — let others as they list, —
 Will leaue the court, and leaue him to his will,
 Least with a ruthfull eye I should behold 55
 His ouerthrow, which, sore I feare, is nye.

DORO. Ah, father, are you so estranged from loue,
 From due alleageance to your prince and land,
 To leaue your king, when most he needs your help?
 The thriftie husbandmen are neuer woont, 60
 That see their lands vnfruitfull, to forsake them ;
 But, when the mould is barraine and vnapt,
 They toyle, they plow and make the fallow fatte.
 The pilot in the dangerous seas is knowne ;
 In calmer waues the sillie sailor striues. 65
 Are you not members, lords, of common-weale?
 And can your head, your deere annointed king,
 Default ye, lords, except your-selues do faile?
 Oh, stay your steps, returne and counsaile him !

DOUG. Men seek not mosse vpon a rowling stone, 70
 Or water from the siue, or fire from yce,
 Or comfort from a rechlesse monarkes² hands.
 Madame, he sets vs light, that seru'd in court
 In place of credit in his fathers dayes :
 If we but enter presence of his Grace, 75
 Our payment is a frowne, a scoffe, a frumpe,

¹ D. *changes to spoke.*² G. *monarches.*

Whilst flattering Gnato prancks it by his side,
 Soothing the carelesse king in his misdeeds.
 And, if your Grace consider your estate,
 His life should vrge you too, if all be true. 80

DORO.¹ Why, Douglas, why?

DOUG. As if you haue not heard
 His lawlesse loue to Ida growne of late,
 His carelesse² estimate of your estate!

DORO. Ah, Douglas, thou misconstrest his intent:
 He doth but tempt his wife, he tryees³ my loue. 85

This iniurie pertaines to me, not to you.
 The king is young, and, if he step awrie,
 He may amend, and I will loue him still.
 Shou'd⁴ we disdaine our vines because they sprout
 Before their time? or young men if they straine 90

Beyond their reach? No; vines that bloome and spread
 Do promise fruites, and young men that are wilde
 In age growe wise. My freendes⁵ and Scottish peeres,
 If that an English princesse may preuaile,
 Stay, stay with him! Lo how my zealous prayer 95
 Is plead with teares! Fie, peeres! will you hence?

S. AND. Madam, tis vertue in your Grace to plead;
 But we that see his vaine vntoward course,
 Cannot but flie the fire before it burne,
 And shun the court before we see his fall. 100

DORO. Wil you not stay? Then, lordings, fare you well!
 Tho you forsake your king, the Heauens, I hope,
 Will faouour him through mine incessant prayer.

DWAR. Content you, madam; thus old Ouid sings:
 Tis foolish to bewaile recurelesse things. 105

DOROTHEA. Peace,⁶ dwarffe; these words my patience
 moue.

DWAR. All-tho⁷ you charme my speech, charme not my
 loue!

¹ So D. G.; my copyist DOUG., perhaps by mistake.

² G. careless. ⁴ G. Should. ⁵ G. frendes. ⁷ G. Altho,

³ G. tryes. ⁶ G. inserts foolish, for metre.

Exeunt NANO, DOROTHEA.¹

Enter the KING OF SCOTS;² *the* NOBLES, *spying him, returns.*

K. OF S. Douglas, how now? why changest thou thy cheere?

DOUGL. My priuate troubles are so great, my liege,
As I must craue your licence for a while 110
For to intend mine owne affaires at home. *Exit.*³

KING. You may depart. But why is Morton sad?

MOR. The like occasion doth import me too :
So I desire your grace to giue me leaue.

K. OF S. Well, sir, you may betake you to your ease. 115

[*Exit* MORTON.]

When such grim syrs are gone, I see no let
To worke my will.

S. ANDR.⁴ What, like the eagle then,
With often flight wilt thou thy feathers loose?
O king, canst thou indure to see thy court
Of finest wits and iudgements dispossessest, 120

Whilst cloking craft with soothing climbs so high
As each bewailes ambition is so bad?

Thy father left thee, with estate and crowne,
A learned counsell to direct thy court,⁵
These careleslie, O king, thou castest off, 125

To entertaine a traine of sicophants.

Thou well mai'st⁶ see, although thou wilt not see,
That euery eye and eare both sees and heares

The certaine signes of thine incontinence.⁷

Thou art alyed vnto the English king 130

By marriage, — a happie friend indeed,

¹ D. gives this: *Exeunt* QUEEN and NANO, and says, in his first edition: "the 4to Dwarfs"; my copyist gives it exactly as here printed; G. prints *Exeunt* NANO and DOROTHEA, but brackets it as if Cr. had nothing.

² Cr. Enter the KING OF SCOTS, ARIUS; see Notes, vol. III.

³ G. prints *Exit* DOUGLAS in brackets as if Cr. had nothing.

⁴ Cr. S. ATTEN.; corr. by D., who, however, read Cr. as 8 ATTEN., as does G.

⁵ D. G. change to course.

⁶ G. maist,

⁷ Cr. inconstinence; corr. silently by D.

If vsed well; if not, a mightie foe.

Thinketh your Grace he can indure and brooke

To haue a partner in his daughters loue?

Thinketh your Grace the grudge of priuie wrongs 135

Will not procure him chaunge his smiles to threats?

Oh, be not blinde to good! call home your lordes;

Displace these flattering Gnatoes, driue them hence!

Loue, and with kindnesse take your wedlocke-wife,

Or else, — which God forbid! — I feare a change. 140

Sinne cannot thriue in courts without a plague.

K. OF S. Go pack thou too, vnles thou mend thy talk!

On paine of death, proud bishop, get you gone,

Vnlesse you headlesse mean to hoppe away!

S. AND.¹ Thou God of heauen preuent my countries fall! 145

*Exit.*²

K. OF S. These staies and lets to pleasure plague my
thoughts,

Forcing my greeuous wounds a-new to bleed.

But care, that hath transported me so farre,

Faire Ida, is disperst in thought of thee,

Whose answere yeeldes me life, or breeds my death! 150

Yond comes the messenger of weale — or woe! *Enter GNATO.*³

Ateukin,⁴ what newes?

ATEU. The adamant, o king, will not be filde

But by it-selfe, and beautie that exceeds

By some exceeding⁵ fauour must be wrought: 155

Ida is coy as yet, and doth repine,

Obiecting marriage, honour, feare and death;

Shee's holy, wise and too precise for me.

K. OF S. Are these thy fruites of wits?⁶ thy sight in art?

Thine eloquence? thy pollicie? thy drift? 160

To mocke thy prince? then, catiue, packe⁷ thee hence,

And let me die deuoured in my loue!

¹ Cr. S. ATTEN.; D. G. *as before.*

⁵ G. ex[c]eeding.

² Cr. G. Exeunt.

⁶ D. *changes to wit.*

³ So ATEUKIN *is often called.*

⁷ G. pack.

⁴ In Cr. *printed in the margin as if the name of the speaker.*

ATEU. Good Lord, how rage gainsayeth reasons power!
 My deare, my gracious and beloued prince,
 The essence of my soule,¹ my God on earth, 165
 Sit downe and rest your-selfe; appease your wrath,
 Least with a frowne yee wound me to the death!
 Oh that I were included in my graue,
 That eyther now to saue my princes life
 Must counsell crueltie or loose my king! 170

K. OF S. Why, sirrha, is there meanes to mooue her
 minde?

ATEU. Oh, should I not offend my royall liege—

K. OF S. Tell all, spare nought,² so I may gaine my loue.

ATEU. Alasse, my soule, why art thou torne in twaine
 For feare thou talke a thing that should displease? 175

K. OF S. Tut! speake what-so thou wilt; I pardon thee.

ATEU. How kinde a word! how courteous is his Grace!
 Who would not die to succour such a king?
 My liege, this louely mayde of modest minde
 Could well incline to loue, but that shee feares 180
 Faire Dorotheas power. Your Grace doth know
 Your wedlocke is a mightie let to loue.
 Were Ida sure to bee your wedded wife,
 That then the twig would bowe you might command.
 Ladies loue presents, pompe and high estate. 185

K. OF S. Ah, Ateukin, how shuld we display³ this let?

ATEU. Tut, mightie prince! oh that I might bee whist!

K. OF S. Why dalliest thou?

ATEU. I will not mooue my prince!
 I will preferre his safetie before⁴ my life:
 Heare mee, O⁵ king! tis Dorotheas death 190
 Must do you good.

K. OF S. What, murther of my queene?

¹ Cr. sute; *emend.* by Collier.

² G. naught.

³ D. *emends to* displace; *distroy is also possible; but display may be right*: Greene was a "student in Phisicke."

⁴ D. 'fore, *without note*; adopted by G.

⁵ G. Hear me, ô; Cr. Heare mee, o'.

Yet to enioy my loue, what is my queene?

Oh, but my vowe and promise to my queene!

I, but my hope to gaine a fairer queene!

With how contrarious thoughts am I with-drawne! 195

Why linger I twixt hope and doubtfull feare?

If Dorothe¹ die, will Ida loue?

ATEU. Shee will, my lord.

K. OF S. Then let her die! Deuise, aduise the meanes;²

Al likes me wel that lends me hope in loue.

ATEU. What, will your Grace consent? then let mee worke! 200

Theres heere in court a Frenchman, Iaques calde,

A fit performer of our enterprise,

Whom I by gifts and promise will corrupt,

To slay the queene, — so that your Grace will seale

A warrant for the man to saue his life. 205

K. OF S. Nought shall he want. Write thou, and I wil signe.

And, gentle Gnato, if my Ida yeelde,

Thou shalt haue what thou wilt; Ile giue the straight

A barrony,³ an earledome, for reward.

ATEU. Frolicke, young king, the lasse shall bee⁴ your owne! 210

Ile make her blyth and wanton by my wit.

Exeunt.

[*The End of the Second Act.*]

[CHORUS.]

*Enter BOHAN with OBIRON.*⁵

BOH. So, Oberon, now it beginnes⁶ to worke in kinde!

The auncient lords, by leauing him alone,⁷

Disliking of his humors and despight,⁸

¹ G., following D., Dorothe[a].

² Two lines in Cr.

³ G. barony.

⁷ Cr. aliue; *emend.* by D.

⁴ G. be.

⁸ Cr. respight; *emend.* by D.

⁵ Immediately under this Cr. has 3 Act; omitted by D., without note.

⁶ D. suggests 'gins, to get rid of the Alexandrine.

Lets¹ him run headlong, till his flatterers,
 Sweeting² his thoughts of lucklesse³ lust 5
 With vile perswations⁴ and alluring words,
 Makes⁵ him make way by murther to his will.
 Iudge, fairie king : hast heard a greater ill?

OBER. Nor seen⁶ more vertue in a countrie mayd.
 I tell the, Bohan, it doth make me merrie⁷ 10
 To thinke the deeds the king meanes to performe !

BOHA. To change that humour, stand and see the rest :
 I trow my sonne Slipper will shewes a iest.

*Enter SLIPPER with a companion, boy⁸ or wench, dauncing a hornpipe,
 and daunce out againe.*

BOHA. Now, after this beguiling of our thoughts
 And changing them from sad to better glee, 15
 Lets to our sell, and sit and see thee⁹ rest ;
 For I beleeeue this iig will prooue no iest. *Exit CHORUS.*¹⁰

Actus tertia.¹¹ Schena prima.

[*The court.*]

Enter SLIPPER one way, and S[IR] BARTRAM another way.

BAR. Ho, fellow! stay, and let me speake with thee.

SLI. Fellow? frend, thou doest disbuse¹² me; I am a
 gentleman.

BAR. A gentleman? how so?

SLIP. Why, I rub horses, sir. 5

¹ D. *changes to Let.*

³ Collier, D. *lawless.*

² Walker, D. *soliciting*; Collier, *suiting*; G. *sweetning*; *I incline to the first.*

⁴ G. *perswasions.*

⁵ D. *changes to Make.*

⁶ Cr. *fend*; *emend. by D.*; *found is also a possibility.*

⁷ D. *emends to sorry, which is probably right*; *but cf. Act iv, Chorus.*

⁸ Cr. *bog*; *corr. by D*; G. *boy, without note.*

⁹ G. *the.*

¹⁰ *In Cr. this word stands in the next line, immediately before Actus*; *the MS. may have misled the printer. I emend Exeunt to Exit.*

¹¹ Cr. 3.

¹² *So Cr.*; D. *changes to abuse.*

BAR. And what of that?

SIP. Oh simple-witted! marke my reason: they that do good seruice in the common-weale are gentlemen; but such as rub horses do good seruice in the common-weale: ergo, tarbox, Maister courtier, a horse-keeper is a gentleman. 10

BAR. Heere ¹ is ouermuch wit in good earnest! ²
But, sirrha, where is thy maister?

SLIP. Neither aboue ground nor vnder ground,
Drawing out red into white,
Swallowing that downe without chawing 15
That was neuer made without treading.²

BAR. Why, where is hee then?

SLIP. Why, in his seller, drinking a cup of neate and briske claret in a boule of siluer. Oh, sir, the wine runnes trillill down his throat, which cost the poore vintnerd ³ many a 20
stampe before it was made. But I must hence, sir; I haue haste.

BAR. Why, whither now, I prithee?

SLIP. Faith, sir, to Sir Siluester, a knight hard by, vppon my maisters arrand, whom I must certifie this: that the 25
lease of Est Spring shall bee confirmed; and therefore must I bid him prouide trash, for my maister is no friend without mony.

BAR. [*aside*] This is the thing for which I sued so long,
This is the lease which I by Gnatoes meanes ⁴ 30
Sought to possesse by pattent from the king;
But hee, iniurious man, who liues by crafts
And selles kings fauours for who will giue most,
Hath taken bribes of mee, yet couertly
Will sell away the thing pertaines to mee. 35
But I haue found a present helpe, I hope,
For to preuent his purpose and deceit. —
Stay, gentle friend!

SLIP. A good word! thou haste won me:

¹ G. Here.

⁴ G. means.

²² *In Cr. each of these is a separate line, beginning with a capital.*

³ G. says this is a misprint.

This word is like a warme caudle¹ to a colde stomacke! 40

BAR. Sirra, wilt thou for mony and reward
Conuay me certaine letters out of hand
From out thy maisters pocket?

SLIP. Will I, sir? why, were it to rob my father, hang my
mother, or any such-like trifles, I am at your commaunde- 45
ment, sir. What will you giue me, sir?

S. BAR. A hundreth pounds.

SLIP. I am your man: giue me earnest. I am dead at a
pocket, sir; why, I am a lifter, maister, by my occupation.

S. BAR. A lifter? what is that? 50

SLIP. Why, sir, I can lift a pot as well as any man, and
picke a purse as soone² as any theefe in my countrie.

S. BAR. Why, fellow, hold! heere is earnest:

Ten pound to assure thee. Go, dispatch,
And bring it me to yonder tauerne thou seest; 55

And assure thy-selfe thou shalt both haue
Thy skin full of wine, and the rest of thy mony.

SLIP. I will, sir. Now, roome for a gentleman, my
maisters!

Who giues mee mony for a faire new angell, a trimme new
angell? *Exeunt.*

[Act third. Scene second.]

[ATEUKIN'S stable.]

Enter ANDREW and PURUEYER.³

PUR. Sirrha, I must needes haue your maisters horses,
The king cannot bee vnserued.

AND. Sirrha, you must needs go without them,
Because my maister must be serued.

PUR. Why, I am the kings purueyer, 5
And I tell thee I will haue them.

AND. I am Ateukins seruant, Signior Andrew,
And I say thou shalt not haue them.

¹ Cr. candle; *corr. by D.*

² Cr. affoone.

³ G. Purueyor.

PUR. Heeres my ticket ; denie it if thou darst.

AND. There is the stable ; fetch them out if thou darst. 10

PUR. Sirrha, sirrha, tame your tongue, least I make you!

AND. Sirrha, sirrha, hold your hand, least I bum you!

PUR. I tell thee, thy maisters geldings are good,
And therefore fit for the king.

AN. I tell thee, my maisters horses haue gald backes, 15
And therefore cannot fit the king.

Purueyr,¹ purueyer, puruey thee of more wit! Darst thou
presume to wrong my lord Ateukin,² being the chiefest man
in court?

PUR. The more vnhappy common-weale, 20
Where flatterers are chiefe in court!

AND. What sayest thou?

PUR. I say thou art too presumtuous,³
And the officers shall schoole thee.

AND. A figge for them and thee, purueyer! 25
They seeke a knot in a ring that would wrong
My maister or his seruants in this court.

Enter IAQUES.

PUR. The world is at a wise passe
When nobilitie is a-fraid of a flatterer!

IAQ. Sirrha, what be you that parley contra Monsieur my 30
lord Ateukin? *En bonne foy*, prate you gainst⁴ syr *Altesse*,
mee maka your test⁵ to leap from your shoulders; per ma
foy, cy fere-ie.⁶

AND. Oh Signior captaine, you shewe your-selfe a for-
ward and friendly gentleman in my maisters behalfe! I will 35
cause him to thanke you.

IAQ. *Poultron*, speake me one parola against my bon

¹ G. Purueyer.

³ G. presumtuous.

² Cr. Ateukins; *corr. silently by D.*

⁴ D. G. against.

⁵ D. tête; G. teste, *a better form for the date. In the French passages I record D.'s readings both when they are really significant and when Cr. is not readily intelligible to the ordinary reader. The Italics in all such passages are those of Cr.*

⁶ D. c'y ferai-je; *but Greene probably intended si.*

gentilhome, I shal estrampe¹ your guttes and thumpe your
backa that you no poynt mannage this tenne ours.²

PUR. Sirrha, come open me the stable, 40
And let mee haue the horses!

And, fellow, for all your French bragges, I will doo my dutie.

AND. Ile make garters of thy guttes,
Thou villaine, if thou enter this office!

IAQ. Mort lieu,³ take me that cappa 45
Pour uostre⁴ labour! Be gonne, villein, in the mort!

[Exit JAQUES.]

PUR. What, will you resist mee then?
Well, the Councell, fellow, shall know of your insolency.

Exit.

ANDR. Tell them what thou wilt, and eate that I can best
spare from my backe-partes, and get you gone with a ven- 50
geance.

Enter GNATO.

ATEU. Andrew.

ANDR. Sir?

ATEU. Where be my writings I put in my pocket last
night? 55

ANDR. Which, sir? your anno[t]ations⁵ vpon Matchauell?

ATEU. No, sir; the letters pattents for East Spring.

AN. Why, sir, you talk wonders to me, if you ask that
question.

ATEU. Yea, sir, and wil worke wonders too with⁶ you 60
vnlesse you finde them out. Villaine, search me them out
and bring them me, or thou art but dead!

ANDR. A terrible word in the latter end of a sessions!
Master, were you in your right wits yesternight?

ATEU. Doest thou doubt it? 65

ANDR. I, and why not, sir? for the greatest clarkes are
not the wisest,⁷ and a foole may dance in a hood as well as a

¹ G. gives Cr. as shall astrampe.

⁵ Corr. silently by D.

² D. prints ours; his textual-principle would seem to require hours.

³ D. Mort dieu.

⁶ Cr. which; corr. by D.

⁴ Cr. nostre; D. votre, without note.

⁷ The proverb usually has the wisest men.

wise man in a bare frock. Besides, such as giue themselues to Philautia,¹ as you do, maister, are so cholericke of complection that that which they burne in fire ouer night they seeke for with furie the next morning. Ah, I take care of your worship! this common-weale should haue a great losse of so good a member as you are. 70

ATEU. Thou flatterest me.

ANDR. Is it flatterie in me, sir, to speake you faire? 75
What is it then in you to dallie with the king?

ATEU. Are you prating, knaue?
I will teach you better nurture!
Is this the care you haue of my wardrop,
Of my accounts and matters of trust? 80

ANDR. Why alasse sir, in times past your garments haue beene so well inhabited as your tenants woulde giue no place to a moathe to mangle them; but since you are growne greater and your garments more fine and gaye, if your garments are not fit for hospitallitie, blame your pride, and commend my cleanlinesse. As for your writings, I am not for them, nor they for mee. 85

ATEU. Villaine, go, flie, finde them out!
If thou loosest them, thou loosest my credit.

AND. Alasse, sir, can I loose that you neuer had? 90

ATEU. Say you so? Then hold, feel you that you neuer felt! [*Strikes him.*]

[*Enter JAQUES.*]

IA. Oh, monsieur, aies patience,² pardon your pouure vallet;
Me bee at your commaundement.

ATEU. Signior Iaques, wel met; you shall commaund me.
Sirra, go cause my writings be proclamed in the market-
place; 95
Promise a great reward to them that findes³ them.
Looke where I supt and euery-where.

¹ Cr. Plulantia; *emend.* by Collier.

³ D. *changes to find.*

² Cr. patient; *corr.* silently by D.

AND. I will, sir. [*Aside*] Now are two knaues well met,
and three well parted! If you conceiue mine enigma,
gentlemen, what shal¹ I bee then? Faith, a plaine¹ harpe- 100
shilling. *Exit.*²

ATEU. Sieur Iaques, this our happy meeting rids³
Your friends and me of care and greeuous toyle ;
For I, that looke into deserts of men
And see among the souldiers in this court 105
A noble forward minde, and iudge thereof,
Cannot but seeke the meanes to raise them vp
Who merrit credite in the common-weale.
To this intent, friend Iaque[s], I haue found
A meanes to make you great and well-esteemd 110
Both with the king and with the best in court ;
For I espie in you a valiant minde,
Which makes mee loue, admire and honour you.
To this intent, — if so your trust and faith,
Your secrecie be equall with your force, — 115
I will impart a seruice to thy-selfe,
Which if thou doest effect, the king, my-selfe,
And what or hee or⁴ I with him can worke
Shall be imployd in what thou wilt desire.

IAQ. Me sweara by my ten bones, my Singniar,⁵ to be 120
loyal to your lordships⁶ intents, affaires ; ye, my monsignieur,
que non ferai-ie pour your pleasure?⁷ By my sworda, me
be no babillard.⁸

ATEU. Then hoping one thy truth, I prithe see
How kinde Ateukin is to forward thee.⁹ 125
Hold! take this earnest-pennie of my loue!
And marke my words: the king by me requires
No slender seruice, Iaques, at thy hands, —
Thou must by priuie practise make away

¹ G. has the modern spelling.

² Cr. Exeunt; *corr. silently by D.*

³ Cr. hides; D. *emends to* hinders.

⁴ Cr. and.

⁷ Cr. my monsignieur, *qui non fera ic pour*. Yea pleasure? *corr. by D.*

⁵ G. says Cr. Signiar.

⁶ G. lordship's.

⁸ Cr. babie Lords; *corr. by D.*

⁹ Cr. mee; *corr. by D.*

The queene, faire Dorethea, as she sleepes, 130
Or how thou wilt, so she be done to death.

Thou shalt not want promotion heare in court.

IAQ. Stabba the woman? Per ma foy, monsieur, me
thrusta my weapon into her belle, so me may be gard¹ per le
roy! 135

Mee do² your seruice,

But me no be hanged pur my labor!

ATEU. Thou shalt haue warrant, Iaques, from the king :
None shall outface, gainsay and wrong my friend.

Do not I loue thee, Iaques? Feare not then! 140

I tell thee, who-so³ toucheth thee in ought,

Shall iniure me ; I loue, I tender thee ;

Thou art a subiect fit to serue his Grace.

Iaques, I had a written warrant once,

But that, by great misfortune, late is lost. 145

Come, wend we to S. Andrewes, where his Grace

Is now in progresse, where he shall assure

Thy safetie and confirme thee to the act.

IAQUES. We will attend your Noblenesse. *Exeunt.*

[Act third. Scene third.]

[*The palace.*]

Enter SIR BARTRAM, DOROTHEA, *the queene*, NANO, LORD ROSS. LADIES,
ATTENDANTS.

DORO. Thy credite, Bartram, in the Scottish court,
Thy reuerend yeares, the stricknesse of thy vowes,

All these are meanes sufficient to perswade ;

But loue, the faithfull lincke of loyall hearts,

That hath possession of my constant minde, 5

Exiles all dread, subdueth vaine suspect.⁴

¹ G. guard.

² Cr. de ; G. do, *without note*.

³ *In the numerous instances in which I hyphenate a word which appears in G. as a single word, the parts are separate in Cr.*

⁴ So G. ; Cr. supect.

Me thinks no craft should harbour in that brest
Where maiestie and vertue is¹ instaled.

Me thinke² my beautie should not cause my death.

BAR. How gladly, soueraigne³ princesse, would I erre, 10
And binde⁴ my shame to saue your royall life!

Tis princely in your-selfe to thinke the best,
To hope his Grace is guiltlesse of this crime;
But, if in due preuention you default,

How blinde are you that were forwarnd before! 15

DORO. Suspition without cause deserueth blame.

BAR. Who sees⁵ and shunne not harmes, deserue the
same.

Beholde the tenor of this traiterous plot.

[Presents the warrant.]

DORO. What should I reade? Perhappes he wrote it
not.

BAR. Heere is his warrant, vnder seale and signe, 20
To Iaqués, borne in France, to murther you.

DORO. Ah, carelesse king, would God this were not thine!
What tho I reade? Ah, should I thinke it true?

ROSSE. The hand and seale confirmes⁶ the deede is his.

DORO. What know I tho if now he thinketh this? 25

NANO. Madame, Lucretius saith that to repent
Is childish,⁷ wisdom to preuent.

DORO. What tho?

NANO. Then cease your teares, that haue dismaid you,
And crosse the foe⁸ before hee haue betrayed you.

BAR. What needes this⁸ long suggestion⁹ in this cause, 30
When euery circumstance confirmeth trueth?

First, let the hidden mercie from aboue

Confirme your Grace, since by a wondrous meanes

The practise of your daungers came to light;

¹ D. G. are, *without note.*

⁵ D. *emends to see.*

² D. *changes to Methinks.*

⁶ D. *changes to confirm.*

³ G. soueraign.

⁷ Cr. G. *shildish.*

⁴ D. *suggests find*; G. *emends to bide.*

⁹ Cr. *suggestions.*

⁸ D. *changes to need these*; G. *needes these.*

Next, let the tokens of app[r]ooued ¹ trueth 35
 Gouverne and stay your thoughts, too much seduc't
 And marke the sooth, and listen the intent.
 Your Highnesse knowes, and these my noble lords
 Can witnesse this, that whilest your husbands ² sirre
 In happie peace possest the Scottish crowne, 40
 I was his sworne attendant heere in court ;
 In daungerous fight I neuer fail'd my lord ;
 And since his death, and this your husbands raigne,
 No labour, dutie haue I left vndone
 To testifie my zeale vnto the crowne. 45
 But now my limmes are weake, mine eyes are dim,
 Mine age vnweldie and vnmeete for toyle ;
 I came to court in hope, for seruice past,
 To gaine some lease to keepe me, 'bbeing olde.
 There found I all was vpsie-turuy turnd, 50
 My friends displac'st, the nobles loth to craue.
 Then sought I to the minion of the king,
 Ateukin, ³ who, allured by a bribe,
 Assur'd me of the lease for which I sought ;
 But see the craft! when he had got the graunt, 55
 He wrought to sell it to Sir Siluester
 In hope of greater earnings from his hands.
 In briefe, I learnt his craft, and wrought the meanes,
 By one his needie seruants, ⁴ for reward,
 To steale from out his pocket all the briefes ; 60
 Which hee perform'd, and with reward resignd.
 Them when I read, — now marke the power of God! —
 I found this warrant seald, among the rest,
 To kill your Grace, — whom God long keepe aliue!
 Thus, in effect, by wonder are you sau'd. 65
 Trifle not then, but seeke a speadie ⁵ flight ;
 God will conduct your steppes, and shield the right.

¹ G. approued.² G. husband's.³ Cr. G. Auteukin.⁴ D. *emends to servant ; it is a confusion of two constructions.*⁵ Cr. speakie ; *corr. silently by D. G.*

DOR. What should I do? ah, poore vnhappy queen,
 Borne to indure what fortune can containe!¹
 Ah lasse,² the deed is too apparent³ now! 70
 But, oh mine eyes, were you as bent to hide
 As my poore heart is forward to forgiue,
 Ah cruell king, my loue would thee acquite!⁴
 Oh, what auailles to be allied and matcht
 With high estates, that marry but in shewe? 75
 Were I baser⁵ borne, my meane estate
 Could warrant me from this impendent harme;⁶
 But to be great and happie, these are twaine.
 Ah, Rosse, what shall I do? how shall I worke?

ROSSE. With speedie letters to your father send, 80
 Who will reuenge you, and defend your right.

DOR. As if they kill not me, who with him fight!
 As if his breast be toucht, I am not wounded!
 As if he waild, my ioyes were not confounded!
 We are one heart, tho rent by hate in twaine; 85
 One soule, one essence doth our weale containe:
 What then can conquer him that kilns not me?

ROSSE. If this aduice displease, then, madame, flee.

DOR. Where may I wend or trauel without feare?

ROSSE.⁷ Where not, in changing this attire you weare? 90

DOR. What, shall I clad me like a country maide?

NA. The pollicie is base, I am affraide.

DOR. Why, Nano?

NA. Aske you why? What, may a queene
 March foorth in homely weede and be not seene?
 The rose, although in thornie shrubs she spread, 95
 Is still the rose, her beauties waxe not dead:
 And noble mindes, altho the coate be bare,
 Are by their semblance knowne, how great they are.

¹ G. *changes to* contrive.

² G. Ahlasse.

³ G. apparant.

⁴ Cr. acquire; *corr. silently by D. G.*

⁵ D. *proposes* If I were baser *or* Were I baser; G. Were I but baser;
I retain the nine-syllabled line.

⁶ Cr. *apparently* harnie.

⁷ Cr. NA.; *corr. by G.*

BAR. The dwarfe saith true.

DOR. What garments likste thou than?

NA. Such as may make you seeme a proper man. 100

DOR. He makes me blush and smile, tho I am sad.

NA. The meanest coat for saftie¹ is not bad.

DOR. What, shall I iet in breeches, like a squire?

Alasse, poore dwarfe, thy mistresse is vnmeete.²

NA. Tut! go me thus, your cloake before your face, 105

Your sword vpreard with queint *and* comely grace.

If any come and question what you bee,

Say you, "a man," and call for wisse mee.

DOR. What should I weare a sword? to what intent?

NA. Madame, for shewe;³ it is an ornament; 110

If any wrong you, drawe: a shining blade

Withdrawes a coward theefe that would inuade.

DOR. But, if I strike, and hee should strike againe,

What should I do? I feare I should bee slaine.

NANO. No; take it single on your dagger so: 115

Ile teach you, madame, how to ward a blow.

Do. How litle shapes much substance may include!

Sir Bartram, Rosse, yee ladies and my friends,

Since presence yeelds me death, and absence life,

Hence will I flie, disguised like a squire, 120

As one that seekes to liue in Irish warres.

You, gentle Rosse, shal³ furnish my depart.

ROSS. Yea, prince, *and* die with you with all my hart!

Vouchsafe me, then, in all extreamest states,

To waight on you and serue you with my best. 125

DOR. To me pertaines the woe: liue then⁴ in rest!

Friends, fare you well; keepe secret my depart;

Nano alone shall my attendant bee.

NAN. Then, madame, are you mand, I warrant ye!

Giue me a sword, and, if there grow debate, 130

Ile come behinde and breake your enemies pate.

ROSS. How sore wee greeue³ to part so soone away!

¹ G. saftie. ² D. *thinks* 103, 104 *must rhyme*; G. *denies it*.

³ G. *has the modern spelling*.

⁴ D. *changes to thou*.

DOR. Greeue not for those that perish if they stay!

NANO. The time in words mispent is litle woorth;
Madam walke on, and let them bring vs foorth.

135

Exeunt.

[*The End of the Third Act.*]

CHORUS.

Enter BOH[AN].

[BOH.] So these sad motions makes ¹ the faire ² sleepe.³

And sleep hee shall in quiet and content;

For it would make a marbell melt and weepe

To see these treasons gainst the innocent.

But, since shee scapes by flight to saue her life,

The king may chance repent she was his wife.

6

The rest is ruthfull; yet, to beguilde ⁴ the time,

Tis ⁵ interlast with merriment and rime.

Exeunt.

Actus quartus. Schena prima.

[*A forest.*]

After a noyse of hornes and showtings, enter certaine HUNTSMEN (if you please, singing) one way; another way ATEUKIN and IAQUES.⁶

ATEU. Say, gentlemen, where may wee finde the king?

HUNTS. Euen heere at hand on hunting;⁷

And at this houre hee taken hath a stand

To kill a deere.

ATEU. A pleasant worke in hand!

Follow your sport, and we will seeke his Grace.

5

HUNTS. When such him seeke, it is a wofull case!

Exeunt HUNTSMEN one way; ATEU. and IAQ. another.

¹ D. G. make, *without note.*

² D. *normalizes to fairy.*

³ *The sleep of OBERON is against D.'s suggestion that one of the pagants printed at the end of Act I belongs here, except, of course, as a substitute for this passage.*

⁴ So Cr.; D. G. *change to beguile.*

⁵ G. 'Tis.

⁷ G. *inserts he is bent.*

⁶ Cr. ATEUKIN and IAQUES, GNATO; but, as D. *points out*, "GNATO is only another name for ATEUKIN."

[Act fourth. Scene second.]

[THE COUNTESS OF ARRAN'S *park*.]*Enter* EUSTACE, IDA, *and the* COUNTESS.

COUNT. Lord Eustace, as your youth *and* vertuous life
 Deserues a faire,¹ more faire and richer wife,
 So, since I am a mother, and do wit
 What wedlocke is, and that which longs to it,
 Before I meane my daughter to bestow, 5
 Twere meete that she and I your state did know.

EUST. Madame, if I consider Idas woorth,
 I know my portions merrit² none so faire.
 And yet I hold in farme and yearly rent
 A thousand pound, which may her state content. 10

COUNT. But what estate, my lord, shall she possesse?

EUST. All that is mine, graue Countessé, *and* no lesse.
 But, Ida, will you loue?

IDA. I cannot hate.

EUST. But will you wedde?

IDA. Tis Greeke to mee, my lord ;
 Ile wish you well, and thereon take my word. 15

EUST. Shall I some signe of fauour then receiue?

IDA. I, if her ladiship will giue me leaue.

COUNT. Do what thou wilt.

IDA. Then, noble English peere,
 Accept this ring, wherein my³ heart is set, —
 A constant heart, with burning flames befret ; 20
 But vnder written this, *O morte dura* ;
 Heereon when so you looke with eyes *pura*,
 The maide you fancie most will fauour you.

EUST. Ile trie this heart, in hope to finde it true. 24

¹ D. *changes to* deserve a far.

² D. *changes to* portion merits.

³ Walker *conjectures a* ; the *conjectures of* Walker *and* Collier *are all recorded by* D.

Enter certaine HUNTSMEN and LADIES.

- HUNTS. Widdowe countesse, well ymet!
 Euer may thy ioyes bee many!
 Gentle Ida, faire beset,¹
 Faire and wise, not fairer any! 28
 Frolike huntsmen of the game
 Willes² you well, and giues³ you greeting.
 IDA. Thanks, good woodman, for the same
 And our sport and merrie meeting! 32
 HUNTS. Vnto thee we do present
 Siluer heart with arrow wounded.
 EUST. This doth shadow my lament,
 Both [with]⁴ feare and loue confounded. 36
 LADIES. To the mother of the mayde,
 Faire as th' lillies,⁵ red as roses,
 Euen so many goods are saide
 As her-selfe in heart supposes. 40
 COUNT. What are you, friends, that thus doth⁶ wish vs
 wel?
 HUNTS. Your neighbours nigh, that haue on hunting
 beene,
 Who, vnderstanding of your walking foorth,
 Prepare this traine to entertaine you with:
 This Ladie Douglas, this Sir Egmond is. 45
 COUNT. Welcome, ye ladies, and thousand thanks for this!
 Come, enter you a homely widdowes house;
 And, if mine entertainment please you, let vs⁷ feast.
 HUNTS. A louely ladie neuer wants a guest.

¹ D. *accepts* Walker's change to the Scotch *sair beset*; but, as G. *points out*, the HUNTSMAN does not speak Scotch, nor take so melancholy a view of love and marriage as this phrase would imply.

² D. *changes to* Will.

³ D. *changes to* give.

⁴ *Supplied by* D.; G. [With] both.

⁵ G. th' lillies.

⁶ D. *changes to* do.

⁷ D. *thinks* let vs *an interpolation*; G. says " = let's."

Exeunt; mane[n]t EUSTACE, IDA.

EUST. Stay, gentle Ida: tell me what you deeme! 50
What, doth this hast¹ this tender heart² besee me?

IDA. Why not, my lord? since nature teacheth art
To sencelesse beastes to cure their greeuous smart:
Dicta[m]num³ serues to close the wound againe.

EUST. What helpe for those that loue?

IDA. Why, loue againe. 55

EUST. Were I the hart —

IDA. Then I the hearbe would bee:
You shall not die for help; come, follow me!

Exeunt.

[Act fourth. Scene third.]

[*The forest.*]

Enter ANDREW *and* IAQUES.

IAQ. *Mon dieu*, what *malheure* be this! me come a the
chamber, Signior Andrew, *mon dieu*, taka my *poinyard en*
*mon*⁴ *maine* to giue the *estocade* to the *damoisella*; *per ma*
*foy, there was no person, — elle cest en alle.*⁵

AND. The woorse lucke, Iaques! But, because I am thy 5
friend, I will aduise the somewhat towards the attainment of
the gallows.

IAQ. Gallows? what be that?

AN. Marrie, sir, a place of great promotion, where thou
shalt by one turne aboue ground rid the world of a knaue, 10
and make a goodly ensample for all bloodie villaines of thy
profession.

IAQ.⁶ *Que ditte vous,*⁷ *Monsieur Andrew?*

¹ D. G. change to hart; G. thinks something is omitted.

² D. prints hart, without note.

³ Corr. by D.

⁴ D. ma, without note.

⁵ D. corrects the spelling to *elle s'est en allée*.

⁶ Supplied by D., without note.

⁷ D. G. Que dites vous.

AND. I say, Iaques, thou must keep this path, and high thee, for the q[ueene], as I am certified, is departed with her dwarfe, apparelled like a squire. Ouertake her, Frenchman, stab her; Ile promise thee this dubblet shall be happy. 15

IAQ. *Purquoy?*

AND. It shall serue a iolle gentleman, Sir Dominus Monsignior Hangman. 20

IAQ. *Cest¹ tout vn; me will rama pour le² monoy. [Exit.]*

AND. Go, and the rot consume thee! Oh, what a trim world is this! My maister liu[e]s by cousoning the king; I by flattering him; Slipper, my fellow, by stealing; and I by lying: is not this a wylie accord, gentlemen? This last night our iolly horsekeeper, beeing well stept in licor, confessed to me the stealing of my maisters writings, and his great reward. Now dare I not bewraye him, least he discouer my knauerie; but this³ haue I wrought: I vnderstand he will passe this way to prouide him necessaries; but, if I and my fellowes faile not, wee will teach him such a lesson as shall cost him a chiefe place on pennillesse-bench for his labour. But yond he comes! 25 30

Enter SLIPPER, with a TAILOR, a SHOOMAKER, and a CUTLER.

SLIP. Taylor!

TAYL. Sir? 35

SLIP. Let my dubblet bee white northren, fiew groates the yard; I tell the I will bee braue.

TAYL. It shall, sir.

SLIP. Now, sir, cut it me like the battlements of a custerd, ful⁴ of round holes; edge me the sleeues with Couentry-blew, and let the lynings bee⁵ of tenpenny locorum. 40

TAYL. Very good, sir.

SLIP. Make it the amorous cut, a flappe before.

TAYL. And why so? that fashion is stale.

SLIP. Oh, friend, thou art a simple fellow! I tell thee, a 45

¹ G. C'est, without note.

² G. la, without note, following D., who, of course, normalizes his text.

³ D. G. thus, without note.

⁴ G. full.

⁵ G. be.

flap is a great friend to a storrie,¹ it stands him in stead of cleane napery ; and, if a mans shert bee torne, it is a present penthouse to defend him from a cleane huswifes scoffe.

TAYL. You say sooth, sir.

SLIP. Holde, take thy mony : there is seuen shillings for 50
the dubblet, and eight for the breeches. Seuen and eight ;
birladie, thirtie-sixe is a faire deale² of mony !

TAYL. Farwell, sir.

SLIP. Nay, but stay, taylor.

TAYL. Why, sir? 55

SLIPPER. Forget not this speciall mate :³

Let my back-parts bee well linde,
For there come many winter stormes from a windie bellie, I
tell thee. [*Exit TAILOR.*] Shoo-maker!

SHOE-MA. Gentleman, what shoo will it please you to 60
haue?

SLIP. A fine, neate calues leather, my friend.

SHOO. Oh, sir, that is too thin ; it will not last you.

SLIP. I tell thee, it is my neer kinsman, for I am Slipper,
which hath his best grace in summer to bee suted in kalu[e]s⁴ 65
skins. Guidwife Clarke⁵ was my grandmother, and Goodman
Neatherleather mine vnckle, but my mother, good woman,
alas! she was a Spaniard, and being wel tande and drest by
a good fellow an English-man, is growne to some wealth : as,
when I haue but my vpper-parts clad in her husbands costlie 70
Spanish leather, I may bee bold to kisse the fayrest ladies
foote in this country.

SHOO. You are of high birth, sir.

But haue you all your mothers markes on you?

SLIP. Why, knaue? 75

SHOOMAKER. Because, if thou come of the bloud of the

¹ A word unknown to D. and to me ; G. suggests "florrie = flurry," but apparently had no very definite meaning in mind. It seems barely possible that stottie is the right reading ; see Notes.

² G. deal.

³ D. emends to make, perhaps rightly.

⁴ Cr. lakus ; emend. by Kittredge ; D. G. accept Collier's suggestion of jackass.

⁵ Collier, D. G. Calfe ; qy. Barke ; see Notes.

Slippers, you should haue a shoemakers alle thrust through
your eare. *Exit.*¹

SLIP. Take your earnest, friend, and be packing,
And meddle not with my progenators. Cutler! 80

CUTLER. Heare, sir.

SLIP. I must haue a rapier and dagger.²

CUTLER. A rapier and dagger you meane, sir?

SLIPPER. Thou saiest true, but it must haue a verie
faire edge. 85

CUTLER. Why so, sir?

SLIP. Because it may cut by himselfe; for trulie, my
freende, I am a man of peace, and weare weapons but for
facion.

CUTLER. Well, sir, giue me earnest, I will fit you. 90

SLIP. Hold, take it; I betruest thee, friend; let me be
welarmed.³

CUTLER. You shall. *Exit CUTLER.*

SLIP. Nowe what remaines? Theres twentie crownes
for house,⁴ three crownes for houshol stuffe, six pence to buie 95
a constables-staffe. Nay, I will be the chiefe of my parish!
There wants nothing but a wench, a cat, a dog, a wife and a
seruant, to make an hole familie. Shall I marrie with Alice,
good-man Grimshaues daughter? Shee is faire, but indeede
her tongue is like clocks on Shrouetuesday, alwaies out of 100
temper. Shall I wed Sisley of the Whighton? Oh, no!
she is like a frog in a parcely-bed, as scittish as an ele; if I
seek to hamper her, she wil horne me. But a wench must
be had, Maister Slip[per]! Yea, and shal be, deer
friend! 105

AND. I now wil driue him from his contemplations. Oh
my mates, come forward; the lamb is vnpened, the fox shal
preuaile.

¹ G., following D., transfers this, without note, to l. 80.

² As D. points out, there must have been something peculiar in SLIPPER'S
pronunciation of these words. D. G. accept Collier's emendation reaper
and digger, but with hesitation.

³ G. wel armed.

⁴ So Cr.; D. G. a house.

Enter three ANTIQUES, who dance round and take SLIPPER with them.

SLIP. I will, my freend,¹ and I thanke you heartilie ; pray keepe your curtesie, I am yours in the way of an hornpipe. 110
They are strangers, I see, they vnderstand not my language ; wee, wee.²

Whilst they are dauncing, ANDREW takes away his money, and the other ANTIQUES depart.

SLIP. Nay, but, my friends, one hornpipe further ! a reflu-
ence backe, and two doubles forward ! What ! not one
crosse-point against Sundayes ? What, ho, sirrha ! you gone,³ 115
you with the nose like an eagle, and you be a right Greeke,
one turne more ! Theeues ! theeues ! I am robd ! theeues !
Is this the knauerie of fidders ?⁴ Well, I will then binde the
hole credit of their occupation on a bagpiper, and he for my
money. But I will after, and teach⁵ them to caper in a 120
halter that haue cousoned me of my money.

Exit.⁶

[Act fourth. Scene fourth.]

[The forest.]

Enter NANO, DOROTHEA, in mans apparell.

DORO. Ah, Nano, I am wearie of these weedes ;
Wearie to weeld this weapon that I bare ;
Wearie of loue, from whom my woe procedes ;
Wearie of toyle, since I haue lost my deare :
O wearie life, where wanteth⁷ no distresse,
But euery thought is paide with heauinesse ! 6

NA. Too much of wearie, madame, if you please !

¹ D. G. friend[s], which, though possible, seems unnecessary.

² D., in his first edition, says : " Perhaps this is not an exclamation, but a misprint for well, well." Later he thought it French, as in iv. 5, 5 ; this opinion is, of course, correct.

³ Qy. yon ; D. G. emend to gone.

⁴ G. fiddlers.

⁵ Cr. reach ; corr. silently by D. G.

⁶ Cr. Exeunt ; corr. silently by D.

⁷ Cr. wanted ; corr. by D. ; G. prefers wanted.

Sit downe; let wearie dye, and take your ease.

DOROT. How looke I, Nano? like a man or no?

NANO. If not a man, yet like a manlie shrowe. 10

DORO. If any come and meete vs on the way,

What should we do if they inforce vs stay?

NA. Set cap a-huffe, and challenge him the field.

Suppose the worst, the weake may fight to yeeld.

DOROT. The battaile, Nano, in this troubled minde 15

Is farre more fierce then euer we may finde.

The bodies¹ wounds by medicines may be eased,

But griefes of mindes² by salues are not appeased.

NA. Say, madame, will you heare your Nano sing?

DOR. Of woe, good boy, but of no other thing. 20

'NA. What if I sing of fancie? will it please?

DOR. To such as hope successe such noats breede ease.

NA. What if I sing, like Damon, to my sheepe?

DOR. Like Phillis, I will sit me downe to weepe.

NA. Nay, since my songs afford such pleasure small, 25

Ile sit me downe, and sing you none at all.

DORO. Oh be not angrie, Nano.

NANO. Nay, you loath

To thinke on that which doth content vs both.

DORO. And³ how?

NANO. You scorne desport when you are wearie,

And loath my mirth who liue to make you merry. 30

DORO. Danger and fear withdraw me from delight.

NA. Tis vertue to contemne fals Fortunes spight.

Do. What shuld I do to please thee, friendly squire?

NA. A smile a day, is all I will require;

And, if you pay me well the smiles you owe me, 35

Ile kill this cursed care, or else beshrowe me!

DORO.⁴ We are descried! oh Nano,⁴ we are dead!

¹ G. bodie's.

² D. *changes to mind.*

³ D. *suggests As; G. says, " = An' " ; I take it as And.*

⁴ Cr. DOUG. . . . Mano; *corr. silently by D.*

Enter IAQUES, his sword drawne.

NANO. Tut, yet you walk, you are not dead indeed.
 Drawe me your sword, if he your way withstand,
 And I will seeke for rescue out of hand. 40

DO.¹ Run, Nano, runne! preuent thy princes death!

NA. Feare not, Ile run all danger out of breath.

IAQ. Ah, you *calletta!* you *strumpet!* *ta,*² *Matresse*
*Doretie, este vous surprius?*³ Come, say your pater noster,
*car vous est mort*⁴ par ma foy. 45

DO. *Callet?*⁵ *me? strumpet? Catiue* as thou art!
 But euen a princesse borne, who scorne thy threats.⁶
 Shall neuer French-man say an English mayd
 Of threats of forraine force will be afraid.

IAQ. You no *dire vostre prieges?*⁷ *vrbleme mechante*
*famme,*⁸ *guarda* your *bresta!* *there! me make you die on*
my morglay. 50

DORO. God sheeld me, helplesse⁹ princes and a wife,

*They fight, and shee is sore wounded.*¹⁰

And saue my soule, altho I loose my life!
 Ah, I am slaine! some piteous power repay 55
 This murtherers cursed deed that doth me slay!

IAQ. *Elle est tout mort.* Me will runne *pur* a wager,
 for feare me be *surpryes* and *pendu* for my labour. *Bein,*¹¹

¹ In Cr. *this is prefixed to l. 40; corr. by D.*

² *Qy. ha; G. emends to la.* ³ D. *êtes vous surprise.*

⁴ D. *car vous êtes morte.* ⁵ D. *suggests Callest.*

⁶ *So Cr.; D. prints: [I'm no strumpet] but euen a princesse born,*
Who scorne[s] thy threats —

⁷ D. *votres prières; G. points out that Greene's Italian gets the better of*
his French.

⁸ Cr. *vrbleme merchants femme; D. emends to morbleu, mechante*
femme.

⁹ G. *haplesse.*

¹⁰ D. G. *transfer this, and place it after l. 54.*

¹¹ Cr. *Be in; D. Bien; I accept D.'s emendation (for the retention of*
the spelling of Cr. see above, iv. 3, ll. 1, 2), although Cr. has here Roman
type, as if it were English. That it is English, and is addressed to his
sword or himself, seems unlikely.

*Ie meu alera*¹ *au roy auy cits me affaires,*² *Ie serra vn*
chiualier, for this daies trauaile. 60

Exit.

Enter NANO [and] S[IR] CUTBERT ANDERSON, his sword drawne.

S. CUTH. Where is this poore distressed gentleman?

NANO. Here, laid on ground, and wounded to the death.
Ah, gentle heart, how are these beautious lookes
Dimd by the tyrant cruelties of death!

Oh wearie soule, breake thou from forth my brest, 65
And ioyne thee with the soule I honoured most!

S. CUT. Leaue mourning, friend; the man is yet alieue.
Some³ helpe me to conuey him to my house.

There will I see him carefully recured,
And send⁴ priuie search to catch the murtherer. 70

NANO. The God of heauen reward the, curteous knight

Exeunt; and they beare out DOROTHEA.

[Act fourth. Scene fifth.]

[Another part of the same forest.]

Enter the KING OF SCOTS, IAQUES, ATEUKIN, ANDREW; IAQUES running
with his sword one way, the KING with his traine an-other way.

K. OF S. Stay, Iaques; feare not; sheath thy murthering
blade!

Loe, here thy king and friends are come abroad
To saue thee from the terrors of pursuite:
What, is she dead?

IAQ. Wee, Monsieur, elle is⁵ blesse per lake teste, oues 5
les espanles.⁶ I warrant she no trouble you.

¹ G. gives Cr. as vlera.

² D. je m'en allerai au roi lui dire mes affaires. *It seems improbable that*
lui dire was the original of auy cits, which rather suggests some form of
aviser. It is hard to conjecture what such a French scholar as Greene wrote.

³ Unless servants entered with SIR CUTBERT, — which is possible, al-
though none are mentioned in the stage-directions, — this is to be emended
to Come.

⁴ G. send [forth].

⁵ D. est, without note.

⁶ D., in his first edition, prints par . . . la tête sur les épaules; later he
printed par la tête over les épaules, — so G., retaining teste, however.

ATEU. Oh then, my liege, how happie art thou growne,
 How faouered of the heauens, and blest by loue!
 Mee thinkes I see faire Ida in thine armes,
 Crauing remission for her late contempt;¹ 10
 Mee thinke I see her blushing steale a kisse,
 Vniting both your soules by such a sweete;
 And you, my king, suck nectar from her lips.
 Why then delaies your Grace to gaine the rest
 You long desired? Why loose we forward time? 15
 Write, make me spokesman now, vow marriage:
 If she deny your faouour, let me die.

ANDR. Mightie and magnificent potentate, giue credence
 to mine honorable good lord, for I heard the midwife sweare
 at his natiuitie that the faieries gaue him the propertie of the 20
 Thracian stone: for who toucheth it is exempted from grieffe,
 and he that heareth my maisters counsell is alreadie² pos-
 sessed of happinesse. Nay, — which is more myraculous —
 as the noble-man in his infancie lay in his cradle, a swarme
 of bees laid honey on his lippes in token of his eloquence, 25
 for *melle dulcior*³ *fuit oratio*.

ATEU. Your Grace must beare with imperfections:
 This is exceeding loue that makes him speake.

K. OF S. Ateukin, I am rauisht in conceit!
 And yet deprest againe with earnest thoughts: 30
 Me thinkes this murther soundeth in mine eare
 A threatning noyse of dire and sharp reuenge.
 I am incenst with greefe, yet faine would ioy;
 What may I do to end me of these doubt?

ATEU. Why, prince, it is no murther in a king 35
 To end an-others life to saue his owne,
 For you are not as common people bee,
 Who die and perish with a fewe mens⁴ teares;
 But, if you faile, the state doth whole default:
 The realme is rent in twaine in such a losse.⁵ 40

¹ Cr. attempt; *corr. by D.*

⁴ Cr. mans; *corr. by D.*

² Cr. alreadle.

⁵ *So G.; Cr. alosse.*

³ Cr. dulcier; *corr. by D., without note.*

And Aristotle holdeth this for true :
 Of euills ¹ needs we must chuse the least.
 Then better were it that a woman died
 Then all the helpe of Scotland should be blent.
 Tis pollicie, my liege, in euerie state 45
 To cut off members that disturbe the head.
 And ² by corruption generation growes ;
 And contraries maintaine the world and state.

K. OF S. Enough, I am confirmed ! Ateukin, come ;
 Rid ³ me of loue, and rid me of my greefe : 50
 Driue thou the tyrant from this tainted brest,
 Then may I triumph in the height of ioy.
 Go to mine Ida, tell her that I vowe
 To raise her head and make her honours great.
 Go to mine Ida, tell her that her haire 55
 S[h]albe ⁴ embellished ⁵ with orient pearles,
 And crownes of saphyrs compassing her browes
 Shall warre ⁶ with those sweete beauties of her eyes.
 Go to mine Ida, tell her that my soule
 Shall keepe her semblance closed in my brest ; 60
 And I, in touching of her milke-white mould,
 Will thinke me deified in such a grace.
 I like no stay ; go write, and I will signe.
 Reward me Iaquen, giue him store of crownes.⁷
 And, sirrha Andrew, scout thou here in court, 65
 And bring me tydings if thou canst perceiue
 The least intent of muttering in my traine ;
 For either those that wrong thy lord or thee ⁸
 Shall suffer death.

*Exit the KING.*⁹

¹ *Qy. insert twain ; D. suggests needeth for needs ; G. reads need[ful].*

² *G. wishes to read As.*

³ *G. thinks this a misprint for Rede.*

⁴ *G. Shall be.*

⁵ *Cr. embolished ; corr. silently by D.*

⁶ *Cr. weare ; corr. by D.*

⁷ *Cr. crowne ; corr. by D.*

⁸ *Qy. me ; but Kittredge suggests that this clause is addressed to ATEUKIN.*

⁹ *He does not go until after ATEUKIN'S speech ; D. G. transfer the stage-direction accordingly.*

ATEU. How much, ô mightie king,
Is thy Ateukin bound to honour thee! 70
Bowe thee,¹ Andrew; bend thine sturdie knees.
Seest thou not here thine onely god on earth?

IAQ. Mes ou est mon argent, signior?

ATEU. Come, follow me. His graue, I see, is made,
That thus on suddain he hath left vs here.² 75
Come, Iaqes, we wil³ haue our packet soone dispatcht
And you shall be my mate vpon the way.

IAQ. Com vous plera,⁴ monsieur. *Exeunt.*

ANDR. Was neuer such a world, I thinke, before,
When sinners seeme to daunce within a net : 80
The flatterer and the murtherer they grow big ;
By hooke or crooke promotion now is sought.

In such a world, where men are so misled,
What should I do but, as the prouerbe saith,
Runne with the hare, and hunt⁵ with the hound? 85

To haue two meanes beseemes a wittie man :
Now here in court I may aspire and clime
By subtiltie for⁶ my maisters death ;

And, if that faile, well fare an-other drift :
I will in secret certaine letters send 90
Vnto the English king, and let him know
The order of his daughters ouerthrow,⁷

That, if my maister crack his credit here, —
As I am sure long flattery cannot hold, —
I may haue meanes within the English court 95

To scape the scourge that waits on bad aduice. *Exit.*

[*The End of the Fourth Act.*]

¹ G. inserts then, for metre.

² D. G. mark this as an "aside." I do not understand the passage ;
His Grace, I see, is madde suggests itself as an emendation.

³ G. will.

⁴ G. gives Cr. as Come vous plera.

⁵ G. inserts too.

⁶ D. suggests before.

⁷ G. says Cr. misprints ouerthtow.

CHORUS.

Enter BOHAN and OBIRON.

OBER. Beleue me, bonny Scot, these strange euent
Are passing pleasing ; may they end as well!

BOHA. Else say that Bohan hath a barren skull
If better motions yet then any past
Do not, more glee¹ to make, the fairie greet. 5

But my small son made prittie handsome² shift
To saue the queene, his mistresse, by his speed.

OBIRO. Yea, and your laddie,³ for his sport he made,
Shall see, when least he hopes, Ile stand his friend,
Or else hee capers in a halter end. 10

BOHA. What, hang my son? I trowe not, Obiran!
Ile rather die then see him woe begon.

Enter a rownd, or some daunce, at pleasure.

OBER. Bohan, be pleasd, for, do they what they will,
Heere is my hand Ile saue thy son from ill.

Exeunt.^A

Actus quintus. Schena prima.

[SIR CUTHBERT ANDERSON'S house.]

Enter the QUEENE in a night gowne, LADIE ANDERSON, and NANO.

LA. AND. My gentle friend, beware, in taking aire,
Your walkes growe not offensiue to your woundes.

DO. Madame, I thank you of your courteous care ;
My woundes⁵ are well-nigh clos'd, tho sore they are.

L. AND. Me thinks these closed wounds should breed
more grieffe, 5
Since open wounds haue cure, and finde reliefe.

DOR. Madame, if vndiscovered wounds you meane,
They are not curde, because they are not seen.

¹ G. changes to gree (= agree), and takes greet as meaning weep.² G. handsome.³ Cr. you Ladie ; D. G. [and] yon laddie.⁴ Cr. Exit ; corr. silently by D. ⁵ G. wounds.

L. AND. I meane the woundes which do the heart subdue.

NANO. Oh, that is loue ! Madame, speake I not true? 10

LADIE ANDERSON¹ *ouerheares.*

LA. AND. Say it were true, what salue for such a sore?

NANO. Be wise, and shut such neighbours out of dore.

LA. AND. How if I cannot driue him from my brest?

NANO. Then chaine him well, and let him do his best.

S. CUTH. [*aside*] In ripping vp their wounds I see their wit, 15
But, if these woundes be cured, I sorrow it.

DORO. Why are you so intentiue to behold
My pale and wofull lookes, by care controlld?

LA. AND. Because in them a readie way is found
To cure my care and heale my hidden wound. 20

NANO. Good maister, shut your eyes, keepe that conceit,
Surgeons giue quoine to get a good receipt.

DORO. Peace, wanton son, this ladie did amend
My woundes : mine eyes her hidden grieffe shall end.

NANO.² Looke not too much ; it is a waightie case 25
Where-as a man puts on a maidens face ;

For many times, if ladies weare³ them not,
A nine moneths wound with little worke is got.

S. CUTH. Ile breake off their dispute, least loue proceed
From couert smiles to perfect loue indeed. 30

[*Enter SIR CUTHBERT.*]

NANO. The cats abroad, stirre not, the⁴ mice bee still!

L. AND. Tut! wee can flie such cats when so we will.

S. CUTH. How fares my gwest? take cheare, nought shall
default

That eyther doth concerne your health or ioy.

Vse me: my house, and what is mine⁵ is yours. 35

¹ So Cr. D. G.; I regard it as a mistake for SIR CUTHBERT; D. indicates the entry of SIR CUTHBERT before l. 1; D. before l. 15.

² In Cr. this line is assigned to DOROTHEA; D. G. follow Cr.

³ D. G. correct the spelling to ware.

⁴ It is perhaps only by an oversight that D. G. do not alter this to ye; see ii. 2, 28; v. 3, 1.

⁵ D. changes to as.

DORO. Thanks,¹ gentle knight; and, if all hopes be true,
I hope ere long to do as much for you.

S. CUTH. Your vertue doth acquite me of that doubt.

But, courteous sir, since troubles calles² me hence,

I must to Edenbourg vnto the king,

40

There to take charge, and waight him in his warres.

Meane-while, good madame, take this squire in charge,

And vse him so as if it were my-selfe.

L. AND. Sir Cutbert, doubt not of my dilligence.

Meane-while, till your returne God send you health.

45

DORO. God blesse his Grace, and, if his cause be iust,

Prosper his warres; if not, hee 'l mend, I trust.

Good sir, what mooues the king to fall to armes?

S. CUTH. The king of England forrageth his land,

And hath besieged Dambar³ with mightie force;

50

⁴What other newes are common in the court,

Reade you these letters, madame; tell the squire

The whole affaires of state, for I must hence.

Exit.

DORO. God prosper you, and bring you backe from thence!

Madame, what newes?

LA. AND. They say the queene is slaine.

55

DORO. Tut! such reports more false then trueth containe.

L. AND. But these reports haue made his nobles leaue

him.

DORO. Ah, carelesse men, and would they so deceiue him?

LA. AND. The land is spoylde, the commons fear the

crosse,

All crie against the king, their cause of losse;

60

The English king subdues and conquers all.

DORO. Ah lasse!⁵ this warre growes great on causes small.

L. AND. Our court is desolate, our prince alone,

Still dreading death.

¹ G. Thanks.

² D. *changes to call.*

³ Cr. Dambac; D. *emends to Dunbar.*

⁴ D. G., *regarding this as a direct question, transfer the line to DORO-
THEA; but there is no occasion to alter the text.*

⁵ G. Ahlasse.

DORO. Woes me! for him I mourne.¹
 Helpe! now helpe!² a suddaine qualme 65
 Assayles my heart.

NANO. Good madame, stand his³ friend;
 Giue vs some licor to refresh his³ heart.

L. AND. Daw thou him³ vp, ande⁴ I will fetch thee foorth
 Potions of comfort to repress⁵ his³ paine. *Exit.*

NANO. Fie, princesse! faint on euey fond report? 70
 How well-nigh had you opened your estate!
 Couer these sorrowes with the vaile of ioy,
 And hope the best, for-why this warre will cause
 A great repentance in your husbands minde.

DORO. Ah, Nano, trees liue not without their sap; 75
 And Clitia⁶ cannot blush but on the sunne;
 The thirstie earth is broke with many a gap,
 And lands are leane, where riuers do not runne:
 Where soule is reft from that it loueth best,
 How can it thriue or boast of quiet rest? 80

Thou knowest the princes losse must be my death,
 His griefe, my griefe, his mischiefe must be mine.
 Oh, if thou loue me, Nano, high to court!
 Tell Rosse, tell Bartram, that I am alie;
 Conceale thou yet the place of my aboade. 85
 Will⁷ them, euen as they loue their queene,
 As they are charie of my soule and ioy,
 To guard the king, to serue him as my lord.
 Haste thee, good Nano,⁸ for my husbands care
 Consumeth mee and wounds mee to the heart. 90

NANO. Madame, I go, yet loth to leaue you heere.

*Exit.*⁹

¹ Cr. moune; D. G. moane.

² D. says "something is lacking;" and G. reads Helpe [me] now helpe [me, for].

⁴ G. and.

³ Cr. her; D. charges the confusion to the transcriber.

⁵ G. repress.

⁶ D. Clytie, without note; G. Clytia.

⁷ D. proposes But will or And will, for metre.

⁸ Cr. Nana; D. G. Nano.

⁹ Cr. Exeunt; G. silently transfers it to l. 93, and prints Exit [NANO], as if Cr. had Exit.

DOR. Go thou with speed, euen as thou holdst me deare ;
Returne in haste.

Enter LADIE ANDERSON.

L. AN. Now, sir, what cheare? come tast this broth I
bring.

DORO. My grieffe is past ; I feele no further sting. 95

L. AND. Where is your dwarfe? Why hath he¹ left you,
sir?

DORO. For some affaires ; hee is not traueld farre.

L. AND. If so you please, come in and take your rest.

DORO. Feare keeps awake a discontented brest.

Exeunt.

[Act fifth. Scene second.]

[Before the house of the COUNTESS OF ARRAN.]

After a solemne seruice, enter from the WIDDOWES house a seruice, musical songs of marriages, or a maske, or what prettie triumph you list ; to them, ATEUKIN and IAQUES.²

ATE. What means this triumph, frend? why are these
feasts?

SERUI. Faire Ida, sir, was marryed yesterday
Vnto Sir Eustace ; and, for that intent,
Wee feast and sport it thus to honour them.

And, if you please, come in and take your part ;

My ladie is no niggard of her cheare.

Exit.³ 5

IAQ. *Monsieur*, why be you so sadda? *fette bon chere ;
foutre⁴ de ce monde !*

ATEU. What! was I borne to bee the scorne of kinne?
To gather feathers like to a⁵ hopper-crowe

10

¹ G. hee.

² Cr. ATEUKIN and GNATO ; *corr. by D ; G. and [his] GNATO [= IAQUES].*

⁴ G. says Cr. has fontre.

³ So Cr. ; D. G. [Exit with other Reuellers. D., of course, does not profess to follow the original in stage-directions ; G. does, but here, as often, his single bracket indicates that the stage-direction is not in Cr. while his spelling indicates that it is.

⁵ G., following D.'s suggestion, omits a.

And loose them in the height of all my pompe?
Accursed man, now is my credite lost!

Where is ¹ my vowes I made vnto the king?

What shall become of mee, if hee shall heare

That I haue cause him kill a vertuous queene,

15

And hope in vaine for that which now is lost?

Where shall I hide my head? I know the Heauens

Are iust, and will reuenge; I know my sinnes

Exceede compare. Should I proceed in this,

This Eustace must a-main ² be made away.

20

Oh, were I dead, how happy should I bee!

IAQ. *Est ce donque a tell poynt vostre estat?* Faith,
then adeiu Scotland! adeiu Signior Ateukin! me will homa
to France, and no be hanged in a strange country. *Exit.*

ATEU. Thou doest me good to leaue me thus alone,

25

That galling griefe and I may yoake in one.

Oh, what are subtile³ meanes to clime on high,

When euerie fall swarmes with exceeding shame?

I promist Idaes loue vnto the prince,

But shee is lost, and I am false forsworne;

30

I practis'd Dorotheas haplesse death,

And by this practise haue commenst a warre,—

Oh cursed race of men that traficque guile,

And, in the end, themselues and kings beguile!

A-shamde to looke vpon my prince againe,

35

A-shamde of my suggestions and aduise,

A-shamde of life, a-shamde that I haue erde,

Ile hide my-selfe, expecting for my shame!

Thus God doth worke with those that purchase⁴ fame

By flattery, and make their prince their game.⁵

40

Exeunt.

¹ D. *emends to are.*

³ G. *subtle.*

² Cr. *a man; corr. by D.*

⁴ *So G.; Cr. purchase.*

⁵ D. *prints gain, and suggests game; according to my copyist, game is the reading of Cr., but G. says Cr. has gaine, and he prefers that reading.*

[Act fifth. Scene third.]

[*The English camp.*]*Enter the KING OF ENGLAND, LORD PERCEY, SAMLES, and others.*

ARIUS.¹ Thus farre, the² English peeres, haue we displayde

Our wauing ensignes with a happy warre ;
 Thus neerely hath our furious rage reuengde
 My daughters death vpon the traiterous Scot ;
 And now before Dambar our campe is pitcht, 5
 Which if it yeeld not to our compromise,³
 The plough⁴ shall furrow where the pallace stood,
 And furie shall enuy⁵ so high a power
 That mercie shall bee bannisht⁶ from our swords.

DOUG. What seekes the English king? 10

ARIUS. Scot, open those gates, and let me enter in ;
 Submit thy-selfe and thine vnto my grace,
 Or I will put each mothers sonne to death,
 And lay this cittie leuell with the ground.

DOUG. For what offence, for what default of ours 15
 Art thou incenst so sore against our state?
 Can generous hearts in nature bee so sterne
 To pray on those that neuer did offend?
 What tho⁷ the lyon, king of brutish race,
 Through outrage sinne, shall lambes be therefore slaine? 20
 Or is it lawfull that the humble die
 Because the mightie do gainsay the right?
 O English king, thou bearest in thy crest⁸
 The king of beasts, that harmes not yeelding ones,

¹ *In this scene the speeches marked ARIUS belong to the KING OF ENGLAND; see Notes, vol. III, and cf. above, p. 365, n. 2.*

² *D. changes to then; G. to ye; cf. above, p. 396, n. 4.*

³ *Misprinted compromise in Cr.*

⁴ *Cr. place; emend. by D.*

⁷ *G. though.*

⁵ *D. suggests, and G. accepts, enjoy, which is probably right.*

⁶ *G. banisht,*

⁸ *Cr. brest; emend. by D.*

The roseall crosse is spred within thy field, 25
 A signe of peace, not of reuenging warre :
 Be gracious then vnto this little towne,
 And, tho we haue withstood thee for a while
 To shew¹ alleageance to our liefest liege,
 Yet, since wee know no hope of any helpe, 30
 Take vs to mercie, for wee yeeld our-selues.

ARI. What, shall I enter then, and be your lord?

DOUG. We will submit vs to the English king.

They descend downe, open the gates, and humble them.

ARIUS. Now life and death dependeth on my sword :
 This hand now reard, my Douglas, if I list,² 35
 Could part thy head and shoulders both in twaine ;
 But, since I see thee wise and olde in yeares,
 True to thy king, and faithfull in his warres,
 Liue thou and thine. Dambar is too too small,
 To giue an entrance to the English king. 40
 I, eaglelike, disdain these little foules,
 And looke on none but those that dare resist.
 Enter your towne as those that liue by me.
 For others, that resist, — kill, forrage, spoyle!
 Mine English souldiers, as you loue your king, 45
 Reuenge his daughters death, and do me right.

Exeunt.

[Act fifth. Scene fourth.]³

[Near the Scottish camp.]

Enter the LAWYER, the MERCHANT, and the DIUINE.

LAWYER. My friends, what thinke you of this present
 state?

Were euer seene such changes in a time?

¹ G. show.

² Cr. G. D. lift.

³ *I have assigned this to the place indicated at the end. But it has no connection with the play nor any special appropriateness to it; it is merely a débat, foisted into the play — perhaps by Greene himself.*

The manners and the fashions of this age
 Are, like the ermine-skinne, so full of spots
 As sooner ¹ may the Moore bee washed white 5
 Then these corruptions bannisht from this realme.

MERCH. What sees Mas Lawyer in this state amisse?

LAW. A wresting power that makes a nose of wax
 Of grounded lawe, a damde and subtile drift
 In all estates to clime by others losse, 10
 An eager thrift ² of wealth, forgetting trueth.
 Might I ascend vnto the highest states,
 And by discent discouer euery crime,
 My friends, I should lament, and you would greeue,
 To see the haplesse ruines of this realme. 15

DIU. O Lawyer, thou haste curious eyes to prie
 Into the secret³ maimes of their estate ;
 But, if thy vaile of error were vnmaskt,
 Thy-selfe should see your sect do maim her most.
 Are you not those that should maintaine the peace, 20
 Yet onely are the patrones of our strife?
 If your profession haue his ground and spring
 First from the lawes of God, then countriees ⁴ right,
 Not any-waies inuerting natures power,
 Why thriue you by contentions? Why deuise you 25
 Clawes and subtile reasons to except?
 Our state was first, before you grew so great,
 A lanterne to the world for vnite ; ⁵
 Now they that are befriended and are rich,
 Op-presse ⁶ the poore. Come Homer without quoine, 30
 He is not heard. What shall we terme this drift, —
 To say the poore mans cause is good and iust,
 And yet the rich man gaines the best in lawe?
 It is your guise — the more the world laments! —
 To quoine prouisoos to beguile your lawes ; 35

¹ Cr. As soone; *emend.* by D. ⁴ G. countries.

² D. *emends* to thirst, which is probably right; G. *prints* thrift, as reading of Cr.

⁵ G. vnitie.

³ Cr. *misprints* secrets.

⁶ Cr. Or presse; *corr.* by D.

To make a gay pretext of due proceeding,
 When you delay your common-pleas for yeares.
 Mark what these dealings lately here haue wrought :
 The craftie men haue purchaste greatmens¹ lands ;
 They powle, they pinch, their tennants are vndone. 40
 If these complaine, by you they are vndone ;
 You fleese them of their quoine, their children beg,
 And many want, because you may bee rich.
 This scarre is mightie, Maister Lawyer !
 Now war² hath gotten head within this land, 45
 Marke but the guise : the poore man that is wrongd
 Is readie to rebell ; hee spoyles, he pilles, —
 We need no foes to forrage that wee haue ;
 The lawe, say they, in peace consumed vs,
 And now in warre wee³ will consume the lawe. 50
 Looke to this mischiefe, lawyers ! Conscience knowes
 You liue amisse : amend it, least you end !

LAW. Good Lord, that these⁴ diuines should see so farre
 In others faults, without amending theirs !
 Sir, sir, the generall defaults in state — 55
 If you would read before you did correct —
 Are by a hidden working from aboue
 By their successiue changes still remoued.⁵
 Were not the lawe by contraries maintaine,
 How could the trueth from falsehood be discernde? 60
 Did wee not tast⁶ the bitternesse of warre,
 How could wee knowe the sweet effects of peace?
 Did wee not feele the nipping winter frostes,
 How should we know the sweetness of the spring?
 Should all things still remaine in one estate, 65
 Should not in greatest arts some scarres be found?
 Were all vpright, vn-changd,⁷ what world were this?
 A chaos, made of quiet, yet no world,

¹ G. great mens.

⁴ Cr. their ; *emend. by D.*

² Cr. man ; *emend. by D.*

⁵ Cr. remainde ; *emend. by D.*

³ G. we.

⁶ G. taste.

⁷ Cr. and changd ; D. *emends* and *to nor.*

Because the parts thereof did still accord.
 This matter craues a variance not a speech.¹ 70
 But, sir Diuine, to you : looke on your maimes,
 Diuisions, sects, your simonies² and bribes,
 Your cloaking with the great for feare to fall, —
 You shall perceiue you are the cause of all.
 Did each man know there were a storme at hand, 75
 Who would not cloath him well to shun the wet?
 Did prince and peere, the lawyer and the least,
 Know what were sinne, without a partiall glose,
 Wee'd³ need no long discouery⁴ then of crimes,
 For each would mend, aduis'de by holy men. 80
 Thus I⁵ but slightly shadow out your sinnes ;
 But, if they were depainted out of⁶ life,
 Alasse, wee both had wounds inough to heale!
 MERCH. None of you both, I see, but are in fault ;
 Thus simple men, as I, do swallow flies. 85
 This graue diuine can tell vs what to do,
 But wee may say : “ Phisitian⁷ mend thy-selfe ; ”
 This lawyer hath a pregnant wit to talke,
 But all are words, I see no deeds of woorth.
 LAW. Good Merchant, lay your fingers on your mouth ; 90
 Be not a blab, for feare you bite your-selfe.
 What should I terme your state but euen the way
 To euery ruine in this common-weale?
 You bring vs in the meanes of all excesse,
 You rate it and retale⁸ it as you please, 95
 You swear, forswear, and all, to compasse wealth ;
 Your mony is your God, your hoord your heauen.
 You are the groundworke of contention :
 First, heedlesse youth by you is ouerreacht,
 Wee are corrupted by your many crownes ; 100
 The gentlemen whose titles you haue bought

¹ *Qy.* peace.⁵ *Supplied by D.*⁶ *D. G. for.*² *Cr. summonies ; corr. silently by D.*⁷ *G. Physitian.*³ *Cr. Wee ; emend. by D.*⁸ *Cr. retalde ; corr. by D.*⁴ *D. changes to discoursing ; G. rightly defends the text.*

Loose all their fathers toyle within a day,
 Whilst Hob, your sonne, and Sib, your nutbrowne childe,
 Are gentle-folkes, and gentles are beguilde.
 This makes so many noble maides¹ to stray, 105
 And take sinister courses in the state.

Enter a SCOUT.

SCOUT. My friends, begone and if you loue your liues!
 The King of England marcheth heere at hand;
 Enter the campe, for feare you bee surprisde.

DIUINE. Thankes, gentle scout. God mend that is amisse, 110
 And place true zeale whereas corruption is! *Exeunt.*

[Act fifth. Scene fifth.]

[*The house of SIR CUTHBERT ANDERSON.*]

Enter DOROTHEA, LADIE ANDERSON and NANO.

DORO. What newes in court, Nano? let vs know it.

NANO. If so please my lord, I straight will shew it:
 The English king hath all the borders spoyld,
 Hath taken Morton prisoner, and hath slaine
 Seuē thousand Scottish lords² not farre from Tweade.³ 5

DORO. A wofull murther, and a bloodie deed!

NANO. The king,⁴ our liege, hath sought by many meanes
 For to appease his enemie by prayers.
 Nought will preuaile vnlesse hee can restore
 Faire Dorothea, long supposed dead. 10
 To this intent he hath proclaimed late
 That who-so-euer returne the queene to court
 Shall haue a thousand markes for his reward.

L. AND. He loues her then, I see, altho inforst,
 That would bestow such gifts for to regaine her. 15
 Why sit you sad, good sir? Be not dismaide.

¹ D. *emends to minds.*

² D. G. *accept Collier's emendation, lads.*

³ Cr. Twearde; D. G. Tweed, *without note.*

⁴ Cr. Thinking; *corr. by D.*

NA. Ile lay my life this man would be a maide.

DOR. [*to NANO*] Faine would I shewe my-selfe, and change
my tire.

AND. Whereon diuine you, sir?

NA. Vppon desire.

Madam marke but my skill : Ile lay my life 20

My maister here will prooue a married wife.

DORO. [*to NANO*] Wilt thou bewray me, Nano?

NANO. Madam, no :

You are a man, and like a man you goe ;

But I, that am in speculation seene,

Know you would change your state to be a queen. 25

DOR. Thou art not, dwarffe,¹ to learne thy mistresse mind :

Faine would I with ² thy-selfe disclose my kind,

But yet I blush.

NA. What? blush you, madam, than,

To be your-selfe, who are a fayned man?

Let me alone.³ 30

LA. AND. Deceitfull beautie, hast thou scornd me so?

NANO. Nay, muse not, madam,⁴ for she tels you true.

LA. AND. Beautie bred loue, and loue hath bred my
shame.

N. And womens faces work more wrongs then these.

Take comfort, madam, to cure your⁵ disease. 35

And yet [*s*]he loues a man as well as you,

Onely this difference : she ⁶ cannot fancie too.⁷

LA. AN. Blush, greeue and die, in thine insaciat lust!

DO. Nay, liue, and ioy that thou hast won a friend

That loues thee as his life, by good⁸ desert. 40

LA. AND. I ioy, my lord, more then my tongue can tell.

Although not as I desir'd,⁹ I loue you well ;

But modestie, that neuer blusht before,

¹ G. dwarfe.

² D. *suggests* wish.

³ Lines 45-77 (?) *should follow this ; the confusion was caused by* Let
me alone. ⁴ Cr. maiden ; *emend. by* D. ⁵ Cr. our ; *emend. by* D.

⁶ Cr. she ; D. G. *change to* he. ⁷ G. two. ⁸ Cr. god ; D. good.

⁹ *The verse hobbles ; perhaps read* Though for Although (*with* D. G.)
or wish'd for desir'd.

Discouer my false heart! I say no more.
Let me alone.

DORO. Good Nano, stay a while.¹ 45
Were I not sad, how kindlie could I smile
To see how faine I am to leaue this weede;
And yet I faint to shewe my-selfe indeede.
But danger hates delay; I will be bold:
Faire ladie, I am not, [as you]² suppose, 50
A man, but euen that queene³—more haplesse I!—
Whom Scottish king appointed hath⁴ to die;
I am the haplesse princesse for whose right
These kings in bloudie warres reuenge dispight;
I am that Dorothea whom they seeke, 55
Yours bounden for your kindnesse and releefe.
And, since you are the meanes that saue my life,
Your-selfe and I will to the camp repaire,
Whereas your husband shal enioy reward,
And bring me to his Highnesse once againe. 60

AN. Pardon, most gracious princesse, if you please,
My rude discourse and homelie entertaine;
And, if my words may sauour any worth,
Vouchsafe my counsaile in this waightie cause:
Since that our liege hath so vnkindly dealt, 65
Giue him no trust, returne vnto your syre,
There may you safelie liue in spight of him,

DORO. Ah, ladie, so wold worldly counsell work;
But constancie, obedience and my loue,
In that my husband is my lord and chiefe, 70
These call me to compassion of his state.⁵
Disswade me not, for vertue will not change.

AN. What woonderous constancie is this I heare?
If English dames their husbands loue so deer,
I feare me in the world they haue no peere. 75

NA. Come, princes, wend, and let vs change your weede,
I long to see you now a queene indeede. *Exeunt.*

¹ *This confirms* p. 407, n. 3. ² *Supplied by D.* ³ Cr. queene; G. queene.

⁴ G. *changes to had.*

⁵ Cr. estate; *emend. by D.*

[Act fifth. Scene sixth.]

[*The Scottish camp.*]*Enter the KING OF SCOTS, the ENGLISH HERALD & LORDS.*

K. OF S. He would haue parly, lords. Herald, say he shall.

And get thee gone. Goe, leaue me to my-selfe.

[*Exeunt HERALD and LORDS.*]¹

Twixt loue and feare continuall is² the warres:

The one assures me of my Idaes loue,

The other moues me for my murthred queene. 5

Thus finde I greefe of that whereon I ioy,

And doubt in greatest hope, and death in weale.

Ah lasse!³ what hell may be compared with mine,

Since in extreames my comforts do consist?

Warre then will cease, when dead ones are reuiued! 10

Some then will yeelde, when I am dead for hope!

Who doth disturbe me? Andrew! *ANDREW enter, with SLIPPER.*

ANDR.

I, my liege.

K. OF S. What newes?

ANDR. I thinke my mouth was made at first

To tell these tragique tales, my liefest lord.

K. OF S. What, is Ateukin dead? tell me the worst! 15

ANDR. No; but your Ida —⁴ shall I tell him all?—

Is married late — ah, shall I say to whom?

My maister sad — for-why he shames the court —

Is fled away, — ah, most vnhappy flight!

Onelie my-selfe, — ah, who can loue you more? — 20

To shew my dutie, — dutie past beliefe! —

Am come vnto your Grace, oh gracious liege,

To let you know — oh, would it weare not thus! —

¹ *No stage-direction in Cr.; D. has Exit Herald — Lords retire, which G. repeats without brackets, as if it were in Cr.*

² *D. changes to are.*

³ *G. Ahlasse.*

⁴ *G. inserts and; for what reason, I know not.*

That loue is vain, and maids soone lost and wonne.

K. OF S. How haue the partial heauens then dealt with
me, 25
Boading my weale, for to abase my power !
Alas, what thronging thoughts do me oppresse !
Iniurious loue is partiall in my right,
And flattering tongues by whom I was misled
Haue laid a snare to spoyle my state and me. 30
Methinkes I heare my Dorotheas goast
Howling reuenge for my accursed hate ;
The gosts¹ of those my subiects that are slaine
Pursue me, crying out, " Woe, woe, to lust !"
The foe pursues me at my pallace doore ; 35
He breakes my rest and spoyles me in my camp.
Ah, flattering broode of sicophants, my foes,
First shall my dire reuenge begin on you !
I will reward thee, Andrew.

SLIP. Nay, sir, if you be in your deeds of charitie, re- 40
member me : I rubd M. Ateukins horse heeles, when he rid
to the medowes.²

K. OF S. And thou shalt haue thy recompence³ for that. —
Lords, beare them to the prison ; chaine them fast,
Vntil we take some order for their deathes. 45

[Enter LORDS and seize them.]

AND. If so your Grace in such sort giue rewards,
Let me haue nought ; I am content to wait.

SLIP. Then I pray, sir, giue me all ; I am as ready for a
reward as an oyster for a fresh tide ; spare not me, sir.

K. OF S. Then hang them both as traitors to the king. 50

SLIP. The case is altered, sir, Ile none of your gifts.
What, I take a reward at your hands, maister ? Faith, sir,
no ! I am a man of a better conscience.

K. OF S. Why dallie you ? go draw them hence away.

SLIP. Why, alas, sir, I wil⁴ go away. I thanke you, gentle 55

¹ Cr. gifts ; *corr. by D.*

² *Qy.* widowes.

³ G. recompense.

⁴ G. will.

friends; I pray you spare your pains, I will not trouble his
Honors maistership, Ile run away.

*Enter OBERON,¹ and ANTIQUES, and carrie away the CLOWNE; he makes
pots² and sports and scornes.*

Why stay you? Moue me not; let search be made
For vile Ateukin; who-so findes him out
Shall haue fwe hundreth markes for his reward. 65
Away with them, lords! Troupes, about³ my tent!
Let all our souldiers stand in battaile ray,
For, lo! the English to their parley come.

*March ouer brauelie: first, the English hoste, the sword caried before the
KING by PERCY; the Scottish on the other side,⁴ with all their pompe
brauelie.*

K. OF S. What seekes the King of England in this land?
K. OF ENG. False traiterous Scot, I come for to reuenge 65
My daughters death: I come to spoyle thy wealth,
Since thou hast spoyled me of my marriage ioy;
I come to heape thy land with carkasses,
That this thy thriftie⁵ soyle, choakt vp with blood,
May thunder forth reuenge vpon thy head; 70
I come to quit thy louesse⁶ loue with death.
In briefe, no meanes of peace shall ere be found,
Except I haue my daughter or thy head.

K. OF S. My head, proud king? Abase thy prancking
plumes!⁷
So striuing⁸ fondly, maiest thou catch thy graue. 75
But, if true iudgement do direct thy course,

¹ Cr. ADAM; corr. by D. *If any actor of this date named Adam were known, one would be inclined to assign the part of OBERON to him, as G. does.* D. G. transfer this stage-direction to l. 61.

² D. conjectures and reads mops, having previously conjectured pouts; but see Nares, s. v. ⁴ Cr. otherside.

³ Cr. Away with the Lords troupes about; D. emends to Away with them! Lords, troop about. ⁵ D. thirsty; G. thirtie (= thirsty).

⁶ D. accepts Collier's emendation lawless; G. rightly defends the text.

⁷ Cr. plaines; emend. by D.

⁸ In G. the u is inverted.

These lawfull reasons should deuide ¹ the warre :
 Faith, not by my consent thy daughter dyed.

K. OF E. Thou liest, false Scot ! thy agents haue confest
 it !

These are but fond delays, thou canst not thinke 80
 A meanes to ² reconcile me for thy friend ;
 I haue thy parasites confession pend.

What then canst thou alleage in thy excuse?

K. OF S. I will repay the raunsome for her bloud.

K. OF E. What, thinkst thou, catiue, I wil sel my child? 85
 No ; if thou be a prince and man-at-armes,
 In singule combat come and trie thy right ;
 Else will I prooue thee recreant to thy face !

K. OF S. I tooke ³ no combat, false iniurious king !
 But, since thou needlesse art inclinde to warre, 90
 Do what thou darest : we are in open field ;
 Arming thy ⁴ battailes I wil ⁵ fight with thee.

K. OF E. Agreed. Now trumpets sound a dreadfull
 charge !

Fight for your princesse, ⁶ braue English-men !

[K. OF SCOTS.] ⁷ Now for your lands, your children and
 your wiues, 95

My Scottish peeres, and lastly for your king !

*Alarum sounded ; both the battailes offer to meet ; &c., as the kings are
 ioyning battaile, enter SIR CUTBER[T] and⁸ LADY CUTBERT, with the
 queene, DOROTHEA, richly attired, [and NANO].*

S. CUT. Stay, princes, wage not warre ! A priuie grudge
 Twixt such as you, most high in maiestie,

¹ D. *first suggested* decide, later This lawful reason should divert ; but
 deuide may be right. ² Cr. for to ; corr. by D.

³ So Cr. ; D. *emends* to brook ; seeke *seems* about as likely.

⁴ So Cr. ; D. *emends* to Arming my ; Among thy *seems possible*.

⁵ G. will.

⁶ D. *inserts* my, for metrical reasons ; various other monosyllables are
 possible, if any is needed.

⁷ Not in Cr. ; supplied by D. ; G.'s statement that D. "gives these two
 lines to the KING OF ENGLAND" is erroneous.

⁸ Cr. to his ; corr. by D. in his first edition ; G. and the.

Afflicts both nocent and the innocent.
 How many swordes, deere princes, see I drawne ! 100
 The friend against his friend, a deadly friend ;¹
 A desperate diuision in those lands
 Which if they ioyne in one commaund the world.
 Oh, stay! With reason mittigate your rage,
 And let an old man, humbled on his knees, 105
 Intreat a boone, good princes, of you both.

K. OF EN. I condescend, for-why thy reuerend years
 Import some newes of truth and consequence ;

² I am content, for Anderson I know.

K. OF S. Thou art my subiect and doest ³ meane me good. 110

S. CUT. AND. But by your gracious⁴ fauours grant me this :
 To sweare vpon your sword⁵ to do me right.

K. OF ENG. See, by my sword, and by a princes faith,
 In euery lawfull sort I am thine owne!

K. OF S. And by my scepter and the Scottish crowne, 115
 I am resolu'd to grant thee thy request!

CUTB. I see you trust me, princes, who repose
 The waight of such a warre vpon my will.
 Now marke my sute: a tender Lyons whelp,
 This other day came stragling in the woods, 120
 Attended by a young and tender hinde,
 In courage hautie,⁶ yet tyred like a lambe.
 The prince of beasts had left this young in keepe,
 To foster vp as louemate and compeere
 Vnto the Lyons mate, a⁷ naighbour friend. 125
 This stately guide, seduced by the fox,
 Sent forth an eger wolfe bred vp in France,
 That gript the tender whelp, and wounded it.
 By chance as I was hunting in the woods,

¹ D. *suggests and reads* fiend; field or feud is quite as probable; but the text is intelligible, and is retained by G.

² D. G. *transfer this line to the* KING OF SCOTS.

³ G. doost. ⁵ D. sword[s].

⁴ G. gracious. ⁷ D. *suggests and*.

⁶ D. *changes to* haught, for metre; G. *keeps* hautie, but prints tyr'd.

I heard the moane the hinde made for the whelpe ; 130
 I tooke them both, and brought them to my house ;
 With charie care I haue recurde the one ;
 And, since I know the lyons are at strife
 About the losse and dammage of the young,
 I bring her home ; make claime to her who list ! 135

Hee discovereth her.

DORO. I am the whelpe, bred by this lyon vp,
 This royall English king, my happy sire ;
 Poore Nano is the hinde that tended me.
 My father, Scottish king, gaue me to thee,
 A haplesse wife ; thou, quite misled by youth, 140
 Haste sought sinister loues and forraine ioyes.
 The fox Ateukin, cursed parasite,
 Incenst your Grace to send the wolfe abroad,
 The French-borne Iaques, for to end my daies.
 Hee, traiterous man, pursued me in the woods, 145
 And left mee wounded, where this noble knight
 Both rescued me and mine, and sau'd my life.
 Now keep thy promise ; Dorothea liues :
 Giue Anderson his due and iust reward ;
 And, since you kings your warres began by me, 150
 Since I am safe, returne, — surcease your fight.

K. OF S. Durst I presume to looke vpon those eies
 Which I haue tired with a world of woes,
 Or did I thinke submission were ynough,
 Or sighes might make an entrance to my soule, 155
 You heauens, you know how willing I wold weep !
 You heauens can tell how glad I would submit !
 You heauens can say how firmly I would sigh !

Do. Shame me not, prince, companion in thy bed.
 Youth hath misled ; tut, but a little fault ! 160
 Tis kingly to amend what is amisse.
 Might I with wise as many paines as these
 Vnite our hearts, then should my wedded lord
 See how inessaunt labours I would take.

My gracious father, gouerne your affects, 165
 Giue me that hand that oft hath blest this head,
 And claspe thine armes, that haue embraced this,¹
 About the shoulders of my wedded spouse.

Ah, mightie prince, this king and I am one ;
 Spoyle thou his subiects, thou despoylest me ; 170
 Touch thou his brest, thou doest attaint this heart :
 Oh, bee my father then in louing him !

K. OF ENG. Thou prouident kinde mother of increase,
 Thou must preuaile, ah, Nature, thou must rule !
 Holde, daughter, ioyne my hand and his in one, 175
 I will embrace him for to fauour thee :
 I call him friend, and take him for my sonne.

DOR. Ah, royall husband, see what God hath wrought :
 Thy foe is now thy friend ! Good men-at-armes,
 Do you the like ; these nations if they ioyne, 180
 What monarch with his liegemen in this world
 Dare but encounter you in open fielde ?

K. OF S. Al wisdom, ioynde with godly pietie !
 Thou, English king, pardon my former youth ;
 And pardon, courteous queen, my great misdeed : 185
 And, for assurance of mine after-life,
 I take religious voves before my God
 To honour thee for father,² her for wife.

SIR CUTHB.³ But yet my boones, good princes, are not past :
 First, English king, I humbly do request 190
 That by your meanes our princesse may vnite
 Her loue vnto mine alder-truest⁴ loue,
 Now you will loue, maintaine and helpe them both.

K. OF ENG. Good Anderson, I graunt thee thy request.

SIR CUTHB.³ But you, my prince, must yelde me mickle
 more :

195

You know your nobles are your chiefest staies,⁵
 And long time haue been bannisht from your court ;

¹ D. G. *read* embrac'd this [neck]. ³ Cr. L. AND. ; *emend.* by D.

² Cr. fauour ; *emend.* by D.

⁴ G. aldertruest.

⁵ Cr. D. (1st ed.) states ; D. (2d ed.), G. staies, *without note.*

Embrace and reconcile them to your-selfe, —
 They are your hands, whereby you ought to worke.
 As for Ateukin and his lewde compeeres, 200
 That sooth'd you in your sinnes and youthly pompe,
 Exile, torment and punish such as they,
 For greater vipers neuer may be found
 Within a state then such aspiring heads,
 That reck not how they clime, so that they clime. 205

K. OF S. Guid knight, I graunt thy sute: first, I submit
 And humble¹ craue a pardon of your Grace;
 Next, courteous queene, I pray thee by thy loues,
 Forgiue mine errors past, and pardon mee;
 My lords and princes, if I haue misdone, — 210
 As I haue wrongd indeed both you and yours, —
 Heereafter, trust me, you are deare to me;
 As for Auteukin, who-so findes the man,
 Let him haue martiall lawe and straight be hangd,
 As all his vaine abettors² now are dead.³ 215
 And Anderson our treasurer shall pay
 Three thousand markes for friendly recompence.

NANO.⁴ But princes, whilst you friend it thus in one,
 Me thinks of friendship Nano shall haue none.

DORO. What would my dwarfe that I will not bestow? 220

NANO. My boone, faire queene, is this: that you would
 go;

Altho my bodie is but small and neate,
 My stomacke⁵ after toyle requireth meate.
 An easie sute, dread princes; will you wend?

K. OF S. Art thou a pigmey borne, my prettie frend? 225

NANO. Not so, great king, but Nature, when she framde
 me,

Was scant of earth, and Nano therefore namde me;
 And, when she sawe my bodie was so small,
 She gaue me wit to make it big withall.

¹ D. G. humble[y].

² Cr. arbetters; *corr. by D.*

³ Cr. diuided; *corr. by D.*

⁴ Cr. L. ANDR.; *emend. by D.*

⁵ G. stomache.

Melody + successful use of verse.

Fascination about the verse.

Story found in II Samuel, 11-19.

No important departure from story
in whole play.

More of web than most plays we
have had. Other characters come
into play.

Certain unity of purpose in
plot, in first half. Second half
somewhat departs from it,
but can be brought under
plot. He accedes to demands
of soldiers to make a new
start, as it were.

Absalom, favorite son of David
starts revolt. Led by ambition.

Beautiful hair, which
proves his undoing.

Chief soldier, Joab. At
moment of David's conquering
news comes of Absalom.

More plot of cause + effect

than in preceding play.

THE
LOVE OF KING

DAVID AND FAIR

BETHSABE

With the Tragedie of Abfalon.

As it hath ben diuers times plaied on the ftage.

Written by George Peele.

Vignette.

LONDON,
Printed by Adam Iflip.

1599.

Printed from a copy of the first edition, in the Boston Public Library. This edition, printed by Islip, is indicated in the footnotes by Isl.; all important variants of the editions of Hawkins (Haw.), Dyce (D.); and Bullen (B.) are also recorded. The titlepage is not a facsimile.

[DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.]

DAVID, *King of Israel.*
ABSOLON }
AMMON } *sons of David.*
ADONIA }
CHILEAB }
SALOMON }
HANON, *King of Ammon.*
MACHAAS, *King of Gath.*
IOAB } *David's captains.*
ABISAY }
AMASA, *Absolon's captain.*
VRIAS, *husband of Bethsabe.*
CUSAY } *friends of David.*
ITHAY }
ACHITOPHEL, *Counsellor of Absolon.*
IONADAB, *friend of Ammon.*
NATHAN, *a prophet.*
SADOC, *High-priest.*
AHIMAAS, *his son.*
ABIATHAR, *a priest.*
IONATHAN, *his son.*
SEMEI, *enemy of David.*
IETHRAY, *servant of Ammon.*
BETHSABE, *wife of Vrias.*
THAMAR, *sister of Absolon.*
A widow of Thecoa.
A maid-servant of Bethsabe.

Messengers, Soldiers, Shepherds, Attendants, Concubines of David, Chorus, etc.

SCENE: *Israel; and Ammon.*]

THE LOUE OF DAUID AND FAIRE BER-
SABE,¹ WITH THE TRAGEDIE OF
ABSOLON.

Prologue.

Of Israels sweetest singer now I sing,
His holy style and happie victories,
Whose muse was dipt in that inspiring deaw
Arch-angels stilled from the breath of loue,
Decking her temples with the glorious flowers 5
Heauens rained on tops of Syon and Mount Synai.
Vpon the bosome of his yuorie lute
The cherubins and angels laid their brests;
And, when his consecrated fingers strooke
The golden wijers of his rauishing harpe, 10
He gaue alarum to the host of heauen,
That, wing'd with lightning, brake the clouds, and cast
Their christall armor at his conquering feet.

¹ *In the page-headings the alternation of the spellings Bethsabe and Bersabe is regular: this line is at the top of sign. B r^o; the heading of B v^o and B ii r^o has Bethsabe, B ii v^o and B iii r^o have Bersabe; in other words, the inside of each sheet has Bethsabe, and the outside Bersabe; this holds true throughout sheet G; on sheet H, however, the inside headings have Bersabe, and the outside Bethsabe; of sheet I there is only one leaf, pp. I r^o and I v^o, both headings having Bersabe. The explanation is, perhaps, that the page-headings were not put in until the pages were arranged for the forms, and the insertion of them was then entrusted to two different persons. In the hasty examination I was able to make, I could find no evidence of two printing establishments. In the text the spelling Bersabe appears only on pp. 441 ff., 478. In connection with the change at the beginning of sheet H, see below, p. 476, n. 1.*

Of this sweet poet, Ioues musition,
 And of his¹ beauteous sonne I prease to sing. 15
 Then helpe, deuine Adonay, to conduct
 Vpon the wings of my well-tempered verse
 The hearers minds about the towers of heauen,
 And guide them so in this thrice-haughty flight
 Their mounting feathers scorch not with the fire 20
 That none can temper but thy holy hand.
 To thee for succour flies my feeble muse,
 And at thy feet her yron pen doth vse.

[DAVID AND BETHSABE.]

[Act I. Scene I.]²

[Jerusalem.]

*He³ drawes a curtaine and discovers BETHSABE, with her MAID, bathing
 ouer a spring; she sings, and DAVID sits aboue, vewing her.*

THE SONG:

Hot sunne, coole fire, temperd with sweet aire,
 Black shade, fair nurse, shadow my white haire!
 Shine sun, burne fire, breathe, aire, and ease mee!
 Black shade, fair nurse, shroud me and please me!
 Shadow, my sweet nurse, keep me from burning, 5
 Make not my glad cause cause of my mourning!
 Let not my beauties fire
 Enflame vnstaid desire,
 Nor pierce any bright eye
 That wandreth lightly! 10

¹ Isl. *misprints bis*.

² The CHORUS and the express statements of the author divide the play into three acts (see pp. 440, 475).

³ That is, the Prologue, who, of course, goes off the stage immediately. In Isl. this begins B v^o, but there is no heading except the regular page-heading, and no indication of a division between the prologue and the play.

BETHSABE. Come, gentle Zephire, trickt with those per-
fumes

That erst in Eden sweetned Adams loue,
And stroke my bosome with thy¹ silken fan.
This shade, sun-proofe, is yet no proofe for thee :
Thy body, smoother then this wauellesse spring 15
And purer then the substance of the same,
Can creepe through that his launces cannot pierse.
Thou, and thy sister, soft and sacred Aire,
Goddesse of life and gouernesse of health,
Keepes euery fountaine fresh and arbor sweet. 20
No brasen gate her passage can repulse,
Nor bushly² thicket bar thy subtle breath.
Then decke thee with thy loose delightsome robes,
And on thy wings bring delicate perfumes,
To play the wantons with vs through the leaues ! 25

DA. What tunes, what words, what looks, what wonders
pierce

My soule, incensed with a suddain fire?
What tree, what shade, what spring, what paradise
Enioyes the beautie of so faire a dame?
Faire Eua, plac'd in perfect happinesse, 30
Lending her praise-notes to the liberall heauens,
Strooke with the accents of arch-angels tunes,
Wrought not more pleasure to her husbands thoughts
Then this faire womans words and notes to mine.
May that sweet plaine that beares her pleasant weight 35
Be still enameld with discoloured flowers ;
That precious fount beare sand of purest gold ;
And, for the peble, let the siluer streames
That pierce earths bowels to mainteine the sorce
Play vpon rubies, sapphires, chrisolites ; 40
The brims let be imbrac'd with golden curls
Of mosse that sleepes with sound the waters make
For ioy to feed the fount with their recourse ;

¹ Isl. the ; *emend.* by D.

² Haw. *emends* to bushy ; D. B. *follow him*, D. *proposing also busky*.

Let all the grasse that beautifies her bower
 Beare manna euery morne in-steed of dew, 45
 Or let the dew be sweeter far then that
 That hangs, like chaines of pearle, on Hermon hill,
 Or balme which trickled from old Arons beard!—
 Cusay! Come vp, and serue thy lord the king.

Enter CUSAY.

CUS. What seruice doth my lord the king command? 50

DAUID. See, Cusay, see the flower of Israel,
 The fairest daughter that obeies the king
 In all the land the Lord subdued to me!
 Fairer then Isacs loue at the well,
 Brighter then inside-barke of new-hewen cædar, 55
 Sweeter then flames of fine perfumed¹ myrrhe,
 And comelier then the siluer clouds that dance
 On zephires² wings before the King of Heauen!

CUS. Is it not Bethsabe, the Hethites wife,
 Vrias, now at Rabath³ siege with Ioab? 60

DAU. Goe know, and bring her quickly to the king;
 Tell her her graces hath⁴ found grace with him.

CUSAY. I will, my lord.

Exit CUSAY to BETHSABE.

DAUID. Bright Bethsabe shall wash, in Dauids bower,
 In water mix'd with purest almond-flower, 65
 And bath her beautie in the milke of kids.
 Bright Bethsabe giues earth⁵ to my desires,
 Verdure to earth, and to that verdure flowers,

¹ D. *points out that England's Parnassus (1600) has the attractive reading fire-perfumed.*

² D. *points out that in England's Parnassus the reading is Zephyrus.*

³ D. Rabbah, *stating correctly that in the early part of the play the name is spelled Rabath; B. follows D., but implies that Rabath is the only form found in Isl.; see below, p. 441, n. 5.*

⁴ Haw. B. have, *without note; D. follows Haw., but records Isl.*

⁵ *The reading has been doubted, and birth (by Collier) and heart (by Sprenger) have been proposed; but earth is right; see Notes, vol. III, or Engl. Stud., XVIII, 297.*

To flowers sweet odors, and to odors wings,
That carrie pleasures to the hearts of kings. 70

CUSAY to BETHSABE; *she starting, as something afright.*

CUSAY. Faire Bethsabe, the king of Israell
From forth his princely tower hath seen thee bath,
And thy sweet graces haue found grace with him.
Come then, and kneele vnto him where he stands :
The king is gracious and hath liberall hands. 75

BETH. Ah! what is Bethsabe, to please the king?
Or what is Daudid that he should desire
For fickle beuties sake his seruants wife?

CUSAY. Daudid, thou knowest, faire dame, is wise and iust,
Elected to the heart of Israels God ; 80
Then doe not thou expostulate with him
For any action that contents his soule.

BETHSABE. ¹ My lord the king, elect to Gods owne heart,
Should not his gracious ielousie incense
Whose thoughts are chast. I hate incontinence. 85

CUSAY. Woman, thou wrongst the king *and* doubtst his
honour
Whose truth mainteines the crowne of Israel,
Making him stay that bad me bring thee strait.

BETHSABE. The kings poore handmaid will obey my lord.

CUSAY. Then come, and doe thy dutie to his Grace, 90
And doe what seemeth fauour in his sight.

Exeunt, [and ascend to DAVID].

DAUID. Now comes my loue tripping like a roe,
And brings my longings tangled in her haire.
To ioy her loue Ile build a kingly bower
Seated in hearing of a hundred streames, 95

¹ *The text of this passage has been misunderstood by some commentators and emended by others. Keltie (Brit. Dram., p. 60) thinks his and whose refer to URIAS; Sprenger (Engl. Stud., XVII, 319) thinks whose refers to BETHSABE herself, and suggests that a line has fallen out. D. and B., to judge from their punctuation, saw clearly that his and whose refer to God; but B. records a conjecture of P. A. Daniel's on l. 85: and hate for I hate.*

That, for their homage to her souereine ioies,¹
 Shall, as the serpents fold into their nests
 In oblique turnings, wind their² nimble waues
 About the circles of her curious walkes,
 And with their murmure summon easefull sleepe 100
 To lay his golden scepter on her browes. —
 Open the dores and enterteine my loue ;
 Open, I say ; and, as you open, sing :
 Welcome, faire Bethsabe, King Dauids darling !

Enter CUSAY, with BETHSABE.

DAUID. Welcome, faire Bethsabe, King Dauids darling ! 105
 Thy bones faire couering, erst discouered faire,
 Afar³ mine eyes with all thy beuties pierst.
 As heauens bright eye burnes most when most he climes
 The crooked Zodiake with his fierie sphere
 And shineth furthest from this earthly globe, 110
 So, since thy beautie scorcht my conquerd soule,
 I cald thee neerer for my neerer cure.

BETHSA. Too neere, my lord, was your vnarmed heart,
 When furthest off my haplesse beautie pierc'd.
 And would this drerie⁴ day had turnd to night, 115
 Or that some pitchie cloud had clok'd the sun,
 Before their lights had caus'd my lord to see
 His name disparag'd and my chastitie !

DAUID. My loue, if want of loue haue left thy soule
 A sharper sence of honor then thy king, — 120
 For loue leads princes sometimes from their seats, —
 As erst my heart was hurt, displeasing thee,
 So come and tast thy ease with easing me !

BETH. One medicine cannot heale our different harmes,

¹ D. *suggests*, for ioies, charms or eyes. Sprenger wishes to read sover-
 eign's joy (= BETHSABE). I agree with B. that no emendation is neces-
 sary ; see my note, Engl. Stud., XVIII, 299.

² Isl. the ; *emend.* by Walker.

³ Isl. And all ; B. *suggests* Enthralld ; D. *thinks a line has dropped out*
 a friend of his suggested Have all.

⁴ B. *suggests* garish.

But rather make both ranckle at the bone. 125
 Then let the king be cunning in his cure,
 Least, flattering both, both perish in his hand.

DAUID. Leaue it to me, my deerest Bethsabe,
 Whose skill is conuersant in deeper cures.
 And, Cusay, hast thou to my seruant Ioab, 130
 Commanding him to send Vrias home
 With all the speed can possibly be vsed.

CUSAY. Cusay will fie about the kings desire.

Exeunt.

[Act I. Scene II.]

[*Rabath.*]

Enter IOAB, ABISAY, VRIAS, and others, with drum and ensigne.

IOAB. Courage, ye mightie men of Israel,
 And charge your fatall instruments of war
 Vpon the bosomes¹ of prowde Ammons sonnes,
 That haue disguised your kings ambassadors,
 Cut halfe their beards and halfe their garments off, 5
 In spight of Israel and his daughters sonnes.
 Ye fight the holy battels of Iehoua,
 King Dauids God, and ours and Iacobs God,
 That guides your weapons to their conquering strokes,
 Orders your footsteps and directs your thoughts 10
 To stratagemes that harbor victorie.
 He casts his sacred eiesight from on high
 And sees your foes run seeking for their deaths, —
 Laughing their labours and their hopes to scorne,
 While² twixt your bodies and their blunted swords 15
 He puts on armor of his honors profe,
 And makes their weapons wound the sencelesse winds.

ABIS. Before this citie Rabath we will lie,
 And shoot forth shafts as thicke and dangerous
 As was the haile that Moises mixt with fire 20

¹ Haw. bosom.

² Isl. B. While; Haw. D. Whilst.

And threw with furie round about the fields,
Deuouring Pharoes friends and Egypts fruits.

VRIAS. First, mighty captaines, Ioab and Abisay,
Let vs assault and scale this kingly tower
Where all their conduits and their fountains are ; 25
Then may we easily take the citie too.

IOAB. Well hath Vrias counseld our attempts ;
And, as he spake vs, so assault the tower !
Let Hanon now, the king of Ammons sonnes,¹
Repulse our conquering passage if he dare ! 30

HANON, with KING MACHAAS and others, upon the wals.

HANON. What! would the shepheards dogs of Israel
Snatch from the mighty issue of King Ammon,
The valiant Amonites and haughty Syrians?
Tis not your late successiue victories
Can make vs yeeld or quaile our courages. 35
But, if ye dare assay to scale this tower,
Our angrie swords shall smite ye to the ground,
And venge our losses on your hatefull liues.

IOAB. Hanon, thy father Nahas gaue releefe
To holy Dauid in his haplesse exile, 40
Liued his fixed date, and died in peace ;
But thou, in-steed of reaping his reward,
Hast trod it vnder foot and scornd our king.
Therefore thy daies shall end with violence,
And to our swords thy vitall bloud shall cleaue. 45

MACH. Hence, thou that bearest poor Israels shepherds
hook,
The proud lieutenant of that base-borne king ;
And kep within the compasse of his fold !
For, if ye seeke to feed on Ammons fruits
And stray into the Syrians fruitfull medes, 50
The mastiues of our land shall werry² ye
And pull the weesels from your greedy throtes.

¹ Isl. sonne ; *corr.* by D., because Ammons sonnes = the Ammonites.

² Haw. worry ; D. B. follow Haw., but record Isl.

ABIS. Who can indure these pagans blasphemies?

VRIAS. My soule repines at this disparagement.

IOAB. Assault, ye valiant men of Davids host, 55
And beat these railing dastards from their dores!

Assault; and they win the tower; and IOAB speaks above.

[IOAB.] Thus haue we won the tower; which we will
keepe

Maugre the sonnes of Ammon and of Syria.

Enter CUSAY, beneath.

CUS. Where is Lord Ioab, leader of the host?

IOAB. Here is Lord Ioab, leader of the host. 60

Cusay, come vp, for we haue won the hold.

He comes.

CUSAY. In happie hower, then, is Cusay come.

IOAB. What news, then, brings Lord Cusay from the
king?

CUSAY. His Maiestie commands thee out of hand
To send him home Vrias from the wars 65
For matter of some seruice he should¹ doe.

VRIAS. Tis for no choler hath surpris'd the king,
I hope, Lord Cusay, gainst his seruants truth?

CUSAY. No; rather to prefer Vrias truth.

IOAB. Here, take him with thee, then, and goe in peace. 70

And tell my lord the king that I haue fought

Against the citie Rabath with successe

And skaled where² the royall pallace is,
The conduit-heads and all their sweetest springs.

Then, let him come in person to these wals 75

With all the souldiers he can bring besides,

And take the city as his owne exploit,

Least I surprise it, and the people giue

The glory of the conquest to my name.

¹ Haw. shall.

² B. suggests sealed, where; but the text is correct.

CUS. We will, Lord Ioab ; and great Israels God 80
Blesse in thy hands the battels of our king !

IOAB. Farewel,¹ Vrias ; hast away the king.

VRIAS. As sure as Ioab breaths a victor here,
Vrias will hast him and his owne returne.

Exeunt [CUSAY and VRIAS].

ABISA. Let vs descend, and ope the pallace gate, 85
Taking our souldiors in to keepe the hold.

IOAB. Let vs, Abisay. And, ye sonnes of Iuda,
Be valiant and mainteine your victory! *Exeunt.*

[Act I. Scene III.]

[*Jerusalem : the house of AMMON.*]

AMMON,² IONADAB, IETHRAY, and AMMONS PAGE.³

IONAD. What meanes my lord, the kings beloued son,
That weares vpon his right triumphant arme
The power of Israel for a royall fauor,
That holds vpon the tables of his hands
Banquets of honor and all thoughts content, 5
To suffer pale and grisely abstinence
To sit and feed vpon his fainting cheekes
And sucke away the bloud that cheeres his lookes?

AMMO. Ah ! Ionadab, it is my sisters lookes,
On whose sweet beutie I bestow my bloud, 10
That makes ⁴ me looke so amorously leane.
Her beautie, hauing seasd vpon my heart,
So merely ⁵ consecrate to her content,
Sets now such guard about his vitall bloud
And viewes the passage with such piercing eyes 15
That none can scape to cheare my pining cheekes,
But all is thought too little for her loue.

¹ Isl. Earewel.

² So consistently in Isl. ; D. B. *emend* to AMNON.

³ I am inclined to suggest that IETHRAY and the PAGE go out after l. 8.

⁴ D. B. make, *without note.*

⁵ Isl. merrily ; *corr.* by D.

IONADAB. Then from her heart thy lookes shall be releued,
And thou shalt ioy her as thy soule desires.

AMMON. How can it be, my sweet friend Ionadab, 20
Since Thamar is a virgine and my sister?

IONADAB. Thus it shall be: lie downe vpon thy bed,
Faining thee feuer-sicke and ill at ease;
And, when the king shall come to visit thee,
Desire thy sister Thamar may be sent 25
To dresse some deinties for thy maladie;
Then, when thou hast her solely with thy-selfe,
Enforce some fauour to thy manly loue. —
See, where she comes! intreat her in with thee.

Enter THAMAR.

THAMAR. What aileth Ammon with such sickly lookes 30
To daunt the fauour of his louely face?

AM. Sweet Thamar, sick, *and* wish some wholesome cates
Drest with the cunning of thy daintie hands.

THAM. That hath the king commanded at my hands.
Then, come and rest thee, while I make thee readie 35
Some dainties easefull to thy crased soule.

AM. I goe, sweet sister, eased with thy sight.

Exeunt; restet¹ IONADAB.

ION. Why should a prince whose power may command
Obey the rebell passions of his loue
When they contend but gainst his conscience 40
And may be gouernd or suppress by will?
Now, Ammon, lose those louing knots of bloud
That sokte² the courage from thy kingly heart,
And giue it passage to thy withered cheekes.
Now, Thamar, ripened³ are the holy fruits 45
That grew on plants of thy virginie,
And rotten is thy name in Israel.

¹ Isl. B. restet; Haw. D. restat.

² So Isl.; Haw. soak'd; B. D. suck'd; lokte, *which comes very near fokte, is attractive.*

³ B. *substitutes* rified; but l. 47 *supports* ripened.

Poore Thamar! little did thy louely hands
 Foretell an action of such violence
 As to contend with Ammons lusty armes, 50
 Sinnewd with vigor of his kindlesse loue!
 Faire Thamar, now dishonour hunts thy foot
 And followes thee through euey couert shade,
 Discouering thy shame and nakednesse
 Euen from the valeyes of Iehosophat 55
 Vp to the loftie mounts of Libanon,
 Where cædars, stird with angir of the winds,
 Sounding in stormes the tale of thy disgrace,
 Tremble with furie and with murmure shake
 Earth¹ with their feet and with their heads the heauens, 60
 Beating the clouds into their swiftest racke,
 To beare this wonder round about the world. *Exit.*

AMMON thrusting out THAMAR.

AM. Hence from my bed, whose sight offends my soule
 As doth the parbreake of disgorged beares!
 THAMA. Vnkind, vnprincely and vnmanly Ammon, 65
 To force and then refuse thy sisters loue,
 Adding vnto the fright of thy offence
 The banefull torment of my publisht shame!
 O, doe not this dishonor to thy loue,
 Nor clog thy soule with such increasing sinne! 70
 This second euill far exceeds the first.

AM. Iethray, come thrust this woman from my sight,
 And bolt the dore vpon her if she striue!²

IETHRAY. Go, madame, goe! away! you must be gone;
 My lord hath done with you; I pray, depart! 75

He shuts her out.²

¹ *Misprinted Eearth in Isl.*

² *After ll. 73, 75, D. B. insert Exit, noting the absence of these directions in Isl. I follow Isl., because it seems superfluous to mark an exit which consists in shutting a door,—an action distinctly indicated in Isl. Lines 63–75 are spoken at the stage-door; Thamar is thrust out upon the stage and the door closes. That Ammon disappears at l. 73 is by no means certain; his attitude during ll. 74, 75 forms part of a striking tableau.*

THAM. Whether, alas! ah, whether shall I flie,
 With folded armes and all-amased soule?
 Cast, as was Eua from that glorious soile
 Where al delights sat bating, wingd with thoughts,
 Ready to nestle in her naked breasts, 80
 To bare and barraine vales, with floods made wast,
 To desart woods, and hils with lightning scorcht;
 With death, with shame, with hell, with horror sit;¹
 There will I wander from my fathers face;
 There Absolon,² my brother Absolon, 85
 Sweet Absolon, shall heare his sister mourne;
 There will I lure³ with my windie sighs
 Night-rauens and owles to rend my bloudie side,
 Which with a rusty weapon I will wound
 And make⁴ them passage to my panting heart. 90
 Why talkst thou, wretch, and leau'st the deed vndone?

Enter ABSOLON. [THAMAR continues her lament.]

Rend haire and garments, as thy heart is rent
 With inward furie of a thousand greefes,
 And scatter them by these vnhallowed dores
 To figure Ammons resting⁵ crueltie 95
 And tragicke spoile of Thamars chastitie!

ABS. What causeth Thamar to exclaime so much?

THAM. The cause that Thamar shameth to disclose.

ABSA. Say! I, thy brother, will reuenge that cause.

THAM. Ammon, our fathers son, hath forced me, 100
 And thrust me from him as the scorne of Israel.

ABS. Hath Ammon forced thee? By Dauids hand,
 And by the couenant God hath made with him,
 Ammon shall beare his violence to hell!
 Traitor to heauen, traitor to Dauids throne, 105

¹ B. *suggests and reads rife*; the text seems possible, but, if any emendation must be made, it might be well to read *Where death, etc.*

² This, of course, is the spelling of Isl.; see p. 441, n. 5.

³ Isl. *liue*; *emend. by D.*

⁴ *Misprinted makee in Isl.*

⁵ B. *suggests wresting.*

Traitor to Absolon and Israel !

This fact hath Iacobs ruler seene from heauen ;
 And through a cloud of smoake and tower of fire, —
 As he rides vaunting him vpon the greenes, —
 Shall teare his chariot-wheeles with violent winds, 110
 And throw his body in the bloody sea.

At him the thunder shall discharge his bolt,
 And his faire spouse with bright and fierie wings
 Sit euer burning on his hatefull bones.
 My-selfe, as swift as thunder or his spouse, 115
 Will hunt occasion with a secret hate

Tò worke false Ammon an vngracious end.
 Goe in, my sister ; rest thee in my house ;
 And God, in time, shall take this shame from thee.

THAM. Nor God nor time will doe that good for me. 120

Exit THAMAR ; restat ABSOLON.

Enter DAUID with his train.

DAUID. My Absolon, what makst thou here alone,
 And beares¹ such discontentment in thy browes ?

ABS. Great cause hath Absolon to be displeasd
 And in his heart to shrowd the wounds of wrath.

DAUID. Gainst whom should Absolon be thus displeasd? 125

ABS. Gainst wicked Ammon, thy vngracious sonne,
 My brother and faire Thamars by the king,
 My stepbrother by mother and by kind !
 He hath dishonoured Dauids holinesse,
 And fixt a blot of lightnesse on his throne, 130
 Forcing my sister Thamar, when he faind
 A sicknesse, sprung from root of heinous lust.

DAUID. Hath Ammon brought this euill on my house,
 And suffered sinne to smite his fathers bones ?
 Smite, Dauid, deadlier then the voice of heauen ! 135
 And let hates fire be kindled in thy heart,
 Flame² in the arches of thy angrie browes,
 Making thy forehead like a comet shine,

¹ Haw. D. B. bear'st.

² Isl. Haw. D. B. Flame.

To force false Ammon tremble at thy looks !
 Sin, with his seuenfold crowne and purple robe, 140
 Begins his triumphs in my guiltie throne ;
 There sits he watching with his hundred eyes
 Our idle minuts and our wanton thoughts ;
 And with his baits, made of our fraile desires,
 Giues vs the hooke that hailes our soules to hell. 145
 But with the spirit of my kingdomes God
 Ile thrust the flattering tyran from his throne,
 And scourge his bondslaues from my hallowed court
 With rods of yron and thornes of sharpened steele.
 Then, Absolon, reuenge not thou this sin ; 150
 Leaue it to me, and I will chasten him.

ABS. I am content. Then graunt my lord the king
 Himselfe with all his other lords would come
 Vp to my sheepe-feast on the plaine of Hazor.

DA. Nay, my faire sonne, my-selfe with all my lords 155
 Will bring thee too much charge ; yet some shall goe.

ABS. But let my lord the king himselfe take paines ;
 The time of yeare is pleasant for your Grace,
 And gladsome summer in her shadie robes,
 Crowned with roses and with painted¹ flowers, 160
 With all her nimphs shall enterteine my lord,
 That from the thicket of my verdant groues
 Will sprinckle hony-dewes about his brest
 And cast sweet balme vpon his kingly head :
 Then grant thy seruants boone and goe, my lord. 165

DAU. Let it content my sweet sonne Absolon
 That I may stay ; and take my other lords.

ABS. But shall thy best-beloued Ammon goe?

DAU. What needeth it that Ammon goe with thee?

ABS. Yet doe thy sonne and seruant so much grace. 170

DAU. Ammon shall goe, and all my other lords,
 Because I will giue grace to Absolon.

¹ Isl. planted ; *emend.* by D.

*Enter CUSAY and VRIAS, with others.*¹

CUSAY. Pleaseth my lord the king, his seruant Ioab
Hath sent Vrias from the Syrian wars.

DAU. Welcome, Vrias, from the Syrian wars ; 175
Welcome to Dauid as his dearest lord !

VRIAS. Thankes be to Israels God and Dauids grace,
Vrias finds such greeting with the king.

DAU. No other greeting shall Vrias find 180
As long as Dauid² swaies the elected seat
And consecrated throne of Israel.

Tell me, Vrias, of my seruant Ioab :
Fights he with truth the battels of our God
And for the honor of the Lords annointed ?

VRIAS. Thy seruant Ioab fights the chosen wars 185
With truth, with honour and with high successe,

And gainst the wicked king of Ammons sonnes
Hath, by the finger of our souereines God,
Besieg'd the citie Rabath, and atchieu'd
The court of waters, where the conduits run 190
And all the Ammonites delightsome springs.

Therefore he wisheth Dauids mightinesse
Should number out the host of Israel,
And come in person to the citie Rabath,
That so her conquest³ may be made the kings, 195
And Ioab fight as his inferior.

DAUID. This hath not God and Ioabs prowesse done
Without Vrias valour,⁴ I am sure,
Who, since his true conuersion from a Hethite
To an adopted sonne of Israel, 200
Hath fought like one whose armes were lift by Heauen
And whose bright sword was edgd with Israels wrath.
Goe therefore home, Vrias ; take thy rest ;

¹ *This shows clearly how undefined were the scenes in plays of this date. The location, which so recently was AMMON'S house, has now become the royal palace ; see l. 237.*

⁴ Isl. valours ; corr. by D.

² Isl. Dauids ; corr. silently by Haw. D. ; recorded by B.

³ Haw. conquests, perhaps misprint.

Visit thy wife and houshold with the ioies
 A victor and a faourite of the kings 205
 Should exercise with honor after armes.

VRIAS. Thy seruants bones are yet not halfe so crasde
 Nor constitute on such a sickly mould
 That for so little seruice he should faint
 And seeke, as cowards, refuge of his home ; 210
 Nor are his thoughts so sensually stird
 To stay the armes with which the Lord would smite
 And fill their circle with his conquered foes
 For wanton bosome of a flattering wife.

DA. Vrias hath a beauteous, sober wife, 215
 Yet yong and framd of tempting flesh and bloud :
 Then, when the king hath summond thee from armes,
 If thou vnkindly shouldst refraine her bed,
 Sinne might be laid vpon Vrias soule
 If Bethsabe by frailtie hurt her fame. 220
 Then goe, Vrias ; solace in her loue :
 Whom God hath knit to thee tremble to lose.

VRIAS. The king is much too tender of my ease.
 The arke and Israel and Iuda dwell
 In pallaces and rich pauillions, 225
 But Ioab and his brother in the fields,
 Suffering the wrath of winter and the sun :
 And shall Vrias, of more shame than they,
 Banquet, and loiter in the worke of Heauen?
 As sure as thy soule doth liue, my lord, 230
 Mine eares shall neuer leane to such delight
 When holy labour cals me forth to fight.

DAUID. Then be it with Vrias manly heart
 As best his fame may shine in Israel.

VRIAS. Thus shall Vrias heart be best content : 235
 Till thou dismisse me backe to Ioabs bands,
 This ground before the king my masters dores

He lies downe.

Shall be my couch, and this vnwearied arme
 The proper pillow of a souldiours head ;

For neuer will I lodge within my house
Till Ioab triumph in my secret voves.¹ 240

DAUID. Then fetch some flagons of our purest wine,
That we may welcome home our hardie friend
With full carouses to his fortunes past
And to the honours of his future armes. 245
Then will I send him backe to Rabath siege,
And follow with the strength of Israel.

Enter one with the flagons of wine.

Arise, Vrias; come, and pledge the king.

He riseth.²

VRIAS. If Dauid thinke me worthy such a grace,
I will be bold and pledge my lord the king. 250

DAU. Absolon and Cusay both shall drinke
To good Vrias and his happinesse,

ABS. We will, my lord, to please Vrias soule.

DAU. I will begin, Vrias, to thy-selfe,
And all the treasure of the Ammonites, 255
Which here I promise to impart to thee,
And bind that promise with a full carous.

VRIAS. What seemeth pleasant in my souereines eyes,
That shall Vrias doe till he be dead.

DAU. Fill him the cup; follow, ye lords that loue
Your souereines health, and doe as he hath done. 260

ABS. Ill may he thriue, [n]or liue in Israel,
That loues not Dauid, or denies his charge!

Vrias, here is to Abisais health,
Lord Ioabs brother *and* thy louing friend!³ 265

VRIAS. I pledge Lord Absolon: and Abisais health!

He drinkes.

CUS. Here now, Vrias: to the health of Ioab,
And to the pleasant iourny we shall haue

¹ B. says: "The words, my secret voves, are to me unintelligible. Were it not that a rhyme seems to be required for house, I would read, in thy sacred cause." But the text is right.

² In Isl. this is at the end of l. 248; Haw. D. put it after 249; B. after 250.

³ Lines 264, 265 as one in Isl.; corr. by Haw.

When we returne to mightie Rabath siege!

VRIAS. Cusay, I pledge thee all with all my heart. 270

Giue me some drink, ye seruants of the king;

Giue me my drinke. *He drinkes.*

DA. Well done, my good Vrias! Drinke thy fill,
That in thy fulnesse Daid may reioice!

VRIAS. I will, my lord. 275

ABS. Now, Lord Vrias, one carouse to me!

VRIAS. No, sir, Ile drinke to the king;

Your father is a better man then you.

DAU. Doe so, Vrias; I will pledge thee straight.

VRIAS. I will indeed, my lord and souereine, 280

I will¹ once in my daies be so bold.

DAUID. Fill him his glasse.

VRIAS. Fill me my glasse.

He giues him the glasse.

DAU. Quickly, I say.

VRIAS. Quickly, I say.²

[His glass is filled.]

VRIAS. Here, my lord:

By your fauour now I drinke to you.³ 285

DAU. I pledge thee, good Vrias, presently.

He drinkes.

ABS. Here then, Vrias: once againe for me,
And to the health of Dauids children!

VRIAS. Dauids children?

ABS. I, Dauids children; wilt thou pledge me, man? 290

¹ Isl. I; Haw. D. B. I'll.

² In Isl. printed thus:

Dau. Quickly, I fay. Vrias. Quickly, I fay.

As Isl. does not use italics for names that are a part of the text, this is full confirmation of D.'s suggestion that Urias repeats David's words, if so excellent a suggestion needed such support. That VRIAS is also prefixed to the next speech (ll. 284, 285, — printed as one in Isl.) is perhaps due to its not being regarded as a continuation, but as a new speech; I have indicated the separation by a stage-direction.

³ Lines 284, 285 as one in Isl.

VRIAS. Pledge me, man?

ABS. Pledge me, I say, or else thou louest vs not.

VRIAS. What doe you talke — doe you talke —
Ile no more ; Ile lie downe here.

DAUID. Rather, Vrias, goe thou home and sleepe. 295

VRIAS. O, ho, sir, would you make me break my sentence?

He lies downe.

Home, sir? No, indeed, sir ; Ile sleepe vpon mine arme
Like a souldiour, sleepe like a man as long as I liue in Israel.¹

DAUID. [*aside*] If nought will serue to saue his wiues re-
nowne,

Ile send him with a letter vnto Ioab 300

To put him in the forefront of the wars,

That so my purposes may take effect. —

Helpe him in, sirs. *Exeunt* ² DAUID and ABSOLON.

CUSAY. Come, rise, Vrias ; get thee in and sleepe.

VRIAS. I will not goe home, sir ; thats flat. 305

CUSAY. Then come and rest thee vpon Dauids bed.

VRIAS. On afore, my lords ; on afore!

Exeunt.

CHORUS.

O proud reuolt of a presumptuous man,
Laying his bridle in the necke of sin,
Ready to beare him past his graue to hell.
Like as the fatall rauens, that in his voice
Carries the dreadfull summons of our deaths, 5
Flies by the faire Arabian spiceries,
Her pleasant gardens and delightsome parkes,³
Seeming to curse them with his hoarse exclaimes,
And yet doth stoope with hungrie violence
Vpon a peece of hatefull carrion, 10
So wretched man, displeas'd with those delights
Would yeeld a quickning sauor to his soule,

¹ D. B. *print the whole of this speech as prose ; I follow Isl.*

² Isl. Haw. Exit ; D. B. Exeunt.

³ D. *records that England's Parnassus has, in this passage, delightfull parts.*

Pursues with eagre and vnstanch'd thirst
 The greedie longings of his lothsome flesh.
 If holy Daud so shoke hands with sinne, 15
 What shall our baser spirits glorie in?
 This king, by giuing vnto lust her raigne,¹
 Pursues the sequell with a greater ill:
 Vrias in the forefront of the wars
 Is murdered by the hatefull heathens sword, 20
 And Daud ioies his too deere Bethsabe.
 Suppose this past, and that the child is borne,
 Whose death the prophet solemnly doth mourne. [Exit.]

[Act II. Scene I.]²

[The palace at Jerusalem.]

Enter BETHSABE, with her handmaid.

BETH. Mourne, Bethsabe! bewaile thy foolishnesse,
 Thy sinne, thy shame, the sorrow of thy soule!
 Sinne, shame and sorrow swarme about thy soule;
 And in the gates and entrance of thy³ heart
 Sadnesse, with wreathed armes, hangs her complaint. 5
 No comfort from the ten-string'd instrument,
 The tinckling⁴ cymball or the yuorie lute;
 Nor doth the sound of Dauids kingly harpe
 Make glad the broken heart of Bersabe.⁵

¹ Isl. This kingly giuing lust her raigne; so Haw.; D. suggests king by for kingly; B. keeps kingly, inserting ruler after it; P. A. Daniel keeps kingly, inserting unto after giuing.

² See above, p. 422, n. 2; B., who does not divide the play into acts, calls this Scene iv.

³ Isl. D. B. my; Haw. thy, without note.

⁴ Isl. twinkling; corr. silently by Haw.

⁵ This is the first appearance in the text of the spelling Bersabe, which is the usual form in this scene and the next (the only exceptions being in the stage-directions at the beginning and the end of this scene). The name does not occur in either of its forms in the rest of this act. In Act iii the usual form is Bethsabe, only one instance of Bersabe occurring

Ierusalem is fild with thy complaint, 10
 And in the streets of Syon sits thy greefe.
 The babe is sicke, sicke to the death, I feare,
 The fruit that sprung from thee to Daud's house ;
 Nor may the pot of honny and of oyle
 Glad Daud or his handmaids countenance. 15
 Vrias — woe is me to thinke hereon!
 For who is it among the sonnes of men
 That sayth not to my soule the king hath sind,
 Daud hath done amisse and Bersabe
 Laid snares of death vnto Vrias life? 20
 My sweet Vrias, falne into the pit
 Art thou, and gone euen to the gates of hell
 For Bersabe, that wouldst not shroud her shame !
 O, what is it to serue the lust of kings!
 How lyonlike they¹ rage when we resist! 25
 But, Bersabe, in humblenesse attend
 The grace that God will to his handmaid send.

Exit BETH[SABE, with MAID].

[Act II. Scene II.]²

[*The palace.*]

DAUID *in his gowne, walking sadly ; to him* NATHAN.

DAUID. The babe is sicke, and sad is Dauds heart
 To see the guiltlesse beare the guilties paine.
 Daud, hang vp thy harpe, hang downe thy head

(iii. 2, 15). *If to these differences we add the noteworthy fact that in this second act several proper names regularly appear in forms different from those of Acts i and iii, it may seem not improbable that the MS. sent to the printer was prepared by two persons, one of whom copied Act ii: in Act i the city Rabath is defended by its king, Hanon; in Act ii the city Rabba is defended by its king, Hannon; the spelling of Absolon becomes Absalon (not regularly, but frequently), and Abisai varies similarly; many other words also show variation in the two parts. It may be noted further that it is at the end of Act ii that the puzzling fragment of a scene appears; see below, p. 476, n. 1, and also p. 452, n. 2.*

¹ Isl. thy; *corr. silently by D.*

² B. calls this Scene v.

And dash thy yuorie lute against the stones!
 The dew that on the Hill of Hermon fals 5
 Raines not on Syons tops and lofty towers:
 The plaines of Gath and Askaron reioice,¹
 And Dauids thoughts are spent in pensiuenesse.
 The babe is sicke, sweet babe that Bersabe
 With womans paine brought forth to Israel. 10

Enter NATHAN.

But what saith Nathan to his lord the king?

NATHAN to DAVID.

NATHAN. Thus Nathan saith vnto his lord the king:
 There were two men, both dwellers in one towne;
 The one was mighty and exceeding rich
 In oxen, sheepe and cattell of the field; 15
 The other poore, hauing nor oxe nor calfe
 Nor other cattell saue one little lambe
 Which he had bought and nourisht by the hand,
 And it grew vp and fed with him and his,
 And eat and dranke as he and his were wont, 20
 And in his bosome slept and was to him²
 As was his daughter or his deerest child.
 There came a stranger to this wealthy man;
 And he refused and spar'd to take his owne,
 Or of his store to dresse or make him meat, 25
 But tooke the poor mans sheepe, the³ poore mans store,
 And drest it for this strangar in his house.
 What, tell me, shall be done to him for this?
 DAU. Now, as the Lord doth liue, this wicked man
 Is iudgd, and shall become the child of death! 30
 Foure-fold to the poore man shall he restore

¹ In Isl. l. 8 precedes l. 7; corr. by D.

² Isl. liue; corr. by D.

³ Instead of the, Isl. has partly, which is unintelligible. Sprenger proposes to make the line read: But took the poor man's lamb, his only store; but this departs too far from the transmitted text, and in Elizabethan English store means all one has, as well as abundance.

That without mercy tooke his lambe away!

NATH. Thou art the man, and thou hast iudgd thy-selfe!

Dauid, thus sayth the Lord thy God by me:

“I thee annointed king in Israel, 35

And sau'd thee from the tyranny of Saul;

Thy maisters house I gaue thee to possesse,

His wiues into thy bosome did I giue,

And Iuda and Ierusalem withall;

And might, thou knowest, if this had ben too small, 40

Haue giuen thee more:

Wherefore then hast thou gone so far astray,

And hast done euill and sinned in my sight?

Vrias thou hast killed with the sword, —

Yea, with the sword of the vncircumcised 45

Thou hast him slaine: wherefore from this day forth

The sword shall neuer goe from thee and thine.

For thou hast tane this Hethites wife to thee,

Wherefore,¹ behold, I wil,” saith Iacobs God,

“In thine owne house stir euill vp to thee, — 50

Yea, I before thy face will take thy wiues

And giue them to thy neighbour to possesse:

This shall be done to Dauid in the day,

That Israel openly may see thy shame.”²

DAUID. Nathan, I haue against the Lord, I haue 55

Sinned, O, sinned greeuously, and, loe!

From heauens throne doth Dauid throw himselfe

And grone and grouell to the gates of hell.

He fals downe.

NATH. Dauid, stand vp; thus saith the Lord by me:

“Dauid, the king, shall liue,” for he hath seene 60

The true repentant sorrow of thy heart.

But, for thou hast in this misdeed of thine

Stird vp the enemies of Israel

To triumph, and blaspheme the God of Hosts,

And say he set a wicked man to reigne 65

¹ *Qy.* Therefore.

² *B.* closes the quotation at l. 52.

Ouer his loued people and his tribes,
 The child shall surely die that erst was borne,
 His mothers sin, his kingly fathers scorne. *Exit NATHAN.*

DA. How iust is Iacobs God in all his workes !
 But must it die that Dauid loueth so? 70
 O that the Mighty One of Israel
 Nill change his dome, and sayes the babe must die!
 Mourne, Israel, and weepe in Syon gates ;
 Wither, ye cædar-trees of Libanon ;
 Ye sprouting almons with your flowring tops, 75
 Droope, drowne and drench in Hebrons fearefull streames !
 The babe must die that was to Dauid borne,
 His mothers sin, his kingly fathers scorne.

DAUID sits sadly.

Enter CUSAY to DAUID and his traine.

SERUUS. What tidings bringeth Cusay to the king?

CUSAY. To thee, the seruant of King Dauids court, 80
 This bringeth Cusay : As the prophet spake,
 The Lord hath surely stricken to the death
 The child new-borne by that Vrias wife
 That by the sonnes of Ammon erst was slaine.

SERUUS. Cusay, be still ; the king is vexed sore : 85
 How shal he speed that brings this¹ tidings first,
 When, while the child was yet aliuie, we spake,
 And Dauids heart would not be comforted?

DA. Yea, Dauids heart will not be comforted !
 What murmure ye, the seruants of the king? 90
 What tidings telleth Cusay to the king?
 Say, Cusay : liues the child, or is he dead?

CUSAY. The child is dead that of Vrias wife
 Dauid begat.²

DA. Vrias wife, saiest thou?
 The child is dead ! Then ceaseth Dauids shame. 95
 Fetch me to eat, and giue me wine to drinke,

¹ Haw. these, *without note.*

² *In Isl. this is part of the preceding line ; corr. silently by Haw.*

Water to wash, and oyle to cleere my lookes ;
 Bring downe your shalmes, your cymbals and your pipes ;
 Let Dauids harpe and lute, his hand and voice,
 Giue laud to him that loueth Israel, 100
 And sing his praise that shendeth¹ Dauids fame,
 That put away his sinne from out his sight,
 And sent his shame into the streets of Gath.
 Bring ye to me the mother of the babe,
 That I may wipe the teares from off her face, 105
 And giue her comfort with this hand of mine ;
 And decke faire Bersabe with ornaments,
 That she may beare to me another sonne,
 That may be loued of the Lord of Hosts.
 For where he is, of force must Dauid go ; 110
 But neuer may he come where Dauid is.

They bring in water, wine and oyle ; musike and a banquet.

[Enter BETHSABE.]

[DAUID.] Fair Bersabe, sit thou, and sigh no more.
 And sing and play, you seruants of the king.
 Now sleepeth Dauids sorrow with the dead,
 And Bersabe liueth to Israel. 115

They vse all solemnities together, and sing, &c.

DAUID. Now armes and warlike engins for assault
 Prepare at once, ye men of Israel,
 Ye men of Iuda and Ierusalem,
 That Rabba may be taken by the king,
 Least it be called after Ioabs name 120
 Nor Dauids glory shine in Syon streets.
 To Rabba marcheth Dauid with his men
 To chastise Ammon and the wicked ones.

Exeunt omnes.

¹ Sprenger, *not knowing* protect as a meaning of shend, wishes to read shield ; but see Engl. Stud., XVIII, 300, for several examples of this use.

[Act II. Scene III.]¹[*A field: AMMON'S sheep-feast.*]*Enter ABSOLON with two or three.*

ABS. Set vp your mules, and giue them well to eat,
 And let vs meet our brothers at the feast.
 Accursed is the maister of this feast,
 Dishonour of the house of Israel,
 His sisters slander and his mothers shame! 5
 Shame be his share that could such ill contriue
 To rauish Thamar, and, without a pause,
 To driue her shamefully from out his house.
 But may his wickednesse find iust reward!
 Therefore doth Absolon conspire with you 10
 That Ammon die, what time he sits to eat;
 For in the holy temple haue I sworne
 Wreake of his villany in Thamars rape.
 And here he comes. Bespeake him gently, all,
 Whose death is deeply graued in my heart. 15

Enter AMMON, with ADONIA and IONADAB, to ABSOLON and his companie.

AM. Our shearers are not far from hence, I wot;
 And Ammon to you all, his brethren,
 Giueth such welcome as our fathers erst
 Were wont² in Iuda and Ierusalem, —
 But specially, Lord Absolon, to thee, 20
 The honour of thy house and progenie.
 Sit downe and dine with me, King Dauids sonne,
 Thou faire young man, whose haire shine in mine eye
 Like golden wyers of Dauids yuorie lute.

ABS. Ammon, where be thy shearers and thy men, 25
 That we may powre in plenty of thy vines,³

¹ B. calls this Scene vi.² In Isl. the t looks like r.³ Isl. vines; Haw. D. B. wines; but Kittredge points out that plenty of thy vines (= the increase of thy vines, i.e. wine) is better.

And eat thy goats-milke and reioice with thee?

AM. Here commeth Ammons shearers and his men.
Absolon, sit and reioice with me.¹

Here enter a company of sheepeheards, and daunce and sing.

AM. Drinke, Absolon, in praise of Israel ! 30
Welcome to Ammons fields from Dauids court !

ABS. Die with thy draught ! Perish and die accurst,
Dishonour to the honour of vs all !

[Stabs him.]

Die for the villany to Thamar done !
Vnworthy thou to be King Dauids sonne. 35

Exit ABSA.

IONAD. O, what hath Absolon for Thamar done?
Murthred his brother, great King Dauids sonne !

ADON. Run, Ionadab ; away and make it knowne
What cruelty this Absolon hath showne.
Ammon, thy brother Adonia shall 40
Bury thy body among the dead mens bones,
And we will make complaint to Israel
Of Ammons death and pride of Absolon.

Exeunt omnes.

[Act II. Scene IV.]²

[Before the city Rabba.]

*Enter DAUID, with IOAB, ABYSHAI,³ CUSAY, with drum and ensigne,
against Rabba.*

[DAUID.] This is the towne of the vncircumcised,
The citie of the kingdome, this is it, —
Rabba, where wicked Hannon sitteth king.
Dispoile this king, this Hannon, of his crowne ;
Vnpeople Rabba and the streets thereof ; 5

¹ For metrical reasons B. inserts *Come before Absolon* ; D. suggests *sit down*.

² According to B. *this is Scene vii.*

³ Isl. B. *Abyssus* ; Haw. D. *Abisai*.

For in their blood and slaughter of the slaine
 Lyeth the honor of King Dauids line.
 Ioab, Abyshai, and the rest of you,
 Fight ye this day for great Ierusalem.

[Enter HANNON and others on the walls.]¹

IOAB. And see where Hannon showes him on the wals! 10
 Why then do we forbear to giue assault,
 That Israel may, as it is promised,
 Subdue the daughters of the Gentils tribes?
 All this must be performd by Dauids hand.

DA. Harke to me, Hannon, and remember well! 15
 As sure as he doth liue that kept my host
 What time our young men by the poole of Gibeon
 Went forth against the strength of Isboseth,
 And twelue to twelue did with their weapons play,
 So sure art thou and thy men of war 20
 To feele the sword of Israel this day;
 Because thou hast defied Iacobs God,
 And suffered Rabba with the Philistine
 To raile vpon the tribe of Benjamin.

HANNON. Hark, man! As sure as Saul, thy maister, fell 25
 And gor'd his sides vpon the mountaine tops,
 And Ionathan, Abinadab and Melchisua
 Watred the dales and deepes of Askaron
 With bloody streames, that from Gilboa ran
 In channels through the wildernesse of Ziph, 30
 What time the sword of the vncircumcised
 Was drunken with the blood of Israel,
 So sure shall Dauid perish with his men
 Vnder the wals of Rabba, Hannons towne.

IOAB. Hannon, the God of Israel hath said 35
 Dauid, the king, shall weare that crowne of thine,
 That weighs a talent of the finest gold,
 And triumph in the spoile of Hannons towne,
 When Israel shall hale thy people hence,

¹ *Supplied by D.*

And turne them to the tile-kill, man and child, 40
 And put them vnder harrowes made of yron,
 And hew their bones with axes, and their lims
 With yron swords deuide and teare in twaine.
 Hannon, this shall be done to thee and thine,
 Because thou hast defied Israel. — 45
 To armes! to armes! that Rabba feele reuenge,
 And Hannons towne become King Dauids spoile.

Alarum, excursions, assault; exeunt omnes. Then the trumpets, and DAUID with HANNONS crowne.

DAU. Now clattering armes and wrathfull stormes of war
 Haue thundred ouer Rabbaes raced towers
 The wreakefull ire of great Iehouaes arme, 50
 That for his people made the gates to rend,
 And clothed the cherubins in fierie coats
 To fight against the wicked Hannons towne.
 Pay thanks, ye men of Iuda to the King,
 The God of Syon and Ierusalem, 55
 That hath exalted Israel to this,
 And crowned Dauid with this diademe.

IOAB. Beauteous and bright is he among the tribes:
 As when the sunne, attir'd in glist'ring robe,
 Comes dauncing from his orientall gate, 60
 And, bridegroom-like, hurles through the gloomy aire
 His radiant beames, such doth King Dauid shew
 Crownd with the honou: of his enemies towne,
 Shining in riches like the firmament,
 The starrie vault that ouerhangs the earth: 65
 So looketh Dauid, king of Israel.

ABYSHAI. Ioab, why doth not Dauid mount his throne,
 Whom Heauen hath beautified with Hannons crowne?
 Sound, trumpets, shalmes and instruments of praise,
 To Iacobs God for Dauids victory! 70

Enter IONADAB.¹

IONADAB. Why doth the king of Israel reioice?

¹ P. A. Daniel suggests that IONADAB does not enter until about l. 82; he assigns this speech to a messenger. His view seems probable.

Why sitteth Dauid crownd with Rabbaes rule?
 Behold, there hath great heauinesse befallne
 In Ammons fields by Absolons misdeed ;
 And Ammons shearers and their feast of mirth 75
 Absolon hath ouerturned with his sword ;
 Nor liueth any of King Dauids sonnes
 To bring this bitter tidings to the king!

DAUID. Ay me! how soone are Dauids triumphs dasht!
 How suddenly declineth Dauids pride ! 80
 As doth the daylight settle in the west,
 So dim is Dauids glory and his gite!
 Die, Dauid, for to thee is left no seed
 That may reuiue thy name in Israel!

IONA. In Israel is left of Dauids seed. 85

Enter ADONIA, with other sonnes.

Comfort your lord, you seruants of the king.
 Behold, thy sonnes returne in mourning weeds,
 And only Ammon Absalon hath slaine.

DA. Welcome, my sonnes : deerer to me you are
 Then is this golden crowne or Hannons spoile. 90
 O, tell me then, tell me, my sonnes, I say :
 How cometh it to passe that Absolon
 Hath slaine his brother Ammon with the sword?

ADO. Thy sonnes, O king, went vp to Ammons fields
 To feast with him and eat his bread and oyle ; 95
 And Absalon vpon his mule doth come,
 And to his men he sayth : " When Ammons heart
 Is merry and secure, then strike him dead,
 Because he forced Thamar shamefully,
 And hated her and threw her forth his dores." 100
 And this did he and they with him conspire,
 And kill thy sonne in wreake of Thamars wrong.

DAUID. How long shall Iuda and Ierusalem
 Complaine and water Syon with their teares?
 How long shall Israel lament in vaine, 105
 And not a man among the mighty ones
 Will hear the sorrowes of King Dauids heart?

Ammon, thy life was pleasing to thy lord
 As to mine eares the musike of my lute
 Or songs that Daid tuneth to his harpe!
 And Absalon hath tane from me away
 The gladnesse of my sad distressed soule.

110

*Exeunt omnes.*¹*Manet DAVID; Enter WIDDOW of Thecoa.*²

WIDDOW. God saue King Daid, king of Israel,
 And blesse the gates of Syon for his sake!

DAU. Woman, why mournest thou? Rise from the earth; 115
 Tell me what sorrow hath befallne thy soule.

WIDDOW. Thy seruants soule, O king, is troubled sore,
 And greuous³ is the anguish of her heart;
 And from Thecoa doth thy handmaid come.

DAUID. Tell me, and say, thou woman of Thecoa, 120
 What aileth thee, or what is come to passe.

WIDDOW. Thy seruant is a widdow in Thecoa,
 Two sonnes thy handmaid had; and they, my lord,
 Fought in the field where no man went betwixt,

¹ *It can hardly be necessary to alter this in the interest of truth; see the next words.*

² P. A. Daniel says: "One or more scenes are wanting here; the loss deprives the scene with the Widow of all motive. David has not banished Absalon nor taken any course to revenge the death of Ammon. The fragment (p. 476) may have formed part of one of those missing scenes." That David, at the end of this episode, is still before Rabba seems to make impossible the assumption of a mere loss of scenes. It may, however, not be amiss to bring into connection with this difficulty the peculiar forms of certain names in this act (see p. 441, n. 5), and the fact observed by every one and recorded by B., that the sheep-feast at which Ammon is killed is not held by Absalon, as originally planned, but by Ammon. A simple hypothesis accounting for all these peculiarities is a desideratum. But for the style, which seems distinctly Peele's, one might suggest that Act ii is an insertion by another hand. Of two remaining possibilities the latter seems the more probable: Peele himself rewrote Act ii, without sufficiently considering its relations to the rest of the play; another hand entirely remodeled what is now Act ii, but was originally Acts ii, iii and iv of a five-act play (note the comparative length of this act, the number of themes it contains, and the presence of the figure 5 before the CHORUS, p. 475), rewriting, however, only Scene iii and ll. 74, 75, 94, 95, 96 of Scene iv.

³ Isl. greenous.

And so the one did smite and slay the other. 125

And loe, behold, the kindred doth arise

And crie on him that smote his brother¹

That he therefore may be the child of death,

“For we will follow and destroy the heire.”

So will they quench that sparkle that is left, 130

And leaue nor name nor issue on the earth

To me or to thy handmaids husband dead.

DAU. Woman, returne ; go home vnto thy house :

I will take order that thy sonne be safe.

If any man say otherwise then well, 135

Bring him to me, and I shall chastise him ;

For, as the Lord doth liue, shall not a haire

Shed from thy sonne or fall vpon the earth !

Woman, to God alone belongs reuenge :

Shall then the kindred slay him for his sinne? 140

WIDDOW. Well hath King Dauid to his handmaid spoke !

But wherefore, then, hast thou determined

So hard a part against the righteous tribes

To follow and pursue the banished,

When-as to God alone belongs reuenge? 145

Assuredly thou saist against thy-selfe.

Therefore call home againe the banished ;

Call home the banished, that he may liue

And raise to thee some fruit in Israel.

DAU. Thou woman of Thecoa, answere me, 150

Answere me one thing I shall aske of thee :

Is not the hand of Ioab in this worke?

Tell me : is not his finger in this fact?

WID. It is, my lord ; his hand is in this worke :

Assure thee, Ioab, captaine of thy host, 155

Hath put these words into thy handmaids mouth ;

And thou art as an angel from on high

To vnderstand the meaning of my heart.

Lo, where he commeth to his lord the king!

¹ B. *suggests* And cry upon him that did smite his brother ; *equally good* is And crie out vpon him that smote his brother.

Enter IOAB.

DAUID. Say, Ioab, didst thou send this woman in
To put this parable for Absalon? 160

IOAB. Ioab, my lord, did bid this woman speake;
And she hath said, and thou hast vnderstood.

DAUID. I haue, and am content to do the thing.
Goe fetch my sonne, that he may liue with me. 165

IOAB kneeles.

IOAB. Now God be blessed for King Dauids life!
Thy seruant Ioab hath found grace with thee
In that thou sparest Absolon thy child:
A beautifull and faire young man is he;
In all his bodie is no blemish seene, 170
His haire is like the wyer of Dauids harpe
That twines about his bright and yuorie necke, —
In Israel is not such a goodly man;
And here I bring him to entreat for grace.

Enter ABSOLON with IOAB.

DAUID. Hast thou slaine Ammon¹ in the fields of Hazor — 175
Ah, Absalon, my sonne! ah, my sonne Absolon!
But wherefore doe I vexe thy spirit so?
Liue, and returne from Gesur to thy house,
Returne from Gesur to Ierusalem.
What boots it to be bitter to thy soule? 180
Ammon is dead, and Absolon suruiues.

ABS. Father, I haue offended Israel,
I haue offended Dauid and his house;
For Thamars wrong hath Absolon misdome.
But Dauids heart is free from sharpe reuenge, 185
And Ioab hath got grace for Absalon.

DAUID. Depart with me, you men of Israel,
You that haue followed Rabba with the sword,
And ransacke Ammons richest treasuries.
Liue, Absalon, my sonne, liue once in peace;
Peace with thee and with Ierusalem. 190

Exeunt omnes.

¹ B. *inserts* Ammon.

Manet ABSOLON.

ABS. Daid is gone, and Absolon remaines,
 Flowring in pleasant spring-time of his youth.
 Why liueth Absalon and is not honoured
 Of tribes and elders and the mightiest ones, 195
 That round about his temples he may weare
 Garlands and wreaths set on with reuerence,
 That euery one that hath a cause to plead
 Might come to Absolon and call for right?
 Then in the gates of Syon would I sit, 200
 And publish lawes in great Ierusalem;
 And not a man should liue in all the land
 But Absolon would doe him reasons due.
 Therefore I shall addresse me as I may
 To loue the men and tribes of Israel. 205

Exit.

[Act II. Scene V.]¹

[*The Mount of Olives.*]

Enter DAUID, ITHAY, SADOC, AHIMAAS, IONATHAN, with others; DAUID barefoot, with some lose covering ouer his head, and all mourning.

DA. Proud lust, the blouidiest traitor to our soules,
 Whose greedie throte nor earth, aire, sea or heauen
 Can glut or satisfie with any store,
 Thou art the cause these torments sucke my blood,
 Piercing with venome of thy poysoned eies 5
 The strength and marrow of my tainted bones!
 To punish Pharoh and his cursed host,
 The waters shrunk² at great Adonaies voice,
 And sandy bottom of the sea appeard,
 Offering his seruice at his seruants feet: 10
 And, to inflict a plague on Dauids sinne,
 He makes his bowels traitors to his breast,
 Winding about his heart with mortall gripes.

¹ Scene viii in B.

² So Haw. D.; Isl. shrinke, which B. retains.

Ah, Absalon, the wrath of Heauen inflames
 Thy scorched bosome with ambitious¹ heat, 15
 And Sathan sets thee on a lustie² tower,
 Shewing thy thoughts the pride of Israel,
 Of choice to cast thee on her ruthlesse stones!
 Weepe with me, then, ye sonnes of Israel,

He lies downe and all the rest after him.

Lie downe with Dauid, and with Dauid mourne 20
 Before the Holy One that sees our hearts!
 Season this heauie soile with showers of teares,
 And fill the face of euery flower with dew!
 Weepe, Israel! for Dauids soule dissolues,
 Lading the fountaines of his drowned eyes, 25
 And powres her substance on the sencelesse earth.

SADOC. Weepe, Israel! O weepe for Dauids soule,
 Strewing the ground with haire and garments torne
 For tragicke wisse of your heartie woes!

AHIMAAS. O, would our eyes were conduits to our hearts, 30
 And that our hearts were seas of liquid bloud,
 To powre in streames vpon this holy mount
 For wisse we would 'die for Dauids woes!

IONA. Then should this Mount of Oliues seeme a plaine 35
 Drownd with a sea, that with our sighs should rore,
 And, in the murmure of his mounting waues,
 Report our bleeding sorrowes to the heauens
 For wisse we would die for Dauids woes!

ITH. Earth cannot weepe ynough for Dauids woes.
 Then weepe, you heauens, and, all you clouds, dissolue, 40
 That pittious stars may see our miseries
 And drop their golden teares vpon the ground
 For wisse how they weepe for Dauids woes!

SADOC. Now let my soueraigne raise his prostrate bones,

¹ B. suggests ambition's; but see next note.

² B. follows D. in emending to lofty; but in Elizabethan English a lustie tower means a tower of lust, just as ambitious heat means the heat of ambition.

And mourne not as a faithlesse man would doe ; 45
 But be assur'd that Iacobs righteous God,
 That promist neuer to forsake your throne,
 Will still be iust and pure in his vowes.

DA. Sadoc, high-priest, preseruer of the arke,
 Whose sacred vertue keeps the chosen crowne, 50
 I know my God is spotlesse ¹ in his vowes
 And that these haire shall greet my graue in peace;
 But that my sonne should wrong his tendred soule
 And fight against his fathers happinesse,
 Turnes all my hopes into despaire of him, 55
 And that despaire feeds all my veines with greefe.

ITHAY. Thinke of it, Daud, as a fatall plague
 Which greefe preserueth but preuenteth not ;
 And turne thy drooping eyes vpon the troupes
 That, of affection to thy worthinesse, 60
 Doe swarme about the person of the king.
 Cherish their valours and their zealous loues
 With pleasant lookes and sweet encouragements.

DA. Me thinks the voice of Ithay fills mine eares!

ITH. Let not the voice of Ithay loth thine eares, 65
 Whose heart would baulme thy bosome with his teares!

DAUID. But wherefore goest thou to the wars with vs?
 Thou art a stranger here in Israel

And sonne to Achis, mightie king of Gath :
 Therefore returne, and with thy father stay. 70

Thou camst but yesterday ; and should I now
 Let thee partake these troubles here with vs?

Keepe both thy-selfe and all thy souldiors safe ;
 Let me abide the hazards of these armes.

And God requite the friendship thou hast shewd! 75

ITH. As sure as Israels God giues Dauid life,
 What place or perill shall containe the king,
 The same will Ithay share in life and death!

DA. Then, gentle Ithay, be thou still with vs,
 A ioy to Daud, and a grace to Israel! 80

¹ *Misprinted* spotlesse in Isl.

Goe, Sadoc, now and beare the arke of God
Into the great Ierusalem againe.

If I find fauour in his gracious eyes,
Then will he lay his hand vpon my heart
Yet once againe before I visit death, 85
Giuing it strength and vertue to mine eies,
To tast the comforts and behold the forme
Of his faire arke and holy tabernacle.

But, if he say: " My wonted loue is worne,
And I haue no delight in Dauid now," 90

Here lie I armed with an humble heart
T' imbrace the paines that anger shall impose,
And kisse the sword my Lord shall kill me with.
Then, Sadoc, take Ahimaas, thy sonne,
With Ionathan, sonne to Abiathar, 95
And in these fields I will repose my-selfe
Till they retorne from you some certaine newes.

SADOC. Thy seruants will with ioy obey the king,
And hope to cheere his heart with happy newes.

*Exeunt*¹ SADOC, AHIMAAS and IONATHAN.

ITH. Now that it be no greefe vnto the king, 100
Let me for good enforme his Maiestie
That with vnkinde and gracelesse Absalon
Achitophel, your auncient counsellor,
Directs the state of this rebellion.

DAUID. Then doth it aime with danger at my crowne. 105
O thou that holdst his raging bloody bound²
Within the circle of the siluer moon

¹ Isl. Exit; *emend.* by D.

² B. says: " *Very corrupt.* — *Qy.* sea's ranging body bound? *That* raging is a misprint for ranging I am convinced; but the rest is dark." Psalm lxxxix prevents me from sharing B's conviction in regard to raging. The rest is dark enough; for, in the first place, the passage is not so much worse than many others in Peele as to guarantee that it did not come from Peele's pen in its present form; but, on the other hand, bloody may, as B. suggests, be a misprint for body, or bloody bound may be a distortion of flood ybound (past participles with y- are not unknown in Elizabethan English). At any rate, his (106) is correlative with that (108).

That girds earths centre with his watrie scarfe,
 Limit the counsell of Achitophel,
 No bounds extending to my soules distresse ; 110
 But turne his wisdome into foolishnesse !

Enter CUSAY with his coat turnd and head covered.

CUSAY. Happinesse and honour to my lord the king!

DAUID. What happinesse or honor may betide
 His state that toiles in my extremities?

CUS. O, let my gracious soueraine cease these greefes, 115
 Vnlesse he wish his seruant Cusayes death,
 Whose life depends vpon my lords releefe.
 Then let my presence with my sighs perfume
 The pleasant closet of my soueraignes soule.

DA. No, Cusay, no ; thy presence vnto me 120
 Will be a burthen, since I tender thee
 And cannot brooke¹ thy sighs for Dauids sake.

But, if thou turne to faire Ierusalem
 And say to Absalon, as thou hast been
 A trusty friend vnto his fathers seat, 125
 So thou wilt be to him and call him king,
 Achitophels counsell may be brought to naught.

Then, hauing Sadoc and Abiathar,
 All three may learne the secrets of my sonne,
 Sending the message by Ahimaas 130
 And friendly Ionathan, who both are there.

[CUSAY.]² Then rise, referring the successe to Heauen!

DA. Cusay, I rise, though with vnweldie bones :
 I carrie armes against my Absalon.

Exeunt.

¹ Isl. breake ; *corr. by* Haw.

² *Not in* Isl. ; *supplied by* Haw., *without note.*

[Act II. Scene VI.]¹

[Jerusalem : the palace.]

ABSALON, AMASA, ACHITOPHEL, *with the* CONCUBINES OF DAUID, *and others, in great state ; ABSALON crowned.*

ABS. Now you, that were my fathers concubines,
 Liquor to his in chast and lustfull fire,
 Haue seene his honour shaken in his house,
 Which I possesse in sight of all the world.
 I bring ye forth for foiles to my renoune 5
 And to eclipse the glorie of your king,
 Whose life is with his honour fast inclosed
 Within the entrailles of a ieatie cloud
 Whose dissolution shall powre downe in showers
 The substance of his life and swelling pride. 10
 Then shall the stars light earth with rich aspects
 And heauen shall burne in loue with Absalon,
 Whose beautie will suffice to chast² all mists
 And cloth the suns spheare with a triple fire
 Sooner then his cleare eyes should suffer staine 15
 Or be offended with a lowring day.

[1]³ CONCUR. Thy fathers honour, graceless Absalon,
 And ours, thus beaten with thy violent armes,
 Will cry for vengeance to the host of heauen,
 Whose power is euer armed against the proud, 20
 And will dart plagues at thy aspiring head
 For doing this disgrace to Dauids throne.

II [CONCUR.]³ To Dauids throne, to Dauids holy throne,
 Whose scepter angels guard with swords of fire
 And sit as eagles on his conquering fist, 25
 Ready to prey vpon his enemies!
 Then thinke not thou, the captaine of his foes, —

¹ Scene ix in B.³ Not in Isl.

² So Isl.; Haw. D. B. *print chase*; but *confusion of the verbs chase and chaste is so easy and some of the meanings of chaste are so appropriate that it seems possible that Peele wrote chaste.*

Wert thou much swifter than Azahell was,
 That could out-pace the nimble-footed¹ roe, —
 To scape the furie of their thumping beakes 30
 Or dreadfull scope² of their commanding wings.

ACHIT.³ Let not my lord the king of Israel
 Be angrie with a sillie womans threats;
 But, with the pleasure he hath erst enioied,
 Turne them into their cabinets againe 35
 Till Dauids conquest be their ouerthrow.

ABS. Into your bowers, ye daughters of disdainie,
 Gotten by furie of vnbridled lust,
 And wash your couches with your mourning teares
 For greefe that Dauids kingdome is decaied. 40

I [CONCUB.]⁴ No, Absalon; his kingdome is enchaind
 Fast to the finger of great Iacobs God,
 Which will not lose it for a rebels loue. *Exeunt [CONCUBINES].*

AMASA. If I might giue aduise vnto the king,
 These concubines should buy their taunts with blood. 45

ABS. Amasa, no; but let thy martiall sword
 Empty the veines⁵ of Dauids armed men,
 And let these foolish women scape our hands,
 To recompense the shame they haue sustaind.
 First, Absolon was by the trumpets sound 50
 Proclaimd through Hebron King of Israel;
 And now is set in faire Ierusalem
 With complete state and glorie of a crowne.
 Fiftie faire footmen by my chariot run,
 And to the aire, whose rupture rings my fame, 55
 Where-ere I ride, they offer reuerence.
 Why should not Absolon, that in his face
 Carries the finall purpose of his God, —

¹ *Misprinted* nimple-footed in Haw.

² Swoop, the suggestion of P. A. Daniel, is attractive; Kittredge suggests stoop as another possibility, but thinks, as I do, that Peele wrote scope.

³ *Misprinted* Achip. in Isl.

⁴ Not in Isl.

⁵ Isl. paines; *emend.* by Haw.; D. B. *put* veines in the text, but D., in his first edition, suggests plaines.

That is, to work him grace in Israel, —
 Endeouour to atchieue with all his strength 60
 The state that most may satisfie his ioy,
 Keeping his statutes and his couenants pure?
 His thunder is entangled in my haire,
 And with my beautie is his lightning quencht:
 I am the man he made to glorie in, 65
 When by the errours of my fathers sinne
 He lost the path that led into¹ the land
 Wherewith our chosen ancestors were blest.

Enter CUSAY.

CUS. Long may the beautious king of Israel liue,
 To whom the people doe by thousands swarme! 70

ABS. What meaneth Cusay so to greet his foe?
 Is this the loue thou shewst² to Dauids soule,
 To whose assistance thou hast vowed thy life?
 Why leauest thou him in this extremitie?

CUS. Because the Lord and Israel chuseth thee. 75
 And, as before I serued thy fathers turne
 With counsell acceptable in his sight,
 So likewise will I now obey his sonne.

ABS. Then welcome, Cusay, to King Absalon!
 And now, my lords and louing counsellors, 80
 I think it time to exercise our armes
 Against forsaken Dauid and his host.

Giue counsell first, my good Achitophel,
 What times and orders we may best obserue
 For prosperous manage of these high exploits. 85

ACHI. Let me chuse out twelue thousand valiant men,
 And, while the night hides with her sable mists
 The close endeuors cunning souldiers vse,
 I will assault thy discontented sire,
 And, while with weaknesse of their wearie armes, 90
 Surchargd with toile to shun thy suddaine power,
 The people flie in huge disordred troupes

¹ Haw. led him into.

² Isl. shewdst; *corr. by D.*

To saue their liues, and leaue the king alone,
 Then will I smite him with his latest wound
 And bring the people to thy feet in peace. 95

ABS. Well hath Achitophel giuen his aduise.
 Yet let vs hear what Cusay counsels vs,
 Whose great experience is well worth the eare.

CUS. Though wise Achitophel be much more meet
 To purchase hearing with my lord the king 100
 For all his former counsels then my-selfe,
 Yet, not offending Absolon or him,
 This time it is not good nor worth pursuit ;
 For, well thou knowest, thy fathers men are strong,
 Chafing as shee-bears robbed of their whelpes ; 105

Besides, the king himselfe a valiant man,
 Traind vp in feats and stratagemes of warre,
 And will not, for preuention of the worst,
 Lodge with the common souldiers in the field,
 But now, I know, his wonted policies 110

Haue taught him lurke within some secret caue
 Guarded with all his stoutest souldiers,
 Which, if the forefront of his battle faint,
 Will yet giue out that Absalon doth flie,
 And so thy souldiers be discouraged. 115

Dauid himselfe, withall, whose angry heart
 Is as a lyons letted of his walke,
 Will fight himselfe, and all his men to one,
 Before a few shall vanquish him by feare.
 My counsell therefore is, with trumpets sound 120
 To gather men from Dan to Bersabe,

That they may march in number like sea-sands
 That nestle close in one¹ anothers necke :
 So shall we come vpon him in our strength,
 Like to the dew that fals in showers from heauen, 125
 And leaue him not a man to march withall.

Besides, if any citie succour him,
 The numbers² of our men shall fetch vs ropes,

¹ Not in Isl.; supplied by Haw.

² Misprinted numbers in Isl.

And we will pull it downe the riuers streame,
That not a stone be left to keepe vs out. 130

ABS. What says my lord[s] to Cusaies counsell now?

AMASA. I fancie Cusaies counsell better farre
Then that is giuen vs from Achitophel;
And so, I think, doth euery souldier here.

ALL. Cusaies counsell is better then Achitophels. 135

ABS. Then march we after Cusaies counsell all.
Sound trumpets through the bounds of Israel,
And muster all the men will serue the king,
That Absalon may glut his longing soule
With sole fruition of his fathers crowne.

Exeunt. 140

ACH. [*aside*] Ill shall they fare that follow thy attempts,
That skornes the counsell of Achitophel.

[*Exit.*]

Restat CUSAY.

CUSAY. Thus hath the power of Iacobs iealous God
Fulfd his seruant Dauids drifts by me
And brought Achitophels aduise to scorne. 145

Enter SADOC, ABIATHAR, AHIMAAS and IONATHAN.

SADOC. God saue Lord Cusay, and direct his zeale
To purchase Dauids conquest gainst his sonne!

ABIA. What secrets hast thou gleande from Absalon?

CUSAY. These, sacred priests that beare the arke of God:
Achitophel aduisd him in the night 150

To let him chuse twelue thousand fighting-men,
And he would come on Daudid at vnwares,
While he was wearie with his violent toile;

But I aduisd to get a greater host,
And gather men from Dan to Bersabe, 155

To come vpon him strongly in the fields.

Then send Ahimaas and Ionathan

To signifie these secrets to the king,

And will him not to stay this night abroad

But get him ouer Iordane presently,

• 160

Least he and all his people kisse the sword.

SADOC. Then goe, Ahimaas and Ionathan,
And straight conuey this message to the king.

AHIM. Father, we will, if Absalons cheefe spies
Preuent not this deuise and stay vs here.

165

Exeunt.[Act II. Scene VII.]¹[*The highway.*]SEMEI *solus.*

SEMEI. The man of Israel that hath rul'd as king,
Or, rather, as the tyrant of the land,
Bolstering his hatefull head vpon the throne
That God vnworthily hath blest him with,
Shall now, I hope, lay it as low as hell, 5
And be depos'd from his detested chaire.
O that my bosome could by nature beare
A sea of poyson to be powr'de vpon
His cursed head that sacred baulme hath grac'd
And consecrated king of Israel! 10
Or would my breath were made the smoke of hell,
Infected with the sighs of damned soules
Or with the reeking of that serpents gorge
That feeds on adders, toads and venomous roots,
That, as I opened my reuenging lips 15
To curse the sheepeheard for his tyrannie,
My words might cast rancke poyson to his pores
And make his swolne and ranckling sinewes cracke,
Like to the combat-blowes that breake the clouds
When Ioues stout champions [do]² fight with fire! 20
See where he commeth that my soule abhors!
I haue prepar'd my pocket full of stones
To cast at him, mingled with earth and dust,
Which, bursting with disdain, I greet him with.

¹ Scene x *in B.*² P. A. Daniel *inserts in air.*

DAUID, IOAB, ABYSHAI, ITHAY, *with others.*

SEMEI.¹ Come forth, thou murtherer, and wicked man! 25
 The Lord hath brought vpon thy cursed head
 The guiltlesse bloud of Saule and all his sonnes,
 Whose royall throne thy basenesse hath vsurpt ;
 And, to reuenge it deeply on thy soule,
 The Lord hath giuen the kingdome to thy son, 30
 And he shall wreake the traitrous wrongs of Saule.
 Euen as thy sinne hath still importund heauen,
 So shall thy murthers and adulterie
 Be punisht in the sight of Israel,
 As thou deserust, with bloud, with death and hell. 35
 Hence, murtherer, hence!

He throws at him.²

ABIS. Why doth this dead dog curse my lord the king?
 Let me alone to take away his head!

DA. Why medleth thus the son of Zeruia
 To interrupt the action of our God? 40
 Semei vseth me with this reproch
 Because the Lord hath sent him to reprove
 The sinnes of Dauid printed in his browes
 With bloud, that blusheth for his conscience guilt :
 Who dares then aske him why he curseth me? 45

SEMEI. If then thy conscience tell thee thou hast sind
 And that thy life is odious to the world,
 Command thy followers to shun thy face,
 And by thy-selfe here make away thy soule,
 That I may stand and glorie in thy shame. 50

DA. I am not desperate, Semei, like thy-selfe,
 But trust vnto the couenant of my God,
 Founded on mercie, with repentance built,
 And finisht with the glorie of my soule.

SEMEI. A murtherer, and hope for mercie in thy end? 55

¹ So Isl. ; omitted by Haw. D. B.

² Isl. Hence murtherer, hence, he threw at him (*in italics, as stage-direction*) ; *corr. silently* by Haw.

Hate and destruction sit vpon thy browes
 To watch the issue of thy damned ghost,
 Which, with thy latest gaspe, theile take and teare,
 Hurling in euery paine of hell a peece.
 Hence, murtherer! thou shame to Israel! 60
 Foule letcher, drunkard, plague to heauen and earth!

He throwes at him.

IOAB. What! is it pietie in Dauids thoughts
 So to abhorre from lawes of pollicie
 In this extremitie of his distresse
 To giue his subiects cause of carelesnesse? 65
 Send hence the dog with sorrow to his graue!

DAUID. Why should the sons of Zeruia seeke to checke ¹
 His spirit which the Lord hath thus inspir'd?
 Behold, my sonne, which issued from my flesh,
 With equall furie seekes to take my life: 70
 How much more, then, the sonne of Iemini,—
 Cheefely since he doth nought but Gods command?
 It may be he will looke on me this day
 With gracious eyes, and for his cursing blesse
 The heart of Dauid in his bitterness. 75

SEMEI. What! doest thou fret my soule with sufferance?
 O that the soules of Isboseth and Abner,
 Which thou sentst swimming to their graues in blood,
 With wounds fresh-bleeding, gasping for reuenge,
 Were here to execute my burning hate! 80
 But I will hunt thy foot with curses still:
 Hence, monster, murtherer, mirror of contempt!

He throwes dust againe.

Enter AHIMAAS² and IONATHAN.

AHIM. Long life to Dauid! to his enemies, death!
 DA. Welcome, Ahimaas and Ionathan!
 What newes sends Cusay to thy lord the king? 85

¹ D. suggests the omission of *seeke to*; but B. is clearly right in maintaining that *Zeruia* is not a quadrisyllable.

² Isl. AHIMAAAS.

AHIM. Cusay, [my lord,] would wish my lord the king¹
 To passe the riuier Iordane presently,
 Least he and all his people perish here ;
 For wise Achitophel hath counsel'd Absalon
 To take aduantage of your wearie armes 90
 And come this night vpon you in the fields.

But yet the Lord hath made his counsell skorne,
 And Cusaies pollicie with praise preferd :
 Which was, to number euery Israelite
 And so assault you in their pride of strength. 95

IONAT. Abiathar besides intreats the king
 To send his men of warre against his sonne
 And hazard not his person in the field.

DAUID. Thankes to Abiathar, and to you both,
 And to my Cusay, whom the Lord requite ! 100

But tenne times treble thankes to his soft hand
 Whose pleasant touch hath made my heart to dance
 And play him praises in my zealous breast, —
 That turnd the counsell of Achitophel
 After the praiers of his seruants lips ! 105

Now will we passe the riuier all this night,
 And in the morning sound the voice of warre,
 The voice of bloody and vnkindly warre.

IOAB. Then tell vs how thou wilt diuide thy men,
 And who shall haue the speciall charge herein. 110

DAU. Ioab, thy-selfe shall for thy charge conduct
 The first third part of all my valiant men ;
 The second shall Abisaies valour lead ;
 The third faire Ithay, which I most should grace
 For comfort he hath done to Dauids woes ; 115
 And I my-selfe will follow in the midst.

ITH. That let not Dauid ; for, though we should fie,
 Tenne thousand of vs were not halfe so much
 Esteemd with Dauids enemies as himselfe :

¹ B. inserts *sovereign before lord* ; my insertion seems more in Peele's manner ; but it is by no means clear that in plays of this date metrically incomplete lines are to be filled out.

Thy people, louing thee, denie thee this. 120

DA. What seemes them best, then that will Dauid doe.

But now, my lords and captaines, heare his voice
That neuer yet pierst pittious heauen in vaine, —
Then let it not slip lightly through your eares :
For my sake, spare the young man Absalon ! 125

Ioab, thy-selfe didst once vse friendly words
To reconcile my heart incenst to him :
If then thy loue be to thy kinsman sound
And thou wilt proue a perfite Israelite,

Friend him with deeds, and touch no haire of him, 130
Not that faire haire with which the wanton winds
Delight to play and loues ¹ to make it curl,
Wherein the nightingales would build their nests
And make sweet bowers in euery golden tresse
To sing their louer euery night asleepe. 135

O, spoile not, Ioab, Ioues faire ornaments,
Which he hath sent to solace Dauids soule !
The best, ye see, my lords, are swift to sinne !
To sinne our feet are washt with milke of roes
And dried againe with coales of lightening ! 140

O Lord, thou seest the proudest sinnes poor slaue,
And with his bridle pulst him to the graue! — ²
For my sake then, spare louely Absalon !

ITH. Wee will, my lord, for thy sake fauour him.

Exeunt.

¹ D. *changes to love.*

² B. says: " *This line is hardly intelligible. I should prefer to read, That with his bridle pulls him, etc. A similar emendation was proposed by Collier.*" But 2 Kings, xix, 28, seems to lend some support to the present form of the text. The difference between Collier's emendation and B.'s is that Collier has *who* where B. has *that*.

[Act II. Scene VIII.]¹[*The house of ACHITOPHEL.*]ACHITOPHEL *solus, with a halter.*

ACHI. Now hath Achitophel orderd his house
 And taken leaue of euery pleasure there.
 Hereon depends² Achitophels delights
 And in this circle must his life be closde.
 The wise Achitophel, whose counsell prou'd 5
 Euer as sound for fortunate successe
 As if men askt the oracle of God,
 Is now vsde like the foole of Israel.
 Then set thy angrie soule vpon her wings,
 And let her flie into the shade of death! 10
 And for my death let heauen for-euer weepe,
 Making huge fouds vpon the land I leaue
 To rauish³ them and all their fairest fruits!
 Let all the sighs I breath'd for this disgrace
 Hang on my⁴ hedges like eternall mists 15
 As mourning-garments⁵ for their maisters death!
 Ope, earth, and take thy miserable sonne
 Into the bowels of thy cursed wombe!
 Once in a surfet thou diddest spue him forth;
 Now for fell hunger sucke him in againe, 20
 And be his bodie poyson to thy vaines! —
 And now, thou hellish instrument of Heauen,
 Once execute th' arrest of Ioues iust doome
 And stop his breast⁶ that curseth Israel!

*Exit.*¹ Scene xi in B.² D. *changes to depend.*³ B. *prefers ravage.*⁴ B. *suggests thy, "the word being addressed to the land I leaue." But*l. 16 *seems to put my beyond suspicion.*⁵ Isl. *misprints monrning.*⁶ D. *breath; but Kittredge remarks that breast is possible.*

[Act II. Scene IX.]¹[*The battle-field before the battle.*]ABSALON, AMASA, *with all his traine.*

ABS. Now for the crowne and throne of Israel
 To be confirmd with vertue of my sword
 And writ with Dauids bloud vpon the blade!
 Now, Ioue, let forth the golden firmament,
 And looke on him with all thy fierie eyes, 5
 Which thou hast made to giue their glories light!
 To shew thou louest the vertue of thy hand,
 Let fall a wreath of starres vpon my head
 Whose influence may gouern Israel
 With state exceeding all her other kings! — 10
 Fight, lords and captaines, that your soueraignes face
 May shine in honour brighter then the sunne,
 And with the vertues of my beautious raies
 Make this faire land as fruitfull as the fields
 That with sweet milke and hony ouerflow'd. 15
 God in the whissing of a pleasant wind
 Shall march vpon the tops of mulberie-trees
 To coole all breasts that burne with any greefes.
 As whylome, he was good to Moyses men,
 By day the Lord shall sit within a cloud, 20
 To guide your footsteps to the fields of ioy;
 And in the night a piller, bright as fire,
 Shall goe before you like a second sunne,
 Wherein the essence of his godhead is;
 That, day and night, you may be brought to peace, 25
 And neuer swarue from that delightsome path
 That leads your soules to perfect happinesse:
 This shall he doe for ioy, when I am king.
 Then fight, braue captaines, that these ioies may flie
 Into your bosomes with sweet victorie. 30

*Exeunt.*¹ Scene xii in B.

[Act II. Scene X.]¹

[A forest.]

The battell; and ABSALON hangs by the haire.

[ABS.] What angrie angel, sitting in these shades,
 Hath laid his cruell hands vpon my haire,
 And holds my body thus twixt heauen and earth?
 Hath Absalon no souldier neere his hand
 That may vntwine me this vnpleasant curle, 5
 Or wound this tree that rauisheth his lord?
 O God, behold, the glorie of thy hand
 And choisest fruit of natures workemanship
 Hang, like a rotten branch, vpon this tree,
 Fit for the axe and ready for the fire! 10
 Since thou withholdst all ordinarie helpe
 To lose my bodie from this bond of death,
 O, let my beautie fill these senceless plants
 With sence and power to lose me from this plague,
 And worke some wonder to preuent his death 15
 Whose life thou madst a speciall miracle.

[Enter] IOAB, with another SOULDIER.

SOULD. My lord, I saw the young prince Absalon
 Hang by the haire vpon a shadie oke,
 And could by no meanes get himselfe vnlosde.

IOAB. Why slewst thou not the wicked Absalon, 20
 That rebell to his father and to Heauen,
 That so I might haue giuen thee for thy paines
 Tenne siluer shekles² and a golden wast?

SOULD. Not for a thousand shekles² would I slay
 The sonne of Daud, whom his father chargd 25
 Nor thou, Abisay nor the sonne of Gath
 Should touch with stroke of deadly violence.
 The charge was giuen in hearing of vs all;

¹ Scene xiii in B.² Isl. sickles; *corr. silently* by Haw.

And, had I done it, then, I know, thy-selfe,
 Before thou wouldst abide the kings rebuke, 30
 Would haue accus'd me as a man of death.

IOAB. I must not now stand trifling here with thee.

[IOAB goes to ABSALON ; exit SOLDIER.]

ABS. Helpe, Ioab, helpe! O helpe thy Absalon!
 Let not thy angrie thoughts be laid in blood,
 In blood of him that sometimes nourisht thee 35
 And softned thy sweet heart with friendly loue.
 O, giue me once againe my fathers sight,
 My dearest father and my princely soueraigne,
 That, shedding teares of blood before his face,
 The ground may witnesse and the heauens record 40
 My last submission sound and full of ruth!

IOAB. Rebell to nature, hate to heauen and earth,
 Shall I giue helpe to him that thirsts the soule
 Of his deere father and my soueraigne lord?
 Now see, the Lord hath tangled in a tree 45
 The health and glorie of thy stubborne heart,
 And made thy pride curbd with a sencelesse plant!
 Now, Absalon, how doth the Lord regard
 The beautie wherevpon thy hope was built
 And which thou thoughtst his grace did glorie in? 50
 Findst thou not now with feare of instant death
 That God affects not any painted shape
 Or goodly personage, when the vertuous soule
 Is stuf with naught but pride and stubbornesse?
 But preach I to thee, while I should reuenge 55
 Thy cursed sinne that staineth Israel
 And makes her fields blush with her childrens blood?
 Take that as part of thy deserued plague,
 Which worthily no torment can inflict!

[Stabs him.]

ABS. O Ioab! Ioab! cruell, ruthlesse Ioab! 60
 Herewith thou woundst thy kingly soueraignes heart,
 Whose heauenly temper hates his childrens blood,

And will be sicke, I know, for Absalon.
 O my deere father, that thy melting eyes
 Might pierce this thicket to behold thy sonne, 65
 Thy deerest sonne gor'de with a mortall dart!
 Yet, Ioab, pittie me! pittie my father, Ioab ;
 Pittie his soules distresse that mournes my life
 And will be dead, I know, to hear my death!

IOAB. If he were so remorsefull of thy state, 70
 Why sent he me against thee with the sword?
 All Ioab meanes to pleasure thee withall
 Is to despatch thee quickly of thy paine.
 Hold, Absalon, Ioabs pittie is in this!
 In this, prouwd Absalon, is Ioabs loue! 75

He [stabs him again and] goes out.

ABS. Such loue, such pittie Israels God send thee,
 And for his loue to Daid pittie me!
 Ah, my deere¹ father, see thy bowels bleed,
 See death assault thy deerest Absalon!
 See, pittie, pardon, pray for Absalon! 80

Enter fve or sixe SOULDIORS.

[SOULD.] See where the rebell in his glorie hangs!
 Where is the vertue of thy beautie, Absalon?
 Will any of vs here now feare thy lookes,
 Or be in loue with that thy golden haire,
 Wherein was wrapt rebellion gainst thy sire 85
 And cords prepar'd to stop thy fathers breath?
 Our captaine, Ioab, hath begun to vs :
 And heres an end to thee and all thy sinnes!

[Stabs him; he dies.]

Come, let vs take the beauteous rebell downe,
 And in some ditch amids this darkesome wood 90
 Burie his bulke beneath a heape of stones
 Whose stonie heart did hunt his fathers death.

¹ Haw. fear.

[*They take him down.*]

Enter in triumph, with drum and ensigne IOAB, ABYSHAI, and SOULDIER, to ABSALON.

IOAB. Well, done, tall souldiers! Take the traitor downe,
 And in this myerie ditch interre his bones,
 Couering his hatefull breast with heapes of stones. 95
 This shadie thicket of darke Ephraim¹
 Shall euer lower on his cursed graue;
 Night-rauens and owles shall ring his fatall knell,
 And sit exclaiming on his damned soule;
 'There shall they heape their preyes of carrion 100
 Till all his graue be clad with stinking bones,
 That it may loth the sense of euery man:
 So shall his end breed horror to his name
 And to his traitrous fact eternall shame.

*Exeunt.*²

CHORUS.³

O dreadfull president of his iust doome
 Whose holy heart is neuer toucht with ruth
 Of fickle beautie or of glorious shapes,⁴
 But with the vertue of an vpright soule,
 Humble and zealous in his inward thoughts 5
 Though in his person loathsome and deform'd!
 Now, since this storie lends vs other store
 To make a third discourse of Dauids life,
 Adding thereto his most renowmed death
 And all their deaths that at his death he iudgd, 10
 Here we end this; and what here wants to please,
 We will supplie with treble willingnesse.

[*Exit.*]

¹ Isl. Ephrami; *corr. silently by Haw.*

² Isl. Exit; *corr. silently by Haw.*

³ Isl. 5 Chorus, which is especially puzzling in view of the other facts which indicate that we have only a part of this play; but l. 8 below has been altered, if what is now Act iii was once Act v.

⁴ D. changes to shape.

¹ ABSALON *with three or foure of his* SERUANTS or GENTLEMEN.

ABS. What boots it, Absalon, vnhappy Absalon, —
Sighing I say, what boots it, Absalon,
To haue disclos'd a farre more worthy wombe
Then

[Act III. Scene. I.]²

[DAUID's camp.]

Trumpets sound. Enter IOAB, AHIMAAS, CUSAY, AMASA, with all the rest.

IOAB. Souldiers of Israel and ye sonnes of Iuda
That haue contended in these irkesome broiles
And ript old Israels bowels with your swords,
The godlesse generall of your stubborne armes
Is brought by Israels helper to the graue, — 5
A graue of shame and skorne of all the tribes.
Now then, to saue your honours from the dust
And keepe your blouds in temper by your bones,
Let Ioabs ensigne shroud your manly heads ;
Direct your eies, your weapons and your hearts 10
To guard the life of Dauid from his foes.
Error hath maskt your much-too-froward³ minds,
And you haue sind against the chosen state,
Against his life for whom your liues are blest,
And followed an vsurper to the field, 15

¹ *This fragment is printed in Isl. at the bottom of G 4 v^o. The word Then is the catch-word for the next page, and its presence indicates that more of the copy than has been preserved to us was in the printer's hands, if not actually set up — how much more is of course unknown. But for the fact that the sheet following this is properly marked H, the presence of this catch-word, the heading of the CHORUS just above, and the peculiarities of the page-heading (see p. 421, n. 1) would tempt one to believe that some sheets were printed but not bound. It is a remarkable fact that leaf C 4 is not left unmarked, as is usual, but is marked I, and, strangely enough, the first word on the leaf is Then; but the confusion extends only to the marking, not to the text.*

² Scene xiv in B.

³ Isl. forward.

In whose iust death your deaths are threatened ;
 But Ioab pitties your disordered soules,
 And therefore offers pardon, peace and loue
 To all that will be friendly reconcil'de
 To Israels weale, to Dauid and to Heauen. 20

Amasa, thou art leader of the host
 That vnder Absalon haue raise'd their armes ;
 Then be a captaine wise and polliticke,
 Carefull and louing for thy souldiers liues,
 And lead them to this honourable league. 25

AMASA. I will ;¹ at least Ile doe my best.
 And for the gracious offer thou hast made
 I giue thee thanks as much as for my head. —
 Then, you deceiu'd poore soules of Israel,
 Since now ye see the errors you incurd, 30
 With thanks and due submission be appeas'd,
 And, as ye see your captaines president,
 Here cast we then our swords at Ioabs feet,
 Submitting with all zeale and reuerence
 Our goods and bodies to his gracious hands. 35

[*The rebels kneel.*]²

IOAB. Stand vp and take ye all your swords againe !
 Dauid and Ioab shall be blest herein.

*All stand vp.*³

AHIM. Now let me go enforme my lord the king
 How God hath freed him from his enemies.

IOAB. Another time, Ahimaas ; not now. 40
 But, Cusay, goe thy-selfe and tell the king
 The happie message of our good successe.

CUS. I will, my lord ; and thanke thee for thy grace.

Exit CUSAY.

¹ D. suggests Ioab, I will, or I will, my lord ; B. prints I will ; [I will ;] ;
 but see p. 468, n. 1.

² Supplied by B.

³ In Isl. Haw. this precedes l. 36 ; D. B. put it after l. 36 (D., without note.)

AHIM. What if thy seruant should goe to, my lord?

IOAB. What newes hast thou to bring, since he is gone? 45

AHIM. Yet doe Ahimaas so much content

That he may run about so sweet a charge! *Exit.*¹

IOAB. Run, if thou wilt; and peace be with thy steps. —

Now follow, that you may salute the king

With humble hearts and reconciled soules. 50

AMA. We follow, Ioab, to our gracious king;

And him our swords shall honour to our deaths.

Exeunt.

[Act III. Scene II.]²

[DAUID'S camp.]

DAUID, BETHSABE, SALOMON, NATHAN, ADONIA, CHILEAB, *with their traine.*

BETH. What meanes my lord, the lampe of Israel,

From whose bright eyes all eyes receiue their light,

To dim the glory of his sweet aspects³

And paint his countenance with his hearts distresse?

Why should his thoughts retaine a sad conceit, 5

When euery pleasure kneeles before his throne

And sues for sweet acceptance with his Grace?

Take but your lute, and make the mountaines dance,

Retriue the sunnes sphere and restraine the clouds, 10

Giue eares to trees, make sauage lyons tame,

Impose still silence to the loudest winds,

And fill the fairest day with foulest stormes:

Then why should passions of much meaner power

Bear head against the heart of Israel?

DA. Faire Bersabe, thou mightst increase the strength 15

Of these thy arguments drawne from my skill

By vrging thy sweet sight to my conceits,

Whose vertue euer seru'd for sacred baulme

¹ Of course this stage-direction comes in too early, as is usual in the old editions.

² Scene xv in B.

³ D. B. change ~~to~~ aspect.

To cheere my pinings past all earthly ioies ;
 But, Bethsabe, the Daughter of the Highest, 20
 Whose beautie builds the towers of Israel,
 Shee that in chaines of pearle and vnicorne
 Leads at her traine the ancient golden-world, —
 The world that Adam held in paradise,
 Whose breath refineth all infectious aires 25
 And makes the meddowes smile at her repaire, —
 Shee, shee,¹ my dearest Bethsabe,
 Faire Peace, the goddesse of our graces here,
 Is fled the streets of faire Ierusalem,
 The fields of Israel and the heart of Daid, 30
 Leading my comforts in her golden chaines
 Linckt to the life and soule of Absalon.

BETH. Then is the pleasure of my soueraignes heart
 So wrapt within the bosome of that sonne
 That Salomon, whom Israels God affects 35
 And gaue the name vnto him for his loue,
 Should be no salue to comfort Dauids soule?

DAU. Salomon, my loue, is Dauids lord,²
 Our God hath nam'd him lord of Israel :
 In him — for that, and since he is thy sonne — 40
 Must Daid needs be pleased at the heart,
 And he shall surely sit vpon my throne ;
 But Absalon, the beautie of my bones,
 Faire Absalon, the counterfeit of loue,
 Sweet Absalon, the image of content, 45
 Must claime a portion in his fathers care
 And be in life and death King Dauids sonne.

NAT. Yet, as my lord hath said, let Salomon reign,

¹ D. suggests She, she, alas!

² D. thinks the text corrupt; B. proposes Salomon, my love, is David's lovéd son; Sprenger (*loc. cit.*) proposes Salomon, my love, he that is David's lord. *Commenting on Sprenger, I proposed* (Engl. Stud., XVIII, 301) Nay, Salomon, &c., but held and still hold that this is a nine-syllabled verse. To the subject, there treated in a brief note, I shall recur in vol. III of this book, in the notes on this play.

Whom God in naming hath annointed king,
 Now is he apt to learne th' eternall lawes, 50
 Whose knowledge being rooted in his youth
 Will beautifie his age with glorious fruits ;
 While Absalon, incenst with gracelesse pride,
 Vsurps and staines the kingdome with his sinne.
 Let Salomon be made thy staffe of age, 55
 Faire Israels rest, and honour of thy race.

DA. Tell me, my Salomon: wilt thou imbrace
 Thy fathers precepts graued in thy heart,
 And satisfie my zeale to thy renowne
 With practise of such sacred principles 60
 As shall concerne the state of Israel?

SAL. My royall father, if the heauenly zeale
 Which for my welfare feeds vpon your soule
 Were not sustaind by vertue of mine own, —
 If the sweet accents of your cheerefull voice 65
 Should not each hower beat vpon mine eares
 As sweetly as the breath of heauen to him
 That gaspeth scorched with the summers sunne,
 I should be guiltie of vnpardoned sinne,
 Fearing the plague of Heauen and shame of earth ; 70
 But, since I vow my-selfe to learne the skill
 And holy secrets of his mightie hand
 Whose cunning tunes the musicke of my soule,
 It would content me, father, first to learne
 How th' Eternall fram'd the firmament, 75
 Which bodies lead¹ their influence by fire,
 And which are fild with hoarie winters yse,²
 What signe is raignie, and what starre is faire,
 Why by the rules of true proportion
 The yeare is still diuided into months, 80
 The months to daies, the daies to certaine howers,
 What fruitfull race shall fill the future world,
 Or for what time shall this round building stand,

¹ D.'s emendation, *lend*, is adopted, though with some doubt, by B.

² *Misprinted use in Haw.*

What magistrates, what kings shall keepe in awe
Mens minds with bridles of th' eternall law. 85

DA. Wade not too farre, my boy, in waues too¹ deepe!
The feeble eyes of our aspiring thoughts
Behold things present and record things past;
But things to come exceed our humane reach,
And are not painted yet in angels eyes: 90

For those, submit thy sence, and say: "Thou Power
That now art framing of the future world,
Knowest all to come, not by the course of heauen,
By fraile coniectures of inferiour signes,
By monstrous fLOUDS, by flights and flockes of birds, 95
By bowels of a sacrificed beast,

Or by the figures of some hidden art,
But by a true and naturall presage,
Laying the ground and perfect architect²
Of all our actions now before thine eyes 100
From Adam to the end of Adams seed.

O Heauen, protect my weakenesse with thy strength!
So looke on me that I may view thy face
And see these secrets written in thy browes!
O Sun, come dart thy raies vpon my moone, 105
That now mine eyes, eclipsed to the earth,

May brightly be refin'd and shine to heauen!
Transforme me from this flesh, that I may liue
Before my death, regenerate with thee!

O thou great God, rauish my earthly sprite, 110
That for the time a more then humane skill
May feed the organons of all my sence,
That, when I thinke, thy thoughts may be my guide,
And when I speake, I may be made by choice
The perfect eccho of thy heauenly voice!" — 115

Thus say, my sonne, and thou shalt learne them all.

SALO. A secret fury rauisheth my soule,

¹ D. *changes to so.*

² D. *suggests* archetype; B. archi'ture; Sprenger *changes and to a; I have shown in Engl. Stud., XVIII, 302, that architect is right.*

Lifting my mind aboue her humane bounds,
 And, as the eagle, roused from her stand
 With violent hunger, towring in the aire 120
 Seaseth her feathered prey and thinkes to feed,
 But, seeing then a cloud beneath her feet,
 Lets fall the foule, and is emboldened
 With eies intentiue to bedare the sun,
 And stieth close vnto his stately sphere, — 125
 So Salomon, mounted on the burning wings
 Of zeale deuine, lets fall his mortall food
 And cheeres his sences with celestiall aire,
 Treads in the golden, starrie labyrinth
 And holds his eyes fixt on Iehouaes browes. 130
 Good father, teach me further what to doe.

NATH. See, Dauid, how his haughtie spirit mounts,
 Euen now of heigth to wield a diademe :
 Then make him promise, that he may succeed,
 And rest old Israels bones from broiles of warre. 135

DAUID. Nathan, thou prophet sprung from Iesses root,
 I promise thee and louely Bethsabe
 My Salomon shall gouerne after me.

BETH. He that hath toucht thee with this righteous
 thought
 Preserue the harbour of thy thoughts in peace ! 140

Enter MESSENGER.

MESS. My lord, thy seruants of the watch haue seene
 One running hitherward from forth the warres.

DAUID. If hee bee come alone, he bringeth newes.

MESS. Another hath thy seruant seene, my lord,
 Whose running much resembles Sadocs sonne. 145

DA. He is a good man, and good tidings brings.

Enter AHIMAAS.

AHIM. Peace and content be with my lord the king,
 Whom Israels God hath blest with victory !

DA. Tell me, Ahimaas : liues my Absalon ?

AHIMAAS. I saw a troupe of souldiours gathered,
But know not what the tumult might import. 150

DAU. Stand by, vntill some other may informe
The heart of Dauid with a happie truth.

Enter CUSAY.

CUSAY. Happinesse and honour liue with Dauids soule,
Whom God hath blest with conquest of his foes! 155

DAUID. But, Cusay, liues the yong man Absalon?

CUSAY. The stubborne enemies to Dauids peace,
And all that cast their darts against his crowne,
Fare euer like the young man Absalon!
For, as he rid the woods of Ephraim, — 160

Which fought for thee as much as all thy men, —
His haire was tangled in a shadie oake,
And, hanging there, by Ioab and his men
Sustained the stroke of well-deserued death.

DAUID. Hath Absalon sustained the stroke of death? 165
Die, Dauid, for the death of Absalon,

And make these cursed newes the bloody darts
That, through his bowels, rip thy wretched¹ breast!
Hence, Dauid, walke the solitarie woods,
And in some cædars shade the thunder slew 170

And fire from heauen hath made his branches blacke
Sit mourning the decease of Absalon!

Against the body of that blasted plant
In thousand shiuers breake thy yuorie lute,
Hanging thy stringlesse harpe vpon his boughs; 175

And through the hollow, saplesse, sounding truncke
Bellow the torments that perplexe thy soule!

There let the winds sit sighing till they burst!
Let tempest, mufled with a cloud of pitch,
Threaten the forrests with her hellish face, 180

And, mounted fiercely on her yron wings,
Rend vp the wretched engine by the roots
That held my dearest Absalon to death!

¹ *Misprinted wtetched in Isl.*

Then let them tosse my broken lute to heauen,
 Euen to his hands that beats me with the strings, 185
 To shew how sadly his poore sheepeheard sings!

He goes to his pauillion and sits close a-while.

BETH. Die, Bethsabe, to see thy Daudid mourne,
 To heare his tunes of anguish and of hell!
 O helpe! my Daudid, helpe thy Bethsabe,

She kneeles downe.

Whose heart is pierced with thy breathie¹ swords, 190
 And bursts with burthen of tenne thousand greefes!
 Now sits thy sorrowes sucking of my bloud :
 O, that it might be poison to their powers,
 And that their lips might draw my bosome drie,
 So Daudids loue might ease him, though she die! 195

NAT. These violent passions come not from aboue.
 Daudid and Bethsabe offend the Highest
 To mourne in this immeasurable sort.

DAU. O Absalon, Absalon! O my sonne, my sonne!
 Would God that I had died for Absalon! 200
 But he is dead! ah, dead! Absalon is dead,
 And Daudid liues to die for Absalon!

He lookes forth, and at the end sits close againe.

Enter IOAB, ABISAY, ITHAY, with their traine.

IOAB. Why lies the queene so prostrate on the ground?
 Why is this companie so tragicke-hew'd?
 Why is the king now absent from his men, 205
 And marcheth not in triumph through the gates?

He vnfolde the pauillion.

Daudid, awake, if sleepe haue shut thine eies,
 Sleepe of affection, that thou canst not see
 The honour offerd to the victors head.
 Ioab brings conquest pierced on his speare 210
 And ioyn from all the tribes of Israel.

¹ Mitford, reviewing D.'s first edition, proposed breathed words, but D. properly refused to change the present reading.

DAU. Thou man of bloud! thou sepulchre of death,
 Whose marble breast intombe[s]¹ my bowels quicke,
 Did I not charge thee, nay intreat thy hand
 Euen for my sake to spare my Absalon? 215
 And hast thou now, in spite of Dauids health
 And skorne to do my heart some happinesse,
 Giuen him the sword, and spilt his purple soule?

IOAB. What! irkes it Dauid that he victor breaths,
 That Iuda and the fields of Israel 220
 Should cleanse their faces from their childrens bloud?
 What! art thou wearie of thy royall rule?

Is Israels throne a serpent in thine eyes,
 And he that sets thee there so farre from thanks
 That thou must curse his seruant for his sake? 225

Hast thou not said that as the morning light,
 The cloudlesse morning, so should be thine house,
 And not as flowers by the brightest raine,
 Which growes vp quickly and as quickly fades?
 Hast thou not said the wicked are as thornes, 230

That cannot be preserued² with the hand,
 And that the man shall touch them must be armd
 With coats of yron and garments made of steele
 Or with the shaft of a defenced speare?

And art thou angrie he is now cut off 235
 That led the guiltlesse swarming to their deaths,
 And was more wicked then an host of men?

Aduance thee from thy melancholy denne,
 And decke thy bodie with thy blisfull robes,
 Or, by the Lord that swaies the heauen I swear 240
 Ile lead thine armies to another king

Shall cheere them for their princely chiuallrie,
 And not sit daunted, frowning, in the darke,
 When his faire lookes, with oyle and wine refresht,
 Should dart into their bosomes gladsome beames, 245
 And fill their stomackes with triumphant feasts,
 That when elsewhere sterne warre shall sound his trumpe

¹ *Corr. silently by Haw.*

² *D. suggests repressed.*

And call another battaile to the field,
 Fame still may bring thy valiant souldiers home,
 And for their seruice happily confesse 250
 She wanted worthy trumpets to sound their prowess.
 Take thou this course, and lue; refuse, and die!

ABISAY. Come, brother; let him sit there till he sincke:
 Some other shall aduance the name of Ioab.

Offers to goe out.

BETH. O, stay, my lords! stay; Dauid mournes no more, 255
 But riseth to giue honour to your acts.

Stay. He riseth vp.

DAUID. Then happie art thou, Dauids fairest sonne,
 That, freed from the yoke of earthly toiles
 And sequestred from sence of humane sinnes,
 Thy soule shall ioy the sacred cabinet 260
 Of those deuine ideas that present
 Thy changed spirit with a heauen of blisse.
 Then thou art gone! ah, thou art gone, my sonne!
 To heauen, I hope, my Absalon is gone.
 Thy soule there plac'd in honour, of the saints 265
 Or angels, clad with immortalitie,
 Shall reape a seuenfold grace for all thy greefes.
 Thy eyes, now no more eyes but shining stars,
 Shall decke the flaming heauens with nouell lampes.
 There shalt thou tast the drinke of seraphins 270
 And cheere thy feelings with archangels food.
 Thy day of rest, thy holy Sabbath day
 Shall be eternall. And, the curtaine drawne,
 Thou shalt behold thy soueraigne face to face,
 With wonder knit in triple vnitie, 275
 Vnitie infinite and innumerable. —
 Courage, braue captaines! Ioabs tale hath stird
 And made the suit of Israel preferd.

IOAB. Brauely resolued, and spoken like a king!
 Now may old Israel and his daughters sing! 280

Exeunt.

THE SPANISH TRAGE-

die, Containing the lamentable
end of *Don Horatio*, and *Bel-imperia*:
with the pittifull death of
olde *Hieronimo*.

Newly corrected and amended of fuch groffe faults as
paffed in the firft imprefion.

Kyd popular, like Marlowe
thought by some he wrote
firft version of "Hamlet".
Also hand in "Titus Andronicus"
Same bloody flavor as this play
Held stage for 40 yrs. Ridiculed
for 30 yrs. (1557-1595 his date)

At London

Printed by *Edward Allde*, for

Edward White

Interscay of plot stronger than
class. Some char.

Several scenes in fine print seem to have
been put in by Ben Jonson.

7. chief char. is his love for his sons.
Will do anything for him.

Printed from the earliest extant edition, the titlepage of which is here reproduced, though not in facsimile. This edition is undated; it has been called the second edition, and so perhaps it is, but the titlepage proves only that it is not the first. In the footnotes it is indicated by A. Occasionally the readings of the editions of 1618, 1623, 1633 are given in the footnotes, the two first on the authority of Hawkins; but as these editions rarely, if ever, present a better text than A., their readings are in general omitted. There is no list of *Dramatis Personae* in A. or 1633.

[DRAMATIS PERSONAE.

GHOST OF ANDREA } *the Chorus.*
REVENGE }
KING OF SPAIN.
VICEROY OF PORTUGAL.
DON CIPRIAN, *duke of Castile.*
HIERONIMO, *knight-marshall of Spain.* *best*
BALTHAZAR, *the Viceroy's son.*
LORENZO, *Don Ciprian's son.*
HORATIO, *Hieronimo's son.*
ALEXANDRO } *lords of Portugal.*
VILLUPPO }
PEDRINGANO, *servant of Bel-imperia.*
SERBERINE, *servant of Balthazar.*
Spanish General, Portuguese Ambassador, Old Man, Painter
Page, Hangman, Citizens, Soldiers, Attendants, &c.
BEL-IMPERIA, *Lorenzo's sister.*
ISABELLA, *Hieronimo's wife.*

SCENE: *Spain; and Portugal.]*

[THE SPANISH TRAGEDIE.]

Actvs Primvs.

Enter the GHOAST OF ANDREA, and with him REUENGE.

GHOAST. When this eternall substance of my soule
Did liue imprisond in my wanton¹ flesh,
Ech in their function seruing others need,
I was a courtier in the Spanish court :
My name was Don Andrea ; my discent, 5
Though not ignoble, yet inferiour far
To gracious fortunes of my tender youth,
For there, in prime and pride of all my yeeres,
By duteous seruice and deseruing loue,
In secret I possest a worthy dame, 10
Which hight sweet Bel-imperia by name.
But in the haruest of my sommer ioyes
Deaths winter nipt the blossomes of my blisse,
Forcing diuorce betwixt my loue and me ;
For in the late conflict with Portingale 15
My valour drew me into dangers mouth
Till life to death made passage through my wounds.
When I was slaine, my soule descended straight
To passe the flowing streame of Acheron ;
But churlish Charon, only boatman there, 20
Said that, my rites of buriall not performde,
I might not sit amongst his passengers.
Ere Sol had slept three nights in Thetis lap,

¹ 1618, '23, '33, wonted.

And slakte his smoaking charriot in her floud,
 By Don ¹ Horatio, our knight-marshals sonne, 25
 My funerals and obsequies were done.
 Then was the feriman of hell content
 To passe me ouer to the slimie strond
 That leades to fell Auernus ougly waues.
 There, pleasing Cerberus with honied speech, 30
 I past the perils of the formost porch.
 Not farre from hence, amidst ten thousand soules,
 Sate Minos, Eacus and Rhadamant ;
 To whome no sooner gan I make approach,
 To craue a pasport for my wandring ghost, 35
 But Minos in grauen leaues of lotterie
 Drew forth the manner of my life and death.
 " This knight," quoth he, " both liu'd and died in loue ;
 And for his loue tried fortune of the warres ;
 And by warres fortune lost both loue and life." 40
 " Why then," said Eacus, " conuay him hence
 To walke with louers in our fields of loue
 And spend the course of euerlasting time
 Vnder greene mirtle-trees and cipresse shades." 45
 " No, no!" said Rhadamant, " it were not well
 With louing soules to place a martialist.
 He died in warre, and must to martiall fields,
 Where wounded Hector liues in lasting paine,
 And Achilles Mermedons do scoure the plaine." 50
 Then Minos, mildest censor of the three,
 Made this deuice, to end the difference :
 " Send him," quoth he, " to our infernall king,
 To dome him as best seemes his Maiestie."
 To this effect my pasport straight was drawne.
 In keeping on my way to Plutos court 55
 Through dreadfull shades² of euer-glooming³ night,
 I saw more sights then thousand tongues can tell
 Or pennes can write or mortall harts can think.

¹ A. 'Don.

² 1618, shapcs.

³ 1618, '23, '33, ever-blooming.

Three waies there were : that on the right hand side
 Was ready way vnto the foresaid fields 60
 Where louers liue and bloudie martialists,
 But either sort containd within his bounds ;
 The left hand path, declining fearfully,
 Was ready downfall to the deepest hell,
 Where bloudie Furies shakes their whips of steele, 65
 And poore Ixion turnes an endles wheele,
 Where vsurers are choakt with melting golde,
 And wantons are imbraste with ougly snakes,
 And murderers grone¹ with neuer-killing wounds,
 And periurde wights scalded in boyling lead, 70
 And all foule sinnes with torments ouerwhelmd ;
 Twixt these two waies I trod the middle path,
 Which brought me to the faire Elizian greene,
 In midst whereof there standes a stately towre,
 The walles of brasse, the gates of adamant. 75
 Heere finding Pluto with his Proserpine,
 I shewed my pasport, humbled on my knee.
 Whereat faire Proserpine began to smile,
 And² begd that onely she might giue my doome.
 Pluto was pleasd, and sealde it with a kisse. 80
 Forthwith, Reuenge, she rounded thee in th' eare,
 And bad thee lead me through the gates of horn,³
 Where dreames haue passage in the silent night.
 No sooner had she spoke but we were heere,
 I wot not how, in twinkling of an eye. 85
 REUENGE. Then know, Andrea, that thou art ariu'd
 Where thou shalt see the author of thy death,
 Don Balthazar, the prince of Portingale,
 Depriu'd of life by Bel-imperia :
 Heere sit we downe to see the misterie, 90
 And serue for Chorus in this tragedie.

¹ 1618, greeve, according to Haw. ; but he modernizes even his variant readings ; the reading, greene, of 1623, '33, suggests that 1618 has greeue.

² 1618, '23, '33, I.

³ A. Hor ; 1618, '23, '33, Horror ; corr. by Haw.

[Act First. Scene First.]

[*The Spanish Court.*]*Enter SPANISH KING, GENERALL, CASTILE, HIERONIMO.*

KING. Now say, l[ord] generall : how fares our campe?

GEN. All wel, my soueraigne liege, except some few
That are deceast by fortune of the warre.KING. But what portends¹ thy cheerefull countenance
And posting to our presence thus in hast? 5
Speak, man : hath fortune giuen vs victorie?

GEN. Victorie, my liege, and that with little losse.

KING. Our Portingals will pay vs tribute then?

GEN. Tribute, and wonted homage therewithall.

KING. Then blest be Heauen, and Guider of the heauens, 10
From whose faire influence such iustice flowes!CAST. *O multum dilecte Deo, tibi militat aether,
Et coniuratae² curuato poplite³ gentes
Succumbunt : recti soror⁴ est victoria iuris!*KING. Thanks to my louing brother of Castile. 15
But, generall, vnfolde in breefe discourse
Your forme of battell and your warres successe,
That, adding all the pleasure of thy newes
Vnto the height of former happines,
With deeper wage and greater dignitie 20
We may reward thy blisfull chialrie.GEN. Where Spaine and Portingale do ioynly knit
Their frontiers, leaning on each others bound,
There met our armies in their proud aray :
Both furnisht well, both full of hope and feare, 25
Both menacing alike with daring showes,¹ 1618, '23, '33, pretends, which Hazlitt, in his edition of Dodsley, says may be right, because pretend means intend.² A. coniurat œ.³ A. poplito.⁴ A. rectiforor ; Haw. prints this Latin correctly, but gives no variants ; it is correctly printed in 1633, except Succumbant for Succumbunt.

Both vaunting sundry colours of deuce,
 Both cheerly sounding trumpets, drums and fifes,
 Both raising dreadfull clamors to the skie,
 That valleis, hils, and riuers made rebound 30
 And heauen it-selfe was frighted with the sound.
 Our battels both were pitcht in squadron forme,
 Each corner strongly fenst with wings of shot ;
 But, ere we ioynd and came to push of pike,
 I brought a squadron of our readiest shot 35
 From out our rearward to begin the fight ;
 They brought another wing to incounter vs ;
 Meane-while our ordinance ¹ plaid on either side,
 And captaines stroue to haue their valours tride.
 Don ² Pedro, their chiefe horsemens corlonell, ³ 40
 Did with his cornet ⁴ brauely make attempt
 To break the order of our battell rankes ;
 But Don Rogero, worthy man of warre,
 Marcht forth against him with our musketiers
 And stopt the mallice of his fell approach. 45
 While they maintaine hot skirmish too and fro,
 Both battailes ioyne and fall to handie blowes,
 Their violent shot resembling th' oceans rage
 When, roaring lowd and with a swelling tide,
 It beats vpon the rampiers of huge rocks, 50
 And gapes to swallow neighbour-bounding lands.
 Now, while Bellona rageth heere and there,
 Thick stormes of bullets ran ⁵ like winters haile,
 And shiuered launces darke ⁶ the troubled aire ;
Pede pes & cuspide cuspis, 55
Arma⁷ sonant armis⁸ vir petiturque viro ;
 On euery side drop ⁹ captaines to the ground,
 And souldiers, some ill-maimde, ¹⁰ some slaine outright :

¹ 1633, ordnance, to which Haw. corrects silently.

² A. 'Don. ⁶ 1618, '23, '33, dark'd.

³ 1633, coronell ; Haw. colonel, without note.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, coronet. ⁷ A. Anni. ⁸ A. annis.

⁵ Qy. run. ⁹ 1618, '23, '33, dropt.

¹⁰ 1618, '23, '33, And souldiers ly maim'd.

Heere falles a body sundred from his head ;
 There legs and armes lye bleeding on the grasse, 60
 Mingled with weapons and vnboweld steeds,
 That scattering ouer-spread the purple plaine.
 In all this turmoyle, three long hovres and more
 The victory to neither part inclinde,
 Till Don Andrea with his braue launciers 65
 In their maine battell made so great a breach
 That, halfe dismaid, the multitude retirde.
 But Balthazar, the Portingales young prince,
 Brought^t rescue and encouragde them to stay.
 Heere-hence the fight was eagerly renewd, 70
 And in that conflict was Andrea slaine, —
 Braue man-at-armes, but weake to Balthazar.
 Yet, while the prince, insulting ouer him,
 Breathd out proud vaunts, sounding to our reproch,
 Friendship and hardie valour ioynd in one 75
 Prickt forth Horatio, our knight-marshals sonne,
 To challenge forth that prince in single fight.
 Not long betweene these twaine the fight indurde,
 But straight the prince was beaten from his horse
 And forcst to yeeld him prisoner to his foe. 80
 When he was taken, all the rest they fled,
 And our carbines pursued them to the death,
 Till, Phoebus waning¹ to the western deepe,
 Our trumpeters were chargde to sound retreat.
 KING. Thanks, good l[ord] generall, for these good newes! 85
 And, for some argument of more to come,
 Take this and weare it² for thy soueraignes sake.

Give him his chaine.

But tell me now : hast thou confirmd a peace?

GEN. No peace, my liege, but peace conditionall,
 That, if with homage tribute be well paid, 90
 The fury of your forces wilbe staide.
 And to this peace their viceroy hath subscribde,

¹ 1633, Haw. waving.

² 1633 omits it.

Giue the K[ING] a paper.

And made a solemne vow that during life
His tribute shalbe truely paid to Spaine.

KING. These words, these deeds become thy person wel. 95
But now, knight-marshall, frolike with thy king,
For tis thy sonne that winnes this battels prize.

HIERO. Long may he liue to serue my soueraigne liege!
And soone decay vnlesse he serue my liege!

A tucket¹ a-farre off.

KING. Nor thou nor he shall dye without reward. 100
What means this warning of this trumpets sound?

GEN. This tels me that your Graces men of warre,
Such as warres fortune hath reseru'd from death,
Come marching on towards your royall seate,
To show themselues before your Maiestie; 105
For so I gaue in² charge at my depart.
Whereby by demonstration shall appeare
That all, except three hundred or few more,
Are safe returnd and by their foes inricht.

The armie enters, BALTHAZAR betweene LORENZO and HORATIO, captiue.

KING. A gladsome sight! I long to see them heere. 110

They enter and passe by.

Was that the warlike prince of Portingale
That by our nephew was in triumph led?

GEN. It was, my liege, the prince of Portingale.

KING. But what was he that on the other side
Held him by th' arme as partner of the prize? 115

HIERO. That was my sonne, my gracious soueraigne;
Of whome though from his tender infancie
My louing thoughts did neuer hope but well,
He neuer pleasd his fathers eyes till now,
Nor fild my hart with ouercloying ioyes. 120

¹ 1618, '23, '33, trumpet.

² 1618, '23, '33, them: a mere unauthorized modernization, like many of the variants of these editions,

KING. Goe, let them march once more about these walles,
That staying them we may conferre and talke
With our braue prisoner and his double guard.

[Exit a MESSENGER.]

Hieronimo, it greatly pleaseth vs
That in our victorie thou haue a share 125
By vertue of thy worthy sonnes exploit.

Enter againe.

Bring hether the young prince of Portingale!
The rest martch on, but, ere they be dismist,
We will bestow on euery souldier
Two duckets, and on euery leader ten, 130
That they may know our largesse welcomes them.¹

Exeunt all [the army] but BAL[THAZAR], LOR[ENZO], HOR[ATIO].²

[KING.] Welcome, Don Balthazar! welcome nephew!
And thou, Horatio, thou art welcome too!
Young prince, although thy fathers hard misdeedes
In keeping backe the tribute that he owes 135
Deserue but euill measure at our hands,
Yet shalt thou know that Spaine is honorable.

BALT. The trespasse that my father made in peace
Is now controlde by fortune of the warres;
And cards once dealt, it bootes not aske why so. 140
His men are slaine, — a weakening to his realme;
His colours ceaz'd, — a blot vnto his name;
His sonne distrest, — a corsiue to his hart:
These punishments may cleare his late offence.

KING. I, Balthazar, if he obserue this truce, 145
Our peace will grow the stronger for these warres.
Meane-while liue thou, though not in libertie,
Yet free from bearing any seruile yoake;
For in our hearing thy deserts were great,
And in our sight thy-selfe art gracious. 150

BALT. And I shall studie to deserue this grace.

¹ In A. 1633, Haw. these three lines are so arranged as to end with duckets, know, them.

² A. Flor.

KING. But tell me, — for their holding makes me doubt :
To which of these twaine art thou prisoner?

LOR. To me, my liege.

HOR. To me, my soueraigne.

LOR. This hand first tooke his courser by the raines. 155

HOR. But first my launce did put him from his horse.

LOR. I ceaz'd his weapon and enioyde it first.

HOR. But first I forc'd him lay his weapons downe.

KING. Let goe his arme, vpon our priuledge !

Let him goe.

Say, worthy prince : to whether didst thou yeeld? 160

BALT. To him in curtesie ; to this perforce :

He spake me faire, this other gaue me strokes ;

He promise life, this other threatned death ;

He wan my loue, this other conquerd me ;

And, truth to say, I yeeld my-selfe to both. 165

HIERO. But that I know¹ your Grace for iust and wise,

And might seeme partiall in this difference,

Inforc't by nature and by law of armes,

My tongue should plead for young Horatios right.

He hunted well that was a Lyons death, 170

Not he that in a garment wore his skin ;

So hares may pull dead Lyons by the beard.

KING. Content thee, marshall ; thou shalt haue no wrong,

And for thy sake thy sonne shall want no right.

Will both abide the censure of my doome? 175

LOR. I craue no better then your Grace awards.

HOR. Nor I, although I sit beside my right.

KING. Then by my iudgement thus your strife shall end :

You both deserue and both shall haue reward.

Nephew, thou tookst his weapons² and his horse : 180

His weapons and his horse are thy reward.

Horatio, thou didst force him first to yeeld :

His ransome therefore is thy valours fee ;

Appoint the sum as you shall both agree.

¹ A. knaw ; 1633, know.

² So 1633 ; A. weapon.

But, nephew, thou shalt haue the prince in guard, 185
 For thine estate best fitteth such a guest;
 Horatios house were small for all his traine.
 Yet, in regarde thy substance passeth his,
 And that iust guerdon may befall desert,
 To him we yeeld the armour of the prince. 190
 How likes Don Balthazar of this deuice?

BALT. Right well, my liege, if this prouizo were :
 That Don Horatio beare vs company,
 Whome I admire and loue for chiuallrie.

KING. Horatio, leaue him not that loues thee so. 195
 Now let vs hence, to see our souldiers paide,
 And feast our prisoner as our friendly guest.

Exeunt.

[Act First. Scene Second.]

[Portugal: the VICEROY'S palace.]

Enter VICEROY, ALEXANDRO, VILLUPPO.¹

VICE. Is our embassadour dispatcht for Spaine?

ALEX. Two daies, my liege, are past since his depart.

VICE. And tribute paiment gone along with him?

ALEX. I, my good lord.

VICE. Then rest we heere a-while in our vnrest; 5
 And feed our sorrowes with some inward sighes,
 For deepest cares break neuer into teares.
 But wherefore sit I in a regall throne?
 This better fits a wretches endles moane.
 Yet this is higher then my fortunes reach, 10
 And therefore better then my state deserues.

Falles to the ground.

I, I, this earth, image of mellancholly,
 Seeks him whome fates adiudge² to miserie!

¹ 1633 regularly spells this name with i instead of u.

² A. aduidge.

Heere let me lye! Now am I¹ at the lowest!
Qvi iacet in terra non habet vnde cadat. 15
In me consumpsit vires fortuna nocendo,
Nil² superest vt iam possit obesse magis.
 Yes, Fortune may bereaue me of my crowne, —
 Heere, take it now ; let Fortune doe her worst,
 She will not rob me of this sable weed. 20
 O, no, she enuies none but pleasant things.
 Such is the folly of despightfull chance,
 Fortune is blinde and sees not my deserts,
 So is she deafe and heares not my laments ;
 And, could she heare, yet is she wilfull mad, 25
 And therefore will not pittie my distresse.
 Suppose that she could pittie me, what then?
 What helpe can be expected at her hands
 Whose foot is³ standing on a rowling stone
 And minde more mutable then fickle windes? 30
 Why waile I, then, wheres hope of no redresse?
 O, yes, complaining makes my greefe seeme lesse.
 My late ambition hath distaind my faith,
 My breach of faith occasioned bloudie warres,
 Those bloudie warres haue spent my treasur[i]e, 35
 And with my treasur[i]e my peoples blood,
 And with their blood my ioy and best beloued, —
 My best beloued, my sweet and onely sonne !
 O, wherefore went I not to warre my-selfe?
 The cause was mine ; I might haue died for both. 40
 My yeeres were mellow, his but young and greene :
 My death were naturall, but his was forced.

ALEX. No doubt, my liege, but still the prince suruiues.

VICE. Suruiues ! I, where ?

ALEX. In Spaine, a prisoner by mischance of warre. 45

VICE. Then they haue slaine him for his fathers fault.

ALEX. That were a breach to common law of armes.

VICE. They recke no lawes that meditate reuenge.

¹ 1633, now I am, *which changes the construction, perhaps for the better.*

² 1633, Nihil.

³ Not in A. 1633; *supplied silently by Haw.*

ALEX. His ransomes worth will stay from foule reuenge.

VICE. No ; if he liued, the newes would soone be heere. 50

ALEX. Nay, euill newes flie faster still than good.

VICE. Tell me no more of newes, for he is dead.

VILLUP. My soueraign, pardon the author of ill newes,
And Ile bewray the fortune of thy sonne.

VICE. Speake on ; Ile guerdon thee, what-ere it be. 55

Mine eare is ready to receiue ill newes,
My hart growne hard gainst mischiefes battery ;
Stand vp, I say, and tell thy tale at large.

VILLUP. Then heare that truth which these mine eies
haue seene :

When both the armies were in battell ioynd, 60

Don Balthazar amidst the thickest troupes,
To winne renowme,¹ did wondrous feats of armes ;

Amongst the rest I saw him hand-to-hand

In single fight with their lord generall,
Till Alexandro, that heere counterfeits 65

Vnder the colour of a duteous freend,

Discharged his pistoll at the princes back,
As though he would haue slaine their generall,

But therwithall Don Balthazar fell downe ;
And when he fell, then we began to flie ; 70

But, had he liued, the day had sure bene ours.

ALEX. O wicked forgerie ! O traiterous miscreant !

VICE. Hold thou thy peace ! But now, Villuppo, say :
Where then became the carkasse of my sonne ?

VILLUP. I saw them drag it to the Spanish tents. 75

VICE. I, I, my nightly dreames haue tolde me this !

Thou false, vnkinde, vnthankfull, traiterous beast !

Wherein had Balthazar offended thee,

That thou shouldst thus betray him to our foes ?

Wast Spanish golde that bleared so thine eyes 80

That thou couldst see no part of our deserts ?

Perchance, because thou art Terseraes lord,

Thou hadst some hope to weare this diademe ²

¹ *Misprinted remowne in A.*

² *Misprinted diadome in A.*

If first my sonne and then my-selfe were slaine ;
 But thy ambitious thought shall breake thy neck. 85
 I, this was it that made thee spill his blood !

Take¹ the crowne and put¹ it on againe.

But Ile now weare it till thy blood be spilt.

ALEX. Vouchsafe, dread² soueraigne, to heare me speak !

VICE. Away with him ! his sight is second hell !

Keepe him till we determine of his death. 90

If Balthazar be dead, he shall not liue.

[They take him out.]

Villuppo, follow vs for thy reward.

Exit VICE[ROY].

VILLUP. Thus haue I with an enuious forged tale

Deceiued the king, betraid mine enemy,

And hope for guerdon of my villany. *Exit.* 95

[Act First. Scene Third.]

[Spain: the palace.]

Enter HORATIO and BEL-IMPERIA.

BEL. Signior Horatio, this is the place and houre

Wherein I must intreat thee to relate

The circumstance of Don Andreas death,

Who liuing was my garlands sweetest flower,

And in his death hath buried my delights. 5

HOR. For loue of him and seruice to your-selfe,

I nill³ refuse this heauy dolefull charge ;

Yet teares and sighes, I feare, will hinder me.

When both our armies were enioynd in fight,

Your worthie chiuallier amidst the thickest, 10

For glorious cause still aiming at the fairest,

Was at the last by yong Don Balthazar

Encountred hand-to-hand. Their fight was long,

¹ 1633, Haw. He takes . . . puts ; so also the editors of Dodsley, but they (including Hazlitt) seem usually to have neglected to collate plays printed by Hawkins. ² 1618, '23, '33, deare. ³ 1618, '23, '33, Ile not.

Their harts were great, their clamours menacing,
 Their strength alike, their strokes both dangerous; 15
 But wrathfull Nemesis, that wicked power,
 Enuying at Andreas praise and worth,
 Cut short his life to end his praise and woorth.
 She, she her-selfe, disguise in armours maske,
 As Pallas was before proud Pergamus, 20
 Brought in a fresh supply of halberdiers,
 Which pauncht his horse and dingd him to the ground.
 Then yong Don Balthazar, with ruthles rage,
 Taking aduantage of his foes distresse,
 Did finish what his halberdiers begun; 25
 And left not till Andreas life was done.
 Then, though too late, incenst with iust remorse,
 I with my band set foorth against the prince,
 And brought him prisoner from his halba[r]diers.

BEL. Would thou hadst slaine him that so slew my loue! 30
 But then was Don Andreas carkasse lost?

HOR. No; that was it for which I cheefely stroue,
 Nor stept I back till I recouerd him.
 I tooke him vp, and wound him in mine armes,
 And, welding him vnto my priuate tent, 35
 There laid him downe and dewd him with my teares,
 And sighed and sorrowed as became a freend.
 But neither freendly sorrow,¹ sighes nor teares
 Could win pale Death from his vsurped right.
 Yet this I did, and lesse I could not doe: 40
 I saw him honoured with due funerall.
 This scarfe I pluckt from off² his liueles arme,
 And wear it in remembrance of my freend.

BEL. I know the scarfe: would he had kept it still!
 For, had he liued, he would haue kept it still, 45
 And worne it for his Bel-imperias sake;
 For twas my fauour at his last depart.

¹ Here, as often, the later editions change a singular noun to the plural for the sake of uniformity.

² 1618, '23, '33, This scarfe pluckt off from.

But now weare thou it both for him and me ;
 For, after him, thou hast deserued it best.
 But, for thy kindnes in his life and death, 50
 Be sure, while Bel-imperias life endures,
 She will be Don Horatios thankfull freend.

HOR. And, madame, Don Horatio will not slacke
 Humbly to serue faire Bel-imperia.
 But now, if your good liking stand thereto, 55
 Ile craue your pardon to goe seeke the prince ;
 For so the duke, your father, gaue me charge. *Exit.*¹

BEL. I, goe, Horatio ; leaue me heere alone,
 For sollitude best fits my cheereles mood. —
 Yet what auailles to waile Andreas death, 60
 From whence Horatio proues my second loue ?
 Had he not loued Andrea as he did,
 He could not sit in Bel-imperias thoughts.
 But how can loue finde harbour in my brest,
 Till I reuenge the death of my beloued ? 65
 Yes, second loue shall further my reuenge :
 Ile loue Horatio, my Andreas freend,
 The more to spight the prince that wrought his end ;
 And, where Don Balthazar, that slew my loue,
 Himselfe now pleades for fauour at my hands, 70
 He shall, in rigour of my iust disdain,
 Reape long repentance for his murderous deed, —
 For what wast els but murderous cowardise,
 So many to oppresse one valiant knight,
 Without respect of honour in the fight ? 75
 And heere he comes that murdred my delight.

Enter LORENZO and BALTHAZAR.

LOR. Sister, what meanes this melanchollie walke ?

BEL. That for a-while I wish no company.

LOR. But heere the prince is come to visite you.

BEL. That argues that he liues in libertie. 80

¹ This Exit, like most stage-directions in the old editions, is two lines too high ; Haw., as usual, transfers it.

BAL. No, madame ; but in pleasing seruitude.

BEL. Your prison then, belike, is your conceit.

BAL. I, by conceit my freedome is enthalde.

BEL. Then with conceite enlarge your-selfe againe.

BAL. What if conceite haue laid my hart to gage? 85

BEL. Pay that you borrowed, and recouer it.

BAL. I die if it returne from whence it lyes.

BEL. A hartles man, and liue?¹ A miracle!

BAL. I, lady, loue can worke such miracles.

LOR. Tush, tush, my lord ! let goe these ambages, 90

And in plaine tearmes acquaint her with your loue.

BEL. What bootes complaint, when thers no remedy?

BAL. Yes, to your gracious selfe must I complaine,

In whose faire answeere lyes my remedy,

On whose perfection all my thoughts attend, 95

On whose aspect mine eyes finde beauties bowre,

In whose translucent brest my hart is lodgde.

BEL. Alas, my lord ! these are but words of course,

And but deuise² to driue me from this place.

She, in going in, lets fall her gloue, which HORATIO, comming out, takes³ vp.

HOR. Madame, your gloue. 100

BEL. Thanks, good Horatio ; take it for thy paines.

BAL. Signior Horatio stoopt in happie time!

HOR. I reapt more grace then I deseru'd or hop'd.

LOR. * My lord, be not dismaid for what is past ;

You know that women oft are humerous : 105

These clouds will ouerblow with little winde ;

Let me alone, Ile scatter them my-selfe.

Meane-while let vs deuise to spend the time

In some delightfull⁴ sports and reuelling.

HOR. The king, my lords, is comming hither straight 110

To feast the Portingall embassadour ;

¹ 1618, '23, '33, liues, which Haz. prefers and adopts. Here, and in similar cases, I give the spelling of 1633, the only one of these three editions that I have seen.

³ 1633 has a superfluous it.

² 1618, '23, '33, deuis'd.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, delightsome.

Things were in readines before I came.

BAL. Then heere it fits vs to attend the king,
To welcome hither our embassadour,
And learne my father and my countries health. 115

Enter the banquet, TRUMPETS, the KING, and EMBASSADOUR.

KING. See, lord ambassador, how Spaine intreats
Their prisoner Balthazar, thy viceroyes sonne :
We pleasure more in kindenes then in warres.
EMBASS. Sad is our king, and Portingale laments,
Supposing that Don Balthazar is slaine. 120

BAL. [*aside*] So am I, slaine by beauties tirannie! —
You see, my lord, how Balthazar is slaine :
I frolike with the Duke of Castiles sonne,
Wrapt euery houre in pleasures of the court,¹
And graste with fauours of his Maiestie. 125

KING. Put off your greetings till our feast be done ;
Now come and sit with vs, and taste our cheere.

Sit to the banquet.

Sit downe, young prince, you are our second guest ;
Brother, sit downe ; and, nephew, take your place ;
Signior Horatio, waite thou vpon our cup, 130
For well thou hast deserued to be honored.
Now, lordings, fall too : Spaine is Portugall,²
And Portugall² is Spaine ; we both are freends ;
Tribute is paid, and we enioy our right.
But where is olde Hieronimo, our marshall? 135
He promised³ vs, in honor of our guest,
To grace our banquet with some pompous iest.

*Enter HIERONIMO with a DRUM, three KNIGHTS, each his scutchin ; then
he fetches three KINGS ; they take their crownes and them captiue.*

Hieronimo, this maske contents mine eie,
Although I sound not well the misterie.

¹ In 1633 this word has slipped up into the preceding line.

² So A. ; 1633, Haw. Portingale.

³ Misprinted pcomised in A.

HIERO. The first arm'd knight that hung his scutchin vp 140

He takes the scutchin and giues it to the KING.

Was English Robert, Earle of Glocester,
 Who, when King Stephen bore sway in Albion,
 Arriued with fiue and twenty thousand men
 In Portingale, and, by successe of warre,
 Enforced the king, then but a Sarasin, 145
 To beare the yoake of the English monarchie.

KING. My lord of Portingale, by this you see
 That which may comfort both your king and you,
 And make your late discomfort seeme the lesse.
 But say, Hieronimo: what was the next? 150

HIERO. The second knight that hung his scutchin vp

He doth as he did before.

Was Edmond, Earle of Kent in Albion.
 When English Richard wore the diadem,
 He came likewise and razed Lisbon walles,
 And tooke the king of Portingale in fight, — 155
 For which, and other such like seruice done,
 He after was created Duke of Yorke.

KING. This is another speciall argument
 That Portingale may daine to beare our yoake,
 When it by little England hath beene yoakt. 160
 But now, Hieronimo, what were the last?

HIERO. The third and last, not least in our account,

Dooining as before.

Was, as the rest, a valiant Englishman,
 Braue Iohn of Gaunt, the Duke of Lancaster,
 As by his scutchin plainely may appeare: 165
 He with a puissant armie came to Spaine
 And tooke our King of Castile prisoner.

EMBASS. This is an argument for our viceroy
 That Spaine may not insult for her successe,
 Since English warriours likewise conquered Spaine 170
 And made them bow their knees to Albion.

KING. Hieronimo, I drinke¹ to thee for this deuise,
Which hath pleasde both the embassador and me :
Pledge me, Hieronimo, if thou loue the king !

Takes the cup of HORATIO.

My lord, I feare we sit but ouer-long,
Vnlesse our dainties were more delicate, —
But welcome are you to the best we haue.
Now let vs in, that you² may be dispatch ;
I think our councell is already set.

175

Exeunt omnes.

[CHORUS.]

ANDREA. Come we for this from depth of vnder ground, —
To see him feast that gaue me my deaths wound ?
These pleasant sights are sorrow to my soule :
Nothing but league and loue and banqueting !

REUENGE. Be still, Andrea ; ere we goe from hence,
Ile turne their freendship into fell despight,
Their loue to mortall hate, their day to night,
Their hope into dispaire, their peace to warre,
Their ioyes to paine, their blisse to miserie.

5

Actus Secundus. [Scene First.]

[The DUKE'S castle.]

Enter LORENZO and BALTHAZAR.

LORENZO. My lord, though Bel-imperia seeme thus coy,
Let reason holde you in your wonted ioy :
In time the sauage bull sustaines the yoake,
In time all haggard hawkes will stoope to lure,
In time small wedges cleaue the hardest oake,
In time the flint³ is pearst with softest shower ;
And she in time will fall from her disdaine,
And rue⁴ the sufferance of your freendly paine.

5

¹ *Misprinted* dtinke in A.

³ 1618, '23, '33, In time the hardest flint.

² 1618, '23, '33, we.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, rule.

BAL. No; she is wilder, and more hard withall,
 Then beast or bird, or tree or stony wall! 10
 But wherefore blot I Bel-imperias name?
 It is my fault, not she that merits blame.
 My feature is not to content her sight;
 My wordes¹ are rude and worke her no delight;
 The lines I send her are but harsh and ill, 15
 Such as doe drop from Pan and Marsias² quill;
 My presents are not of sufficient cost;
 And, being worthles, all my labours lost.
 Yet might she loue me for my valiancie.
 I; but thats slaundred by captiuitie. 20
 Yet might she loue me to content her sire.
 I; but her reason masters his³ desire.
 Yet might she loue me as her brothers freend.
 I; but her hopes aime at some other end.
 Yet might she loue me to vpreare her state. 25
 I; but perhaps she hopes⁴ some nobler mate.
 Yet might she loue me as her beauties⁵ thrall.
 I; but I feare she cannot loue at all.

LOR. My lord, for my sake leaue these extasies,
 And doubt not but weele finde some remedie. 30
 Some cause there is that lets you not be loued:
 First that must needs be knowne, and then remoued.
 What if my sister loue some other knight?

BALT. My sommers day will turne to winters night.

LOR. I haue already found a stratageme 35
 To sound the bottome of this doubtfull theame.
 My lord, for once you shall be rulde by me;
 Hinder me not what ere you heare or see:
 By force or faire meanes will I cast about
 To finde the truth of all this question out. 40
 Ho, Pedringano!

¹ A. wodres.

² 1618, '23, '33, Marses.

³ 1618, '23, '33, her; *possibly fire was read fire (l. 21), and his then became unintelligible; but 1633 has Sire.*

⁴ 1623, '33, lous.

⁵ A. beauteous; *corr. silently by Haw.*; 1633, Beauties.

PED. Signior.

LOR. *Vien qui¹ presto!*

Enter PEDRINGANO.

PED. Hath your lordship any seruice to command me?

LOR. I, Pedringano, seruice of import.

And, not to spend the time in trifling words,
Thus stands the case : it is not long, thou knowst, 45

Since I did shield thee from my fathers wrath
For thy conueiance in Andreas loue,
For which thou wert adiudg'd to punishment ;
I stood betwixt thee and thy punishment,
And since thou knowest how I haue fauoured thee. 50

Now to these fauours will I adde reward,²
Not with faire woords, but store of golden coyne
And lands and liuing ioynd with dignities,
If thou but satisfie my iust demaund ;
Tell truth and haue me for thy lasting freend. 55

PED. What-ere it be your lordship shall demaund,
My bounden duety bids me tell the truth,
If case it lye in me to tell the truth.

LOR. Then, Pedringano, this is my demaund :
Whome loues my sister Bel-imperia? 60
For she reposes all her trust in thee.
Speak, man, and gaine both freendship and reward :
I meane, whome loues she in Andreas place?

PED. Alas, my lord, since Don Andreas death
I haue no credit with her as before, 65
And therefore know not if she loue or no.

LOR. Nay, if thou dally, then I am thy foe,
And feare shall force what frendship cannot winne.
Thy death shall bury what thy life conceales.
Thou dyest for more esteeming her then me! 70

[Draws his sword.]

PED. Oh stay, my lord!

¹ A. 1633, Haw. que; *corr. silently in Collier-Dodsley.*

² A. addereward.

LOR. Yet speak the truth, and I will guerdon thee
 And shield thee from what-euer can ensue,
 And will conceale what-ere proceeds from thee;
 But, if thou dally once againe, thou diest! 75

PED. If madame Bel-imperia be in loue —

LOR. What, villaine! ifs and ands?

PED. O stay, my lord! she loues Horatio.

BALTHAZAR starts back.

LOR. What! Don Horatio, our knight-marshals sonne?

PED. Euen him, my lord. 80

LOR. Now say but how knowest thou he is her loue,
 And thou shalt finde me kinde and liberall.
 Stand vp, I say, and feareles tell the truth.

PED. She sent him letters, — which my-selfe perusde, —
 Full-fraught with lines and arguments of loue, 85
 Preferring him before Prince Balthazar.

LOR. Swear on this crosse that what thou saiest is true,
 And that thou wilt conseale what thou hast tolde.

PED. I sweare to both, by him that made vs all.

LOR. In hope thine oath is true, heeres thy reward. 90
 But, if I proue thee periurde and vniust,
 This very sword whereon thou tookst thine oath
 Shall be the worker of thy tragedie.

PED. What I haue saide is true, and shall, for me,
 Be still conceald from Bel-imperia. 95
 Besides, your Honors liberalitie
 Deserues my duteous seruice euen till death.

LOR. Let this be all that thou shalt doe for me:
 Be watchfull when and where these louers meete,
 And giue me notice in some secret sort. 100

PED. I will, my lord.

LOR. Then shalt thou finde that I am liberall.
 Thou knowst that I can more aduaunce thy state
 Then she: be therefore wise and faile me not.
 Goe and attend her as thy custome is, 105
 Least absence make her think thou doost amisse.

Exit PEDRINGANO.

Why, so, *Tam armis quam ingenio* :

Where words preuaile not, violence preuailes.

But golde doth more than either of them both.

How likes Prince Balthazar this stratageme?

110

BAL. Both well and ill ; it makes me glad and sad :

Glad, that I know the hinderer of my loue ;

Sad, that I feare she hates me whome I loue ;

Glad, that I know on whom to be reueng'd ;

Sad, that sheele flie me if I take reuenge.

115

Yet must I take reuenge or dye my-selfe ;

For loue resisted growes impatient.

I think Horatio be my destinde plague :

First, in his hand he brandished a sword,

And with that sword he fiercely waged warre,

120

And in that warre he gaue me dangerous wounds,

And by those wounds he forced me to yeeld,

And by my yeelding I became his slaue ;

Now, in his mouth he carries pleasing words,

Which pleasing wordes doe harbour sweet conceits,

125

Which sweet conceits are lim'd with slie deceits,¹

Which slie deceits smooth Bel-imperias eares,

And through her eares diue downe into her hart,

And in her hart set him, where I should stand.

Thus hath he tane my body by his force,

130

And now by sleight would captiuatue my soule ;

But in his fall Ile tempt² the Destinies,

And either loose my life or winne my loue.

LOR. Lets goe, my lord ; your³ staying staies reuenge.

Doe you but follow me, and gaine your loue ;

135

Her fauour must be wonne by his remooue.

Exeunt.

¹ Haw.'s statement that 1618, '23, '33 omit this line is inaccurate, at least in regard to 1633, which omits are lim'd with slie deceits, Which slie deceits.

² A. temft.

³ 1633, our.

[Act Second. Scene Second.]

[*The Duke's castle.*]*Enter HORATIO and BEL-IMPERIA.*

HOR. Now, madame, since by fauour of your loue
 Our hidden smoke is turnd to open flame,
 And that with lookes and words we feed our thought, —
 Two chiefe contents where more cannot be had, —
 Thus in the midst of loues faire blandeshments 5
 Why shew you signe of inward languishments?

PEDRINGANO sheweth all to the PRINCE and LORENZO, placing them in secret.

BEL. My hart, sweet freend, is like a ship at sea :
 She wisheth port, where, riding all at ease,
 She may¹ repaire what stormie times haue worne,
 And, leaning on the shore, may sing with ioy 10
 That pleasure followes paine, and blisse annoy.
 Possession of thy loue is th' onely port
 Wherein my hart, with feares and hopes long tost,
 Each howre doth wish and long to make resort,
 There to repaire the ioyes that it hath lost, 15
 And, sitting safe, to sing in Cupids quire
 That sweetest blisse is crowne of loues desire.

BALTHAZAR, above.²

BAL. O sleepe, mine eyes ; see not my loue prophande !
 Be deafe, my eares ; heare not my discontent !
 Dye, hart ; another ioyes what thou deseruest ! 20

LOR. Watch still, mine eyes, to see this loue disioyned !
 Heare still, mine eares, to heare them both lament !
 Liue,³ hart, to ioy at fond Horatios fall !

BEL. Why stands Horatio speecheles all this while?

¹ A. mad ; 1633, may ; *corr. silently by Haw.*

² Lorenzo, of course, is with him, and their speeches are supposed not to be heard by Horatio and Bel-imperia.

³ 1618, '23, '33, Leave.

- HOR. The lesse I speak, the more I meditate. 25
- BEL. But whereon doost thou chiefly meditate?
- HOR. On dangers past and pleasures to ensue.
- BAL. On pleasures past and dangers to ensue!
- BEL. What dangers and what pleasures doost thou mean?
- HOR. Dangers of warre and pleasures of our loue. 30
- LOR. Dangers of death, but pleasures none at all!
- BEL. Let dangers goe; thy warre shall be with me,
 But such a warring¹ as breakes no bond of peace.
 Speak thou faire words, Ile crosse them with faire words;
 Send thou sweet looks, Ile meet them with sweet looks; 35
 Write louing lines, Ile answere louing lines;
 Giue me a kisse, Ile counterchecke thy kisse:
 Be this our warring peace, or peacefull warre.
- HOR. But, gracious madame, then appoint the field
 Where triall of this warre shall first be made. 40
- BAL. Ambitious villaine, how his boldenes growes!
- BEL. Then be thy fathers pleasant bower the field,—
 Where first we vovd a mutuall amitie.
 The court were dangerous; that place is safe.
 Our howre shalbe when Vesper ginnes to rise, 45
 That summons home distresfull² trauellers.
 There none shall heare vs but the harmeles birds:
 Happellie the gentle nightingale
 Shall carroll vs a-sleepe ere we be ware,
 And, singing with the prickle at her breast, 50
 Tell our delight and mirthfull³ dalliance.
 Till then, each houre will seeme a yeere and more.
- HOR. But, honie-sweet and honorable loue,
 Returne we now into your fathers sight;
 Dangerous suspition waits on our delight. 55
- LOR. I, danger mixt⁴ with iealous despite
 Shall send thy soule into eternall night!

Exeunt.

¹ *Qy.* warre; but 1633 also has warring.

² 1623, '33, distressed. ³ 1623, '33, sportfull.

⁴ *Qy.* mixt; but 1633 has mixt; Kittredge suggests iealous, which is better.

[Act Second. Scene Third.]

[*The Spanish court.*]*Enter* KING OF SPAIN, PORTINGALE EMBASSADOUR, DON CIPRIAN, &c.

KING. Brother of Castile, to the princes loue
What saies your daughter Bel-imperia?

CIP. Although she coy it, as becomes her kinde,
And yet dissemble that she loues the prince,
I doubt not, I, but she will stoope in time ; 5
And, were she froward, — which she will not be, —
Yet heerein shall she follow my aduice,
Which is to loue him or forgoe my loue.

KING. Then, lord embassadour of Portingale,
Aduise thy king to make this marriage vp 10
For strengthening of our late-confirmed league ;
I know no better meanes to make vs freends.
Her dowry shall be large and liberall ;
Besides that she is daughter and halfe heire
Vnto our brother heere, Don Ciprian, 15
And shall enjoy the moitie of his land,
Ile grace her marriage with an vnckles gift,
And this it is : in case the match goe forward,
The tribute which you pay shalbe releast ;
And, if by Balthazar she haue a sonne, 20
He shall enjoy the kingdome after vs.

EMBAS. Ile make the motion to my soueraigne liege,
And worke it if my counsaile may preuaile.

KING. Doe so, my lord ; and, if he giue consent,
I hope his presence heere will honour vs 25
In celebration of the nuptiall day, —
And let himselfe determine of the time.

EM. Wilt please your Grace command me ought besid?

KING. Commend me to the king ; and so, farewell!
But wheres Prince Balthazar, to take his leaue? 30

EM. That is perfourmd alreadie, my good lord.

KING. Amongst the rest of what you haue in charge,
 The princes raunsome must not be forgot:
 Thats none of mine, but his that tooke him prisoner, —
 And well his forwardnes deserues reward: 35
 It was Horatio, our knight-marshals sonne.

EM. Betweene vs theres a price already pitcht,
 And shall be sent with all conuenient¹ speed.

KING. Then once againe farewell, my lord!

EM. Farwell, my lord of Castile, and the rest! *Exit.* 40

KING. Now, brother, you must take some little paines
 To winne faire Bel-imperia from her will:
 Young virgins must be ruled by their freends.
 The prince is amiable, and loues her well;
 If she neglect him and forgoe his loue, 45
 She both will wrong her owne estate and ours.
 Therefore, whiles I doe entertaine the prince
 With greatest pleasure that our court affoord,
 Endeouour you to winne your daughters thought.²
 If she giue back, all this will come to naught. 50

Exeunt.

[Act Second. Scene Fourth.]

[HIERONIMO'S garden.]

Enter HORATIO, BEL-IMPERIA, and PEDRINGANO.

HOR. Now that the night begins with sable wings
 To ouer-cloud the brightnes of the sunne,
 And that in darkenes pleasures may be done,
 Come, Bel-imperia, let vs to the bower,
 And there in safetie passe a pleasant hower. 5

BEL. I follow thee, my loue, and will not backe,
 Although my fainting hart controles my soule.

HOR. Why, make you doubt of Pedringanos faith?

BEL. No; he is as trustie as my second selfe.
 Goe, Pedringano, watch without the gate, 10
 And let vs know if any make approach.

¹ *Misprianted* conuenient in A.

² *So* 1633, Haw.; A. thoughts.

PED. [*aside*] In-stead of watching, Ile deserue more golde
By fetching Don Lorenzo to this match. *Exit* PED[RINGANO].

HOR. What meanes my loue?

BEL. I know not what, my-selfe ;
And yet my hart foretels me some mischaunce. 15

HOR. Sweet, say not so ; faire Fortune is our freend,
And heauens haue shut vp day to pleasure vs.
The starres, thou seest, holde back their twinckling shine
And Luna hides her-selfe to pleasure vs.

BEL. Thou hast preuailde ! Ile conquer my misdoubt,
And in thy loue and councill drowne my feare. 20
I feare no more ; loue now is all my thoughts !
Why sit we not?¹ for pleasure asketh ease.

HOR. The more thou sitst within these leauy bowers,
The more will Flora decke it with her flowers. 25

BEL. I ; but, if Flora spye Horatio heere,
Her ieaalous eye will think I sit too neere.

HOR. Harke, madame, how the birds record by night
For ioy that Bel-imperia sits in sight !

BEL. No ; Cupid counterfeits the nightingale,
To frame sweet musick to Horatios tale. 30

HOR. If Cupid sing, then Venus is not farre,—
I, thou art Venus, or some fairer starre !

BEL. If I be Venus, thou must needs be Mars ;
And where Mars raigneth, there must needs be warres.² 35

HOR. Then thus begin our wars : put forth thy hand,
That it may combat with my ruder hand.

BEL. Set forth thy foot to try the push of mine.

HOR. But, first, my lookes shall combat against thine.

BEL. Then ward thy-selfe ! I dart this kisse at thee. 40

HOR. Thus I retort³ the dart thou threwst at me !

BEL. Nay then, to gaine the glory of the field,
My twining armes shall yoake and make thee yeeld.

HOR. Nay then, my armes are large and strong withall :⁴

¹ A. nat.

⁴ A. with ; 1633, Haw. withall.

² A. 1633, warre ; *corr. silently by* Haw.

³ 1618, '23, '33, returne.

Thus elmes by vines are compast till they fall. 45

BEL. O, let me goe, for in^o my troubled eyes
Now maist thou read that life in passion dies !

HOR. O, stay a-while, and I will dye with thee ;
So shalt thou yeeld, and yet haue conquerd me.

BEL. Whose there? Pedringano? We are betraide ! 50

Enter LORENZO, BALTHAZAR, CERBERIN, PEDRINGANO, disguised.

LOR. My lord, away with her! take her aside!¹
O sir,² forbear, your valour is already tride.
Quickly dispatch, my maisters.

Th[e]y hang him in the arbor.

HOR. What, will you murder me?

LOR. I; thus! and thus! these are the fruits of loue !

They stab him.

BEL. O, saue his life, and let me dye for him ! 55
O, saue him, brother ! saue him, Balthazar !
I loued Horatio, but he loued not me.

BAL. But Balthazar loues Bel-imperia.

LOR. Although his life were still ambitious, proud,
Yet is he at the highest now he is dead. 60

BEL. Murder! murder! helpe! Hieronimo, helpe!

LOR. Come, stop her mouth! away with her!

Exeunt.

Enter HIERONIMO in his shirt, &c.

HIERO. What outcries pluck³ me from my naked bed,
And chill my throbbing hart with trembling feare,
Which neuer danger yet could daunt before? 65
Who cals Hieronimo? speak; heare I am!
I did not slumber; therefore twas no dreame.
No, no; it was some woman cride for helpe,
And heere within this garden did she crie,
And in this garden must I rescue her. 70

¹ 1618, '23, '33 have take her aside as a stage-direction.

² O sir, in this line, and my maisters, in the next, seem to be hypermetrical.

³ 1618, '23, '33, outcry calles.

But stay! what murderous spectacle is this?
 A man hangd vp, and all the murderers gone!
 And in my bower, to lay the guilt on me!
 This place was made for pleasure not for death.

He cuts him downe.

Those garments that he weares I oft haue seene, — 75
 Alas! it is Horatio, my sweet sonne!
 O, no; but he that whilome was my sonne!
 O, was it thou that call'dst me from my bed?
 O, speak, if any sparke of life remaine! .
 I am thy father. Who hath slaine my sonne? 80
 What sauadge monster, not of humane kinde,
 Hath heere beene glutted with thy harmeles blood,
 And left thy bloudie corpes dishonoured heere,
 For me amidst these¹ darke and deathfull shades
 To drowne thee with an ocean of my teares? 85
 O heauens, why made you night, to couer sinne?
 By day this deed of darkenes had not beene.
 O earth, why didst thou not in time deuoure
 The vilde² prophaner of this sacred bower?
 O poore Horatio, what hadst thou misdoone 90
 To leese thy life ere life was new begun?
 O wicked butcher, what-so-ere thou wert,
 How could³ thou strangle vertue and desert?
 Ay me, most wretched! that haue lost my ioy
 In leeing my Horatio, my sweet boy! 95

Enter ISABELL.

ISA. My husbands absence makes my hart to throb.
 Hieronimo!

HIERO. Heere, Isabella. Helpe me to lament;
 For sighes are stopt, and all my teares are spent.

ISA. What world of grieffe — my sonne Horatio! 100
 O wheres the author of this endles woe?

¹ A. this; 1633, these. ³ 1633, couldst.

² 1618, '23, '33 modernize the spelling to vile.

HIERO. To know the author were some ease of greefe,
For in reuenge my hart would finde releefe.

ISA. Then is he gone? and is my sonne gone too?
O, gush out, teares! fountains and flouds of teares! 105
Blow, sighes, and raise an euerlasting storme;
For outrage fits our cursed wretchednes!¹

¹ Between this line and the next occurs the first of a number of insertions, supposed to have been written by Ben Jonson, and said to appear first in the edition of 1602. I print them from a copy of the edition of 1633, now in the Library of Harvard University:

Aye me! Hieronimo, sweet husband, speake!

HIER. He supt with us to-night frolicke and merry,
And said he would goe visit Balthazar
At the dukes pallace, — there the prince doth lodge.
He had no custome to stay out so late. 5
He may be in his chamber, — some goe see!
Roderigo, ho!²

Enter PEDRO and IAQUES.

ISA. Aye me, he raues! Sweet Hieronimo!

HIER. True, all Spaine takes note of it;
Besides, he is so generally beloved; 10
His Majesty the other day did grace him
With waiting on his cup: these be favours
Which doe assure me that he cannot be³ short-lived.

ISA. Sweet Hieronimo!

HIER. I wonder how this fellow got his clothes. 15
Sirha, sirha, Ile know the truth of all!
Iaques, run to the Duke of Castiles presently,
And bid my sonne Horatio to come home;
I and his mother haue had strange dreames to-night:
Doe you hear me, sir?

IAQUES. I, sir.

HIER. Well, sir, begon. 20
Pedro, come hither. Knowest thou who this is?

PED. Too well, sir.

HIER. Too well! who? who is it? Peace, Isabella!
Nay, blush not, man!

PED. It is my lord Horatio.

² In 1633 these words are in l. 5. I shall not record changes in the line division hereafter in these insertions.

³ Misprinted he in 1633.

HIERO. Sweet louely rose, ill pluckt before thy time!
 Faire, worthy sonne, not conqerd, but betraid!
 Ile kisse thee now, for words with teares are staide.¹ 110

ISA. And Ile close vp the glasses of his sight;
 For once these eyes were onely my delight.

HIERO. Seest thou this handkercher besmerd with blood?
 It shall not from me till I take reuenge;
 Seest thou those² wounds that yet are bleeding fresh? 115

HIER. Ha, ha! Saint Iames, but this doth make me laugh,
 That there are more deluded then my-selfe! 25

PED. Deluded?

HIER. I; I would haue sworne my-selfe
 Within this houre that this had bin my sonne Horatio,
 His garments are so like: ha! are they not great perswasions?

ISA. O, would to God it were not so! 30

HIER. Were not, Isabella? dost thou dreame it is?
 Can thy soft bosome entertaine a thought
 That such a blacke deed of mischiefe should be done
 On one so pure and spotlesse as our sonne?
 Away! I am ashamed!

ISA. Deare Hieronimo,
 Cast a more serious eye upon thy griefe:
 Weake apprehension giues but weake beliefe. 35

HIER. It was a man, sure, that was hang'd up here,—
 A youth, as I remember: I cut him downe.
 If it should prooue my sonne now after all? 40
 Say you, say you? Light!
 Lend me a taper, let me looke againe.
 O God!

Confusion, mischiefe, torment, death and hell,
 Drop all your stings at once in my cold bosome,
 That now is stiffe with horroure! kill me quickly! 45
 Be gracious to me, thou infectiue night,
 And drop this deed of murder downe on me!
 Gird in my wast of griefe with thy large darknes,
 And let me not surviue to see the light
 May put me in the mind I had a sonne. 50

ISA. O sweet Horatio! O my dearest sonne!

HIER. How strangely had I lost my way to griefe!

[Line 108 follows.]

¹ A. stainde; 1633, staid.

² Misprinted thofs in A.

Ile not intombe them till I haue reueng'd :
Then will I ioy amidst my discontent,
Till then, my sorrow neuer shalbe spent.

ISA. The heauens are iust, murder cannot be hid ;
Time is the author both of truth and right, 120
And time will bring this trecherie to light.

HIERO. Meane-while, good Isabella, cease thy plaints,
Or, at the least, dissemble them awhile ;
So shall we sooner finde the practise out,
And learne by whom all this was brought about. 125
Come, Isabell, now let vs take him vp

They take him vp.

And beare him in from out this cursed place.
Ile say his dirge,—singing fits not this case.
O aliquis mihi quas pulchrum ver¹ educet herbas

HIERO[NIMO] sets his brest vnto his sword.

Misceat, et nostro detur medicina dolori ; 130
Aut siqui faciunt annorum obliuia² succos
Prebeat ; ipse metam magnum quaecunque³ per orbem
Gramina sol pulchras eiecit lucis in⁴ oras.
Ipse bibam quicquid meditatur saga veneni,⁵
Quicquid et irarum ui caeca nenia⁶ nectit. 135
Omnia perpetiar, lethum quoque, dum semel omnis
Noster in extincto moriatur pectore⁷ sensus.
Ergo tuos oculos nunquam, mea vita, videbo,⁸
Et tua perpetuus sepeliuit lumina somnus ?
Emoriar tecum : sic, sic iuuat ire sub umbras ! 140
Attamen absistam properato cedere letho,
Ne mortem vindicta tuam tum⁹ nulla sequatur.

Heere he throwes it from him and beares the body away.

¹ A. var ; 1633, ver.

⁷ A. pectora ; 1633, pectore.

² A. 1633, annum oblimia ; corr. by Haw.

³ A. 1633, metum magnam quicunque ; corr. by Haw.

⁴ A. 1633, effecit in luminis ; corr. by Haw.

⁵ A. veneri ; 1633, veneni.

⁸ A. vi debo.

⁶ A. irraui euecæca menia ; 1633, iravi evecæca menia ; corr. by Haw.

⁹ A. vindictatuam tam ; corr. by Haw.

[CHORUS.]

ANDREA. Broughtst thou me hether to increase my paine?
 I lookt that Balthazar should haue been slaine;
 But tis my freend Horatio that is slaine,
 And they abuse faire Bel-imperia,
 On whom I doted more then all the world, 5
 Because she lou'd me more then all the world.

REUENGE. Thou talkest of haruest, when the corne is
 greene:
 The end is crowne¹ of euery worke well done;
 The sickle comes not till the corne be ripe.
 Be still, and, ere I lead thee from this place, 10
 Ile shew thee Balthazar in heauy case.

Actus Tertius. [Scene First.]

[*The Portuguese court.*]*Enter* VICEROY OF PORTINGALE, NOBLES, ALEXANDRO, VILLUPPO.

VICEROY. Infortunate condition of kings,
 Seated amidst so many helpeles doubts!
 First, we are plast vpon extreamest height,
 And oft supplanted with exceeding hate,²
 But euer subiect to the wheele of chance; 5
 And at our highest neuer ioy we so
 As we both doubt and dread our ouerthrow.
 So striueth not the waues with sundry winds
 As fortune toyleth in the affaires of kings,
 That would be feard, yet feare to be beloued, 10
 Sith feare or loue to kings is flatterie.
 For instance, lordings, look vpon your king,
 By hate depriued of his dearest sonne,
 The onely hope of our successiue line.³

NOB. I had not thought that Alexandros hart 15

¹ 1618, '23, '33, growne.³ 1618, '23, '33, liues.² A. heat; 1633, hate.

Had beene enuenomde with such extreame hate ;
 But now I see that words haue seuerall workes,
 And theres no credit in the countenance.

VIL. No ; for, my lord, had¹ you behelde the traine
 That fained loue had coloured in his lookes 20
 When he in campe consorted Balthazar,
 Farre more inconstant had you thought the sunne,
 That howerly coasts the center of the earth,
 Then Alexandros purpose to the prince.

VICE. No more, Villuppo! thou hast said enough, 25
 And with thy words thou slaiest our wounded thoughts.
 Nor shall I longer dally with the world,
 Procrastinating Alexandros death.
 Goe, some of you, and fetch the traitor forth,
 That, as he is condemned, he may dye. 30

Enter ALEXANDRO, with a NOBLE-MAN and HALBERTS.

NOB. In such extreames will nought but patience serue.

ALEX. But in extreames what patience shall I vse?
 Nor discontents it me to leaue the world,
 With whome there nothing can preuaile but wrong.

NOB. Yet hope the best.

ALEX. Tis heauen is my hope : 35
 As for the earth, it is too much infect
 To yeeld me hope of any of her mould.

VICE. Why linger ye? bring forth that daring feend,
 And let him die for his accursed deed.

ALEX. Not that I feare the extremitie of death — 40
 For nobles cannot stoop to seruile feare —
 Doo I, O king, thus discontented liue ;
 But this, O this, torments my labouring soule,
 That thus I die suspected of a sinne
 Whereof, as Heauens haue knöwne my secret thoughts, 45
 So am I free from this suggestion !

VICE. No more, I say ; to the tortures ! when?
 Binde him, and burne his body in those flames,

They binde him to the stake.

¹ A. bad ; *corr. silently by Haw. from 1633.*

That shall prefigure those vnquenched fiers
Of Phlegiton prepared for his soule. 50

ALEX. My guiltles death will be aueng'd on thee!
On thee, Villuppo, that hath malisde thus,
Or for thy meed hast falsely me accuse!

VIL. Nay, Alexandro, if thou menace me,
Ile lend a hand to send thee to the lake 55
Where those thy words shall perish with thy workes,
Iniurious traitour, monstrous homicide!

Enter EMBASSADOUR.

[EM.]¹ Stay! hold a-while! and heer, with pardon of
His Maiestie, lay hands vpon Villuppo!

VICE: Embassadour,² what newes hath vrg'd this sodain
entrance? 60

EM. Know, soueraigne l[ord], that Balthazar doth liue.

VICE. What saiest thou? liueth Balthazar, our sonne?

EM. Your Highnes sonne, L[ord] Balthazar, doth liue,
And, well intreated in the court of Spaine,
Humbly commends him to your Maiestie. 65
These eies beheld; and these my followers,
With these, the letters of the kings commends,³

Giues him letters.

Are happie witnesses of his Highnes health.

The KING lookes on the letters, and proceeds.⁴

VICE. [*reads*] "Thy sonne doth liue; your tribute is receiu'd;
Thy peace is made, and we are satisfied. 70
The rest resolute vpon as things proposde
For both our honors and thy benefite."

EM. These are his Highnes farther articles.

He giues him more letters.

VICE. Accursed wretch to intimate these ills
Against the life and reputation 75

¹ *Supplied from 1633.*

³ 1618, '23, '33, commend.

² *Qy. extra metrum.*

⁴ *The blank-verse habit is strong.*

Of noble Alexandro! come, my lord, vnbinde him!¹

[To ALEXANDRO] Let him vnbinde thee that is bound to death,
To make a quitall for thy discontent.

They vnbinde him.

ALEX. Dread lord, in kindenes you could do no lesse,
Vpon report of such a damned fact; 80
But thus we see our innocence hath sau'd
The hopeles life which thou, Villuppo, sought
By thy suggestions to haue massacred.

VICE. Say, false Villuppo, wherefore didst thou thus
Falsly betray Lord Alexandros life? 85
Him whom thou knowest that no vnkindenes els
But euen the slaughter of our deerest sonne
Could once haue moued vs to haue misconceaued.

ALEX. Say, trecherous Villuppo; tell the king!
Or wherein hath Alexandro vsed thee ill? 90

VIL. Rent with remembrance of so foule a deed,
My guiltie soule submits me to thy doome,
For, not for Alexandros iniuries,
But for reward and hope to be preferd,
Thus haue I shamelesly hazarded his life. 95

VICE. Which, villaine, shalbe ransomed with thy deeth,
And not so meane a torment as we heere
Deuide for him who thou saidst slew our sonne,
But with the bitterest torments and extreames
That may be yet inuented for thine end. 100

ALEX[ANDRO] *seemes to intreat.*

Intreat me not! Goe, take the traitor hence! *Exit VIL[LUPPO].*
And, Alexandro, let vs honor thee
With publique notice of thy loyaltie.
To end those things articulated heere
By our great l[ord], the mightie king of Spaine, 105
We with our councill will deliberate.
Come, Alexandro, keepe vs company. *Exeunt.*

¹ *Qy. an Alexandrine; or, as Kittredge suggests, my lord is hypermetrical.*

[Act Third. Scene Second.]

[Spain: near the DUKE'S castle.]

Enter HIERONIMO.

HIERO. Oh eies! no eies but fountains fraught with
teares;

Oh life! no life, but liuely fourme of death;

Oh world! no world, but masse of publique wrongs,

Confusde and filde with murder and misdeeds;

Oh sacred heauens, if this vnhalloved deed,

5

If this inhumane and barberous attempt,

If this incomparable¹ murder thus

Of mine, but now no more my sonne

Shall vnreueald and vnreuedged passe,

How should we tearme your dealings to be iust,

10

If you vniustly deale with those that in your iustice trust?

The night, sad secretary to my mones,

With direfull visions wake my vexed soule,

And with the wounds of my distresfull sonne

Solicite me for notice of his death;

15

The ougly feends do sally forth of hell,

And frame my steps to vnfrequented paths,

And feare my hart with fierce inflamed thoughts;

The cloudie day my discontents records,

Early begins to regester my dreames

20

And driue me forth to seeke the murtherer.

Eies, life, world, heauens, hel, night and day,

See, search, shew, send, some man, some meane, that may!²

A letter falleth.

Whats heere? a letter? Tush, it is not so!

A letter written to Hieronimo.

Red incke. 25

[*Reads*] ³ "For want of incke receiue this bloudie writ.

¹ A. incompaeeable.

² As two lines in A., the first ending with man.

³ Before this letter of BEL-IMPERIA'S, A. has BEL., as if she were present as a speaker.

Me hath my haples brother hid from thee.
 Reuenge thy-selfe on Balthazar and him,
 For these were they that murdered ¹ thy sonne.
 Hieronimo, reuenge Horatios death, 30
 And better fare ² then Bel-imperia doth !” —
³ What meanes this vnexpected miracle?
 My sonne slaine by Lorenzo and the prince?
 What cause had they Horatio to maligne?
 Or what might mooued thee, Bel-imperia, 35
 To accuse thy brother, had he beene the meane?
 Hieronimo, beware ! thou art betraide,
 And to intrap thy life this traine is laide.
 Aduise thee therefore, be not credulous :
 This is deuised to endanger thee, 40
 That thou, by this, Lorenzo shouldst accuse,
 And he, for thy dishonour done, should draw
 Thy life in question and thy name in hate.
 Deare was the life of my beloued sonne,
 And of his death behoues me be aueng'd : 45
 Then hazard not thine owne, Hieronimo,
 But liue t' effect thy resolution !
 I therefore will by circumstances trie
 What I can gather to confirme this writ,
 And, harkning ⁴ neere the Duke of Castiles house, 50
 Close if I can with Belimperia,
 To listen more, but nothing to bewray.

Enter PEDRINGANO.

HIERO. Now, Pedringano !

PED. Now, Hieronimo !

HIERO. Wheres thy lady ?

PED. I know not ; heers my lord.

Enter LORENZO.

LOR. How now, whose this ? Hieronimo ?

¹ So 1633 ; A. muredred.

³ Before this line A. has HIERO.

² So A. ; Haw. *prints far, which, though it is the reading of 1633, is clearly wrong.*

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, hearkeu.

HIERO. My lord. 55

PED. He asketh for my lady Bel-imperia.

LOR. What to doo, Hieronimo? The duke, my father,
hath,

Vpon some disgrace, a-while remoou'd her hence ;

But, if it be ought I may enforme her of,

Tell me, Hieronimo, and Ile let her know it. 60

HIERO. Nay, nay, my lord, I thank you, it shall not need.

I had a sute vnto her, but too late ;

And her disgrace makes me vnfortunate.

LOR. Why so, Hieronimo? Vse me.¹

HIERO. Oh, no, my lord, I dare not, it must not be ; 65

I humbly thank your lordship.

LOR. Why then, farewell!

HIERO. My grieffe no hart, my thoughts no tung can tell.

LOR. Come hither, Pedringano ; seest thou this? *Exit.*

PED. My lord, I see it, and suspect it too.

LOR. This is that damned villain Serberine, 70

That hath, I feare, reuealde Horatios death.

PED. My lord, he could not ; twas so lately done,

And since he hath not left my company.

¹ In 1618, '23, '33 ll. 64-66 are replaced by the following, — *I print from*
ed. 1633 :

LOR. Why so, Hieronimo? Use me.

HIERO. Who? You, my lord?

I reserue your favour for a greater honour ;

This is a very toy, my lord, a toy.

LOR. All's one, Hieronimo ; acquaint me with it.

HIERO. Y faith, my lord, tis an idle thing. 5

I must confesse I ha bin too slacke, too tardy,

Too remisse unto your Honour.

LOR. How now, Hieronimo?

HIERO. In troth, my lord, it is a thing of nothing :

The murder of a sonne or so, my lord, — ² 10

A thing of nothing.

LOR. Why then, farewell!

² In 1618, '23, '33 my lord comes after nothing, l. 11.

LOR. Admit he haue not; his conditions such
 As feare or flattering words may make him false. 75
 I know his humour, and there-with repent
 That ere I vsde him in this enterprise.
 But, Pedringano, to preuent the worst,
 And cause I know thee secret as my soule,
 Heere, for thy further satisfaction, take thou this! 80

Giues him more golde.

And harken to me; thus it is deuisde: ¹
 This night thou must — and prethee so resolute —
 Meet Serberine at S. Luigis ² Parke, —
 Thou knowest tis heere hard by behinde the house;
 There take thy stand, and see thou strike him sure, 85
 For dye he must, if we do meane to liue.

PED. But how shall Serberine be there, my lord?

LOR. Let me alone, Ile send to him to meet
 The prince and me where thou must doe this deed.

PED. It shalbe done, my l[ord]; it shall be done; 90
 And Ile goe arme my-selfe to meet him there.

LOR. When things shall alter, as I hope they wil,
 Then shalt thou mount for this, thou knowest my minde.³

Exit PED[RINGANO].

Che le Ieron! ⁴

Enter PAGE.

PAGE. My lord.

LOR. Goe, sirra,
 To Serberine, and bid him forthwith meet 95
 The prince and me at S. Luigis ² Parke,⁵
 Behinde the house, this euening, boy.

PAGE. I goe, my lord.

¹ 1618, '23, '33, thus it is: disguis'd.

² A. Haw. Liugis; 1633, Luges.

³ *One would expect a couplet here; but perhaps identical rhyme seemed undesirable.*

⁴ A. Che le Ieron; Haw. Che le Ieron; 1633, Che le Ieron. *I suppose this to be a call to the PAGE, not, as Hazlitt thinks, a remark to LORENZO.*

⁵ *Two lines in edd., Goe . . . forthwith, Meet . . . Parke.*

LOR.¹ But, sirra, let the houre be eight a-clocke.
Bid him not faile.

PAGE. I flye, my lord.

Exit.

LOR. Now to confirme the complot thou hast cast 100

Of all these practises, Ile spread the watch,
Vpon precise commandement from the king
Strongly to guard the place where Pedringano
This night shall murder haples Serberine.

Thus must we worke that will auoide distrust, 105

Thus must we practise to preuent mishap,
And thus one ill another must expulse.

This slie enquiry of Hieronimo

For Bel-imperia, breeds suspition;²

And this³ suspition boads a further ill. 110

As for my-selfe, I know my secret fault,
And so doe they, but I haue dealt for them.

They that for coine their soules endangered
To saue my life, for coyne shall venture theirs;

And better tis⁴ that base companions dye 115

Then by their life to hazard our good haps.

Nor shall they liue for me to feare their faith;

Ile trust my-selfe, my-selfe shalbe my freend;

For dye they shall, —

Slaues are ordein[e]d to no other end.² 120

Exit.

[Act Third. Scene Third.]

[*San Luigi's Park.*]

Enter PEDRINGANO with a pistoll.

PED.¹ Now, Pedringano, bid thy pistoll holde;
And holde on, Fortune! Once more fauour me!
Giue but successe to mine attempting spirit,

¹ So 1633; not in A.

² These two lines as one in A. 1633; no note in Haw. as to 1618, '23.

³ A. thus.

⁴ A. its.

And let me shift for taking of mine aime.
 Heere is the golde ! This is the golde proposde! 5
 It is no dreame that I aduenture for,
 But Pedringano is possesst thereof.
 And he that would not straine his conscience
 For him that thus his liberall purse hath stretcht,
 Vnworthy such a fauour may he faile, 10
 And, wishing, want when such as I preuaile !
 As for the feare of apprehension,
 I know, if need should be, my noble lord
 Will stand betweene me and ensuing harmes.
 Besides, this place is free from all suspect. 15
 Heere therefore will I stay and take my stand.

Enter the WATCH.

I WATCH.¹ I wonder much to what intent it is
 That we are thus expresly chargde to watch.
 II WATCH. Tis by commandement in the kings own
 name.
 III WATCH. But we were neuer wont to watch and ward 20
 So neere the duke his brothers² house before.
 II WATCH. Content your-selfe, stand close, 'theres some-
 what int.

Enter SERBERINE.

SER. [*aside*] Heere, Serberine, attend and stay thy pace ;
 For heere did Don Lorenzos page appoint
 That thou by his command shouldst meet with him. 25
 How fit a place, if one were so disposde,
 Me thinks this corner is to close with one.
 PED. [*aside*] Heere comes the bird that I must ceaze vpon ;
 Now, Pedringano, or neuer play the man !
 SER. [*aside*] I wonder that his lordship staies so long, 30
 Or wherefore should he send for me so late.
 PED. For this, Serberine ; and thou shalt ha'te !

¹ In A. 1633 the speeches of the WATCHMEN are merely marked 1, 2, 3.

² 1618, '23, '33 omit brothers.

Shootes the dagge.

So! there he lyes; my promise is performde.

The WATCH.

I WATCH. Harke, gentlemen, this is a pistol shot!

II WATCH. And heeres one slaine; stay the murderer! 35

PED. Now, by the sorrowes of the soules in hell,

He striues with the WATCH.

Who first laies hand on me, Ile be his priest!

III WATCH. Sirra, confesse, and therein play the priest.

Why hast thou thus vnkindely kild the man?

PED. Why, because he walkt abroad so late. 40

III WATCH. Come, sir, you had bene better kept your bed

Then haue committed this misdeed so late.

II WATCH. Come to the marshals with the murderer!

I WATCH. On to Hieronimos! helpe me heere

To bring the murdred body with vs too. 45

PED. Hieronimo? Carry me before whom you will;

What ere he be, Ile answere him and you.

And doe your worst, for I defie you all!

Exeunt.

[Act Third. Scene Fourth.]

[The DUKE's castle.]

Enter LORENZO and BALTHAZAR.

BAL. How now, my lord? what makes you rise so soone?

LOR. Feare of preuenting our mishaps too late.

BAL. What mischief is it that we not mistrust?

LOR. Our greatest ils we least mistrust, my lord,

And in-expected¹ harmes do hurt vs most. 5

BAL. Why, tell me, Don Lorenzo, — tell me, man,
If ought concernes our honour and your owne!

LOR. Nor you nor me, my lord, but both in one;
For I suspect — and the presumptions great —

¹ 1633, unexpected.

That by those base confederates in our fault 10
 Touching the death of Don Horatio
 We are betraide to olde Hieronimo.

BAL. Betraide, Lorenzo? tush! it cannot be.

LOR. A guiltie conscience vrged with the thought
 Of former euils, easily cannot erre : 15
 I am perswaded — and diswade me not —
 That als reuealed to Hieronimo.
 And therefore know that I haue cast it thus —

[Enter PAGE.]

But heeres the page. How now? what newes with thee?

PAGE. My lord, Serberine is slaine. 20

BAL. Who? Serberine, my man?

PAGE. Your Highnes man, my lord.

LOR. Speak, page: who murdered him?

PAGE. He that is apprehended for the fact.

LOR. Who?

PAGE. Pedringano. 25

BAL. Is ¹ Serberine slaine, that lou'd his lord so well?
 Iniurious villaine! murderer of his freend!

LOR. Hath Pedringano murdered Serberine?
 My lord, let me entreat you to take the paines
 To exasperate and hasten his reuenge. 30
 With your complaints vnto my l[ord] the king.
 This their dissention breeds a greater doubt.

BAL. Assure thee, Don Lorenzo, he shall dye,
 Or els his Highnes hardly shall deny.
 Meane-while, Ile haste the marshall sessions, 35
 For die he shall for this his damned deed.

Exit BAL[HAZAR].

LOR. [*aside*] Why, so! this fits our former pollicie;
 And thus experience bids the wise to deale.
 I lay the plot, he prosecutes the point;
 I set the trap, he breakes the worthles twigs, 40

And sees not that wherewith the bird was limde.
 Thus hopefull men, that meane to holde their owne,
 Must look, like fowlers, to their dearest freends.
 He runnes to kill whome I haue holpe¹ to catch,
 And no man knowes it was my reaching fatch.² 45
 Tis hard to trust vnto a multitude, —
 Or any one, in mine opinion,
 When men themselues their secrets will reueaie.

Enter a MESSENGER with a letter.

LOR. Boy.

PAGE. My lord.

LOR. Whats he?

MES. I haue a letter to your lordship.

LOR. From whence? 50

MES. From Pedringano that 's imprisoned.

LOR. So he is in prison then?

MES. I, my good lord.

LOR. What would he with vs?

[Reads the letter.]

He writes vs heere

To stand good l[ord] and help him in distres.³
 Tell him I haue his letters, know his minde ; 55
 And what we may, let him assure him of.
 Fellow, be gone ; my boy shall follow thee.

Exit MES[SENGER].

[Aside] This works like waxe ! Yet once more try thy wits. —
 Boy, goe conuay this purse to Pedringano, —
 Thou knowest the prison, — closely giue it him, 60
 And be aduisde that none be there-about.
 Bid him be merry still, but secret ;
 And, though the marshall sessions be to-day,
 Bid him not doubt of his deliuerie.
 Tell him his pardon is already signde, 65

¹ 1623, '33, hope.

² Haw. fetch, *without note.*

³ 1633 *prints to stand . . . distres, &c., in italics, as if a quotation, the &c. indicating perhaps liberty of improvisation.*

And thereon bid him boldly be resolued ;
 For, were he ready to be turned off, —
 As tis my will the vttermost be tride, —
 Thou with his pardon shalt attend him still.
 Shew him this boxe, tell him his pardons int ; 70
 But opent not, and if thou louest thy life,
 But let him wisely keepe his hopes vnknowne.
 He shall not want while Don Lorenzo liues.
 Away !¹

PAGE. I goe, my lord, I runne !

LOR. But, sirra, see that this be cleanly done. 75

Exit PAGE.

Now stands our fortune on a tickle point,
 And now or neuer ends Lorenzos doubts.
 One onely thing is vneffected yet,
 And thats to see the executioner, —
 But to what end? I² list not trust the aire 80
 With vtterance of our pretence therein,
 For feare the priuie whispring of the winde
 Conuay our words amongst vnfrendly eares,
 That lye too open to aduantages.
Et quel che³ voglio io,⁴ nessun lo⁵ sa, 85
Intendo io quel [che] mi basterà.⁶ *Exit.*

[Act Third. Scene Fifth.]

[*A street.*]

Enter BOY with the boxe.

My maister hath forbidden me to look in this box, and, by my troth,⁷ tis likely, if he had not warned me, I should not haue had so much idle time; for wee mens-kinde⁸ in our minoritie are like women in their vncertaintie: that they are

¹ In edd. *this word is in l. 73.*

² 1618, '23, '33 *omit.*

³ Edd. *que.*

⁴ A. *li*; 1633, *il*; Haw. *io.*

⁵ A. *nessun le*; 1633, *nessum le.*

⁶ A. 1633, *bassara*; Haw. *bastara.*

⁷ 1618, '23, '33, *honesty.*

⁸ 1618, '23, '33, *men-kind.*

most forbidden, they wil soonest attempt; so I now. By my 5
bare honesty,¹ heeres nothing but the bare emptie box!
Were it not sin against secrecie, I would say it were a peece
of gentlemanlike knauery. I must goe to Pedringano and
tell him his pardon is in this boxe! Nay, I would haue sworne 10
it, had I not seene the contrary. I cannot choose but smile
to thinke how the villain wil flout the gallows, scorne the
audience, and descant on the hangman, and al presuming of
his pardon from hence. Wilt not be an odde iest, for me to
stand and grace euery iest he makes, pointing my finger at
this boxe, as who would ² say: "Mock on, heers thy warrant!" 15
Ist not a scuruiet iest that a man should iest himselfe to death?
Alas, poore Pedringano! I am in a sorte sorie for thee, but, if
I should be hanged with thee, I cannot ³ weep.

Exit.

[Act Third. Scene Sixth.]

[*The court of justice.*]

Enter HIERONIMO and the DEPUTIE.

HIERO. Thus must we toyle in other mens extreames
That know not how to remedie our owne,
And doe them iustice, when vniustly we
For all our wrongs can compasse no redrese.
But shall I neuer liue to see the day 5
That I may come by iustice of the Heauens
To know the cause that may my cares allay?
This toyles my body, this consumeth age,
That onely I to all men iust must be,
And neither gods nor men be iust to me! 10

DEP. Worthy Hieronimo, your office askes
A care to punish such as doe transgresse.

HIERO. So ist my duety to regarde his death
Who when he liued deserued my dearest blood.

¹ 1618, '23, '33, credit.

³ 1618, '23, '33, could not.

² 1618, '23, '33, should.

But come ; for that we came for, lets begin ; 15
For heere lyes that which bids me to be gone.

Enter OFFICERS, BOY, & PEDRINGANO with a letter in his hand, bound.

DEPU. Bring forth the prisoner for the court is set.

PED. Gramercy, boy! but it was time to come,
For I had written to my lord anew
A neerer matter that concerneth him, 20
For feare his lordship had forgotten me ;
But, sith he hath remembred me so well,
Come, come, come on ! when shall we to this geere?

HIERO. Stand forth, thou monster, murderer of men,
And heere, for satisfaction of the world, 25
Confesse thy folly and repent thy fault,
For ther's thy place of execution.

PED. This is short worke! Well, to your marshallship
First I confesse, nor feare I death therfore,
I am the man, — twas I slew Serberine. 30
But, sir, then you think this shalbe the place
Where we shall satisfie you for this geare?

DEPU. I, Pedringano.

PED. Now¹ I think not so.

HIERO. Peace, impudent! for thou shalt finde it so ;
For blood with blood shall, while I sit as iudge, 35
Be satisfied, and the law dischargde.
And, though my-selfe cannot receiue the like,
Yet will I see that others haue their right.
Dispatch ! the faults² approued and confest,
And³ by our law he is condemned to die. 40

HANG. Come on, sir!⁴ are you ready?

PED. To do what, my fine officious knaue?

HANG. To goe to this geere.

PED. O, sir, you are to forward ; thou wouldst faine furnish me with a halter, to disfurnish me of my habit.⁵ 45

¹ 1618, '23, '33, No.

³ A. Hnd.

² 1633, fault.

⁴ A. sit ; 1633, sir.

⁵ *In the paragraphing of this prose I follow A. 1633.*

So I should goe out of this geere, my raiment, into that geere, the rope.

But, hangman, now I spy your knauery, Ile not change without boot ; thats flat.

HANG. Come, sir. 50

PED. So then I must vp?

HANG. No remedie.

PED. Yes, but there shalbe for my¹ comming downe.

HANG. Indeed heers a remedie for that.

PED. How? be turnd off? 55

HANG. I, truely. Come, are you ready?

I pray,² sir, dispatch, the day goes away.

PED. What, doe you hang by the howre? If you doo, I may chance to break your olde custome.

HANG. Faith, you haue³ reason, for I am like to break 60 your yong neck.

PED. Dost thou mock me, hangman? Pray God I be not preserued to break your knaues-pate for this !

HANG. Alas, sir, you are a foot too low to reach it, and I hope you will neuer grow so high while I am in the office. 65

PED. Sirra, dost see yonder boy with the box in his hand?

HANG. What, he that points to it with his finger?

PED. I, that companion.

HANG. I know him not ; but what of him? 70

PED. Dooest thou think to liue till his olde doublet will make thee a new trusse? ⁴

HANG. I, and many a faire yeere after, to trusse vp many an honeste man then either thou or he.

PED. What hath he in his boxe, as thou thinkst? 75

HANG. Faith, I cannot tell, nor I care not greatly. Me thinks you should rather hearken to your soules health.

PED. Why, sirra hangman, I take it that that is good for the body is likewise good for the soule: and it may be in that box is balme for both. 80

¹ 1618, '23, '33 omit my.

² 1633, Haw. I pray you.

³ 1618, '23, '33, haue no.

⁴ A. truffs.

HANG. Wel, thou art euen the meriest peece of mans
flesh that ere gronde at my office-doore.

PED. Is your roaguery become an office, with a knaues
name?

HANG. I, and that shall all they witnes that see you seale 85
it with a theeues name.

PED. I prethee, request this good company to pray with ¹
me.

HANG. I, mary, sir, this is a good motion! My maisters,
you see hears a good fellow. 90

PED. Nay, nay, now I remember me, let them alone till
some other time; for now I haue no great need.

HIERO. I haue not seen a wretch so impudent.
O monstrous times where murders set so light,
And where the soule that should be shrinde in heauen 95

Solelie delights in interdicted things,
Still wandering in the thornie passages
That intercepts it-selfe of hapines!

Murder? O bloody monster! God forbid
A fault so foule should scape vnpunished! 100
Dispatch and see this execution done;
This makes me to remember thee, my sonne.

Exit HIERO[NIMO].

PED. Nay, soft! no hast!

DEPU. Why, wherefore stay you? haue you hope of life?

PED. Why, I! 105

HANG. As how?

PED. Why, rascall, by my pardon from the king.

HANG. Stand you on that? then you shall off with this.

He turnes him off.

DEPU. So, executioner, conuey him hence;
But let his body be vnburied. 110

Let not the earth be choked or infect
With that which Heauens ² contemnes and men neglect.

Exeunt.

¹ 1618, '23, '33, for.

² Haw. heaven.

[Act Third. Scene Seventh.]

[HIERONIMO'S *house.*]*Enter* HIERONIMO.

HIER.¹ Where shall I run to breath abroad my woes, —
 My woes whose weight hath wearied the earth,
 Or mine exclaims that haue surcharged the aire
 With ceasles plaints for my deceased sonne?
 The blustering winds, conspiring with my words, 5
 At my lament haue moued the leaueles trees,
 Disroabde the medowes of their flowred greene,
 Made mountains marsh with spring-tides² of my teares,
 And broken through the brazen gates of hell;
 Yet still tormented is my tortured soule 10
 With broken sighes and restles passions,
 That, winged, mount, and, houering in the aire,
 Beat³ at the windowes of the brightest heauens,
 Solliciting for iustice and reuenge.
 But they are plac't in those imperiall heights, 15
 Where, countermurde with walles of diamond,
 I finde the place impregnable, and they
 Resist my woes and giue my words no way.

Enter HANGMAN *with a letter.*

HANG. O Lord, sir! God blesse you, sir! the man, sir, —
 Petergade, sir: he that was so full of merrie conceits — 20

HIERO. Wel, what of him?

HANG. O Lord, sir! he went the wrong way; the fellow
 had a faire commission to the contrary. Sir, heere is his
 pasport, I pray you, sir; we haue done him wrong.

HIERO. I warrant thee; giue it me. 25

HANG. You will stand between the gallowes and me?

HIERO. I, I!

¹ Not in A.; supplied from 1633.

² 1618, '23, '33, spring-tide.

³ 1618, '23, '33, But; perhaps caught up from l. 15.

HANG. I thank your l[ord] worship.

Exit HANGMAN.

HIERO. And yet, though somewhat neerer me concernes
 I will, to ease the greefe that I sustaine, 30
 Take truce with sorrow while I read on this.
 [*Reads*] “ My lord, I writ,¹ as mine extreames requirde,²
 That you would labour my deliuerie :
 If you neglect, my life is desperate,
 And in my death I shall reueale the troth. 35
 You know, my lord, I slew him for your sake,
 And was confederate with the prince and you ;
 Wonne by rewards and hopefull promises,
 I holpe to murder Don Horatio too.” —
 Holpe he to murder mine Horatio ? 40
 And actors in th’ accursed tragedie
 Wast thou, Lorenzo? Balthazar and thou,
 Of whom my sonne, my sonne deseru’d so well?
 What haue I heard? what haue mine eies behelde?
 O sacred heauens, may it come to passe 45
 That such a monstrous and detested deed,
 So closely smotherd and so long conceald,
 Shall thus by this be venged³ or reueald?
 Now see I, what I durst not then suspect,
 That Bel-imperias letter was not fainde, 50
 Nor fained she, though falsly they haue wrongd
 Both her, my-selfe, Horatio and themselues.
 Now may I make compare twixt hers and this
 Of euerie accident. I neere could finde
 Till now, and now I feelingly perceiue, 55
 They did what Heauen vnpunisht would⁴ not leaue.
 O false Lorenzo! are these thy flattering looks?
 Is this the honour that thou didst my sonne?
 And, Balthazar, — bane to thy soule and me ! —
 Was this the ransome he reseru’d thee for ?⁵ 60

¹ All edd. write.

² *So* A. ; Haw. require.

³ 1618, Shall thus be this revenged; 1623, '33, Shall thus be thus revenged.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, should.

⁵ 1618, '23, '33, for thee.

Woe to the cause of these constrained warres!
 Woe to thy basenes and captiuitie!
 Woe to thy birth, thy body and thy soule,
 Thy cursed father, and thy conquerd selfe!
 And band with bitter execrations be 65
 The day and place where he did pittie thee!
 But wherefore waste I mine vnfruitfull words,
 When naught but blood will satisfie my woes?
 I will goe plaine me to my lord the king,
 And cry aloud for iustice through the court, 70
 Wearing the flints with these my withered feet,
 And either purchase iustice by intreats
 Or tire them all with my reuenging threats.

Exit.[Act Third. Scene Eighth.]¹

[HIERONIMO'S house.]

Enter ISABELL and her MAID.

ISA. So that you say this hearb will purge the eye,²
 And this the head? ah! but none of them will purge the
 hart!

No, thers no medicine left for my disease,
 Nor any phisick to recure the dead!

She runnes lunatick.

Horatio! O, wheres Horatio? 5

MAIDE. Good madam, affright not thus your-selfe
 With outrage for your sonne Horatio:
 He sleepes in quiet in the Elizian fields.

ISA. Why did I not giue you gownes and goodly things,
 Bought you a wistle and a whipstalke too, 10
 To be reuenged on their villanies?

MAID. Madame, these humors doe torment my soule.

¹ Here Haw. begins Act *iv.* I have not followed him, because the CHORUS does not appear here, and because it is not certain that Kyd felt any obligation to make his play consist of five acts.

² 1618, '23, '33, eyes.

ISA. My soule? poore soule, thou talkes of things
 Thou knowest not what! My soule hath siluer wings,
 That mounts me vp vnto the highest heauens — 15
 To heauen? I, there sits my Horatio,
 Backt with a troupe of fiery cherubins
 Dauncing about his newly healed wounds,
 Singing sweet hymns and chaunting heauenly notes,
 Rare harmony to greet his innocence, 20
 That dyde,¹ I, dyde a mirrour in our daies!
 But say, where shall I finde, the men, the murderers,
 That slew Horatio? whether shall I runne
 To finde them out, that murdered my sonne?

Exeunt.

[Act Third. Scene Ninth.]

[*The Duke's castle.*]BEL-IMPERIA *at a window.*

BEL. What meanes this outrage that is offred me?
 Why am I thus sequestred from the court?
 No notice? shall I not know the cause
 Of these² my secret and suspitious ils?
 Accursed brother! vnkinde murderer! 5
 Why bends thou thus thy minde to martir me?
 Hieronimo, why writ³ I of thy wrongs,
 Or why art thou so slacke in thy reuenge?
 Andrea! O Andrea, that thou sawest
 Me for thy freend Horatio handled thus, 10
 And him for me thus causeles murdered!
 Wel, force perforce, I must constraîne my-selfe
 To patience, and apply me to the time,
 Till Heauen, as I haue hoped, shall set me free.

*Enter CHRISTOPHILL.*⁴CHRIS. Come, Madame Bel-imperia, this may⁵ not be! 15*Exeunt.*¹ 1618, '23, '33, liv'd.³ 1618, '23, '33, write.⁵ 1618, '23, '33, must² So 1633; A. this.⁴ 1633, Christophel.

Els wouldst thou not haue vsde thy sister so :
 First, to affright me with thy weapons drawne,
 And with extreames abuse my company ;
 And then to hurry me like whirlwinds rage
 Amidst a crew of thy confederates, 30
 And clap¹ me vp where none might come at me,
 Nor I at any to reueale my wrongs.
 What madding fury did possesse thy wits?
 Or wherein ist that I offended thee?

LOR. Aduise you better, Bel-imperia ; 35
 For I haue done you no disparagement, —
 Vnlesse, by more discretion then deseru'd,
 I sought to saue your honour and mine owne.

BEL. Mine honour? Why, Lorenzo, wherein ist
 That I neglect my reputation so 40
 As you, or any, need to rescue it?

LOR. His Highnes and my father were resolu'd
 To come conferre with olde Hieronimo
 Concerning certaine matters of estate
 That by the viceroy was determined. 45

BEL. And wherein was mine honour toucht in that?

BAL. Haue patience, Bel-imperia ; heare the rest.

LOR. Me, next in sight, as messenger they sent
 To giue him notice that they were so nigh :
 Now, when I came, consorted with the prince, 50
 And vnexpected in an arbour there
 Found Bel-imperia with Horatio —

BEL. How than?

LOR. Why then, remembring that olde disgrace
 Which you for Don Andrea had indurde, 55
 And now were likely longer to sustaine
 By being found so meanelly accompanied,
 Thought rather, for I knew² no readier meane,
 To thrust Horatio forth my fathers way.

BAL. And carry you obscurely some-where els, 60
 Least that his Highnes should haue found you there.

¹ 1633, clapt.

² 1618, '23, '33, know.

BEL. Euen so, my lord? And you are witnessse
That this is true which he entreateth of?
You, gentle brother, forged this for my sake?
And you, my lord, were made his instruement? 65
A worke of worth! worthy the noting too!
But whats the cause that you concealde me since?

LOR. Your melancholly, sister, since the newes
Of your first fauourite Don Andreas death
My fathers olde wrath hath exasperate. 70

BAL. And better wast for you, being in disgrace,
To absent your-selfe and giue his fury place.

BEL. But why had I no notice of his ire?

LOR. That were to adde more fewell to your fire,
Who burnt like Aetne for Andreas losse. 75

BEL. Hath not my father then enquirde for me?

LOR. Sister, he hath; and thus excusde I thee.

He whispereth in her care.

But, Bel-imperia, see the gentle prince;
Looke on thy loue; beholde yong Balthazar,
Whose passions by thy presence are increast, 80
And in whose melanchollie thou maiest see
Thy hate, his¹ loue, thy flight, his following thee.

BEL. Brother, you are become an oratour —
I know not, I, by what experience —
Too pollitick for me, past all compare, 85
Since last I saw you. But content your-selfe;
The prince is meditating higher things.

BAL. Tis of thy beauty, then, that conquers kings,
Of those thy tresses, Ariadnes twines,²
Wherewith my libertie thou hast surprisde, 90
Of that thine iuorie front, my sorrowes map,
Wherein I see no hauen to rest my hope.

BEL. To loue and feare, and both at once, my lord,
In my concept, are things of more import
Then womens wits are to be busied with. 95

¹ 1618, is.

² 1618, '23, '33, twinnes.

BAL. Tis I that loue.
 BEL. Whome?
 BAL. Bel-imperia.
 BEL. But I that feare.
 BAL. Whome?
 BEL. Bel-imperia.
 LOR. Feare your-selfe?
 BEL. I, brother.
 LOR. How?
 BEL. As those¹
 That, what² they loue, are loath and feare to loose.
 BAL. Then, faire, let Balthazar your keeper be. 100
 BEL. No, Balthazar doth feare as well as we ;
Et³ tremulo metui pauidum⁴ iunxere⁵ timorem,
Et³ vanum stolidae proditiōis opus. *Exit.*
 LOR. Nay, and you argue things so cunningly,
 Weele goe continue this discourse at court. 105
 BAL. Led by the loadstar of her heauenly lookes,
 Wends poore oppressed Balthazar,
 As ore the mountains walkes the wanderer
 Incertain to effect his pilgrimage. *Exeunt.*

[Act Third. Scene Eleventh.]

[A street.]

*Enter two PORTINGALES, and HIERONIMO meets them.*I PORT.⁶ By your leaue, sir.⁷¹ A. 1633, Haw. *have these two words in l. 99.*² 1618, '23, '33, when.⁴ 1633, *me tui pauidem.*³ A. 1633 *have Est in the first line and Et in the second ; Haw. Et in both, without note.*⁵ A. *iunx ei e.*⁶ *Here and below A. has only 1, 2.*⁷ *Between this line and the next 1618, '23, '33 have the following passage:*

HIER. Tis neither as you thinke, nor as you thinke,
 Nor as you thinke: you'r wide all:
 These slippers are not mine, they were my sonne Horatios.
 My sonne? And what's a sonne? A thing begot

HIERO. Good leaue haue you ; nay, I pray you goe,

Within a paire of minutes, there-about ; 5
 A lump bred up in darkenesse, and doth serue
 To ballance those light creatures we call women,
 And at the¹ nine moneths end creepes foorth to light.
 What is there yet in a sonne to make a father
 Dote, rave or runne mad? Being borne, it pouts, 10
 Cries, and breeds teeth. What is there yet in a sonne?
 He must be fed, be taught to goe and speake.
 I, or yet? Why might not a man love
 A calfe as well, or melt in passion over
 A frisking kid, as for a sonne? Me thinkes 15
 A young bacon or a fine smooth little² horse-colt
 Should moove a man as much as doth a son ;
 For one of these in very little time
 Will grow to some good use, whereas a sonne,
 The more he growes in stature and in yeares, 20
 The more unsquar'd, unleavelled³ he appeares,
 Reckons his parents among the ranke of fooles,
 Strikes cares⁴ upon their heads with his mad ryots,
 Makes them looke old before they meet with age.—
 This is a son ! And what a losse were this, 25
 Considered truely ! Oh, but my Horatio
 Grew out of reach of those insatiate humours :
 He loved his loving parents, he was my comfort
 And his mothers joy, the very arme that did
 Hold up our house, our hopes were stored up in him. 30
 None but a damned murderer could hate him !
 He had not seene the backe
 Of nineteene yeere, when his strong arme unhorst
 The proud prince Balthazar ; and his great minde,
 Too full of honour tooke him unto⁵ mercy, 35
 That valiant but ignoble Portingale.
 Well ! Heaven is Heaven still ! And there 's⁶ Nemesis, and Furies,
 And things called whippes, and they sometimes doe meet
 With murderers ! They doe not alwayes scape, —
 That is⁷ some comfort ! I, I, I ; and then 40
 Time steales on, and steales and steales, till violence
 Leapes foorth like thunder wrapt in a ball of fire,
 And so doth bring confusion to them all.

[Line 2 follows.]

¹ Haw. omits the.

⁴ So 1623, '33 ; 1618, care.

² 1633, little smooth.

⁵ 1633, us to.

³ So 1623, '33 ; 1618, unbeveled.

⁶ 1633, there is.

⁷ 1633, that 's.

For Ile leaue you,¹ if you can leaue me so.

II PORT. Pray you, which is the next way to my l[ord]
the dukes?

HIERO. The next way from me.

I PORT. To his house, we meane. 5

HIERO. O hard by; tis yon house that you see.

II PORT. You could not tell vs if his sonne were there?

HIERO. Who? my lord Lorenzo?

I PORT. I, sir.

He goeth in at one doore and comes out at another.

HIERO. Oh, forbear,²

For other talke for vs far fitter were!

But, if you be importunate to know 10

The way to him and where to finde him out,

Then list to me, and Ile resolute your doubt:

There is a path vpon your left hand side

That leadeth from a guiltie conscience

Vnto a forrest of distrust and feare,— 15

A darkesome place and dangerous to passe,—

There shall you meet with melancholy thoughts,

Whose balefull³ humours if you but vpholde,⁴

It will conduct you to dispaire and death:

Whose rockie cliffes when you haue once behelde, 20

Within a hugie dale of lasting night,

That, kindled⁵ with the worlds iniquities,

Doth cast vp filthy and detested fumes,—

Not far from thence where murderers haue built

A habitation for their cursed soules, 25

There, in a brazen caldron fixt by Ioue

In his fell wrath vpon a sulphur flame,

¹ 1618, '23, '33 omit you.

² A. 1633, Haw. have these two words in l. 9. I regard who, l. 8, as hypermetrical.

³ 1618, '23, '33, palefull.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, behold.

⁵ 1618, '23, '33, That's kindled; A. That kinded.

Your-selues shall finde Lorenzo bathing him
In boyling lead and blood of innocents.

I PORT. Ha, ha, ha!

30

HIERO. Ha, ha, ha! why, ha, ha, ha! Farewell, good ha,
ha, ha!

Exit.

II PORT. Doubtles this man is passing lunaticke,
Or imperfection of his age doth make him dote.

Come, lets away to seek my lord the duke.

[Exeunt.]

[Act Third. Scene Twelfth.]

[The Spanish court.]

Enter HIERONIMO with a ponyard in one hand, and a rope in the other.

HIERO. Now, sir, perhaps I come and see the king,
The king sees me, and faine would heare my sute :

Why, is not this a strange and seld-seene thing
That standers by with toyes should strike me mute?
Go too, I see their shifts, and say no more ;

5

Hieronimo, tis time for thee to trudge!
Downe by the dale that flowes with purple gore
Standeth a firie tower ; there sits a iudge
Vpon a seat of steele and molten brasse,
And twixt his teeth he holdes a fire-brand,
That leades vnto the lake where hell doth stand.

10

Away, Hieronimo ; to him be gone :
Heele doe thee iustice for Horatios death.
Turne down this path, thou shalt be with him strait ;
Or this, and then thou needst not take thy breath.

15

This way, or that way? Soft and faire, not so!
For, if I hang or kill my-selfe, lets know
Who will reuenge Horatios murther then!
No, no ; fie, no ! pardon me, ile none of that :

He flings away the dagger & halter.

This way Ile take ; and this way comes the king,

20

He takes them vp againe.

And heere Ile haue a fling at him, thats flat!
 And, Balthazar, Ile be with thee to bring;
 And thee, Lorenzo! Heeres the king; nay, stay!
 And heere, — I, heere, — there goes the hare¹ away!

Enter KING, EMBASSADOR, CASTILE, and LORENZO.

KING. Now shew, embassadour, what our viceroy saith: 25
 Hath hee receiu'd the articles we sent?

HIERO. Iustice! O, iustice to Hieronimo!

LOR. Back! seest thou not the king is busie?

HIERO. O! is he so?

KING. Who is he that interrupts our busines? 30

HIERO. Not I! [*aside*] Hieronimo, beware! goe by, goe
 by!

EMBAS. Renowned king, he hath receiued and read
 Thy kingly proffers and thy promist league,
 And, as a man extreamely ouer-ioyd
 To heare his sonne so princely entertainde, 35
 Whose death he had so solemnly bewailde,
 This, for thy further satisfaction
 And kingly loue, he kindly lets thee know:
 First, for the marriage of his princely sonne
 With Bel-imperia, thy beloued neece, 40
 The newes are more delightfull to his soule
 Then myrrh or incense to the offended Heauens.
 In person, therefore, will he come himselfe
 To see the marriage rites solemnized
 And in the presence of the court of Spaine 45
 To knit a sure inexecrable² band
 Of kingly loue and euerlasting league
 Betwixt the crownes of Spaine and Portingale.
 There will he giue his crowne to Balthazar,
 And make a queene of Bel-imperia. 50

¹ 1633, haire.

² 1618, '23, '33, inexplicable; Haw. inextricable.

KING. Brother, how like you this our vice-roies loue?

CAST. No doubt, my lord, it is an argument
Of honorable care to keepe his freend
And wondrous zeale to Balthazar, his sonne.
Nor am I least indebted to his Grace, 55
That bends his liking to my daughter thus.

EM. Now last, dread lord, heere hath his Highnes sent —
Although he send not that his sonne returne —
His ransome due to Don Horatio.

HIERO. Horatio? who cals Horatio? 60

KING. And well remembred, thank his Maiestie!
Heere, see it giuen to Horatio.

HIERO. Iustice! O iustice! iustice, gentle king!

KING. Who is that? Hieronimo?

HIERO. Iustice! O iustice! O my sonne! my sonne! 65
My sonne, whom naught can ransome or redeeme!

LOR. Hieronimo, you are not well aduise.

HIERO. Away, Lorenzo! hinder me no more,
For thou hast made me bankrupt of my blisse!
Giue me my sonne! You shall not ransome him! 70
Away! Ile rip the bowels of the earth,

He diggeth with his dagger.

And ferrie ouer to th' Elizian plaines
And bring my sonne to shew his deadly wounds.
Stand from about me! Ile make a pickaxe of my poniard,
And heere surrender vp my marshalship; 75
For Ile goe marshall vp the¹ feends in hell,
To be auenged on you all for this.

KING. What meanes this outrage?
Will none of you restraine his fury?²

HIERO. Nay, soft and faire; you shall not need to striue! 80
Needs must he goe that the diuels driue. *Exit.*

KING. What accident hath hapt³ Hieronimo?

¹ 1618, '23, '33, my.

² A. 1633, Haw. have these two lines as one.

³ 1618, '23, '33, hapt to.

I haue not seene him to demeane him so.

LOR. My gracious lord, he is with extreame pride
 Conceiued of yong Horatio, his sonne, 85
 And couetous of hauing to himselfe
 The ransome of the yong prince, Balthazar,
 Distract, and in a manner lunatick.

KING. Beleeue me, nephew, we are sorie for 't;¹
 This is the loue that fathers beare their sonnes. 90
 But, gentle brother, goe giue to him this golde,
 The princes raunsome ; let him haue his due ;
 For what he hath, Horatio shall not want.
 Happily Hieronimo hath need thereof.

LOR. But if he be thus helpelesly² distract, 95
 Tis requisite his office be resignde
 And giuen to one of more discretion.

KING. We shall encrease his melanchollie so.
 Tis best that we see further in it first ;
 Till when, our-selfe will exempt the place. 100
 And, brother, now bring in the embassador,
 That he may be a witnes of the match
 Twixt Balthazar and Bel-imperia,
 And that we may prefixe a certaine time
 Wherein the marriage shalbe solemnized, 105
 That we may haue thy lord the vice-roy heere.

EM. Therein your Highnes highly shall content
 His Maiestie, that longs to heare from hence.

KING. On then, and heare you,³ lord embassadour.

Exeunt.

¹ So 1633 ; A. fort.

² 1618, '23, '33, haplesly.

³ 1618, '23, '33, your.

[Act Third. Scene Thirteenth.]

[HIERONIMO'S house.]

¹ Enter HIERONIMO with a book in his hand.*Vindicta mihi.*

I, heauen will be reuenged of euey ill,
Nor will they suffer murder vnrepaid!

¹ At the beginning of this scene 1618, '23, '33 insert the following passage:

Enter IAQUES and PEDRO.

IAQ. I wonder, Pedro, why our master thus
At mid-night sends us with our torches light,
When man and bird and beast are all at rest
Save those that watch for rape and bloody murther?

PED. O Iaques, know thou that our masters mind
Is much distraught since his Horatio died;
And, now his aged yeares should sleepe in rest,
His heart in quiet, like a desperate man,
Growes lunatike and childish for his sonne.
Sometimes as he doth at his table sit,
He speakes as if Horatio stood by him;
Then, starting in a rage, falles on the earth,
Cries out "Horatio! Where is my Horatio?"
So that, with extreame grieffe and cutting sorrow,
There is not left in him one inch of man. —
See, heere he comes!

5

10

15

Enter HIERONIMO.

HIER. I pry through every crevice of each wall,
Looke at each tree, and search through every brake,
Beat on the bushes, stampe our grandame earth,
Dive in the water, and stare up to heauen;
Yet cannot I behold my sonne Horatio.
How now? who's there? Sprights! sprights!

20

PED. We are your servants that attend you, sir.

HIER. What make you with your torches in the darke?

PED. You bid us light them and attend you here.

25

HIER. No, no; you are deceiv'd! not I; you are deceiv'd!
Was I so mad to bid you light your torches now?
Light me your torches at the mid of noone,
When-as the sun-god rides in all his glory, —
Light me your torches then.

Then stay, Hieronimo, attend their will;
For mortall men may not appoint their time.

PED. Then we burne day-light. 30

HIER. Let it be burnt! Night is a murderous slut
That would not have her treasons to be seene;
And yonder pale-fac'd Heccat there, the moone,
Doth give consent to that is done in darkenesse;
And all those starres that gaze upon her face 35
Are aglots on her sleeve, pinnes on her traine,
And those that should be powerful and divine
Doe sleepe in darkenesse, when they most should shine.

PED. Provoke them not, faire sir, with tempting words!
The Heavens are gracious, and your miseries 40
And sorrow makes you speake you know not what.

HIER. Villaine, thou lyst! and thou doest nought
But tell me I am mad. Thou lyst! I am not mad.
I know thee to be Pedro, and hee Iaques, —
Ile prove it to thee; and, were I mad, hovv could I? 45
Where was she the same night when my Hor[at]io
Was murdred? She should have shone: search thou the booke!
Had the moone shone in my boyes face, ther was a kind of grace
That I know, nay I do know, had the murderer¹ seene him,
His weapon would have falne and cut the earth, 50
Had he bin fram'd of nought but blood and death.
Alacke! vvhhen mischiefe doth it knowes not what,
What shall we say to mischiefe?

Enter ISABELLA.

ISA. Deare Hieronimo, come in a-doores!
O, seeke not meanes so to increase thy sorrow! 55

HIER. Indeed, Isabella, wee doe nothing here;
I doe not crie, — aske Pedro and Iaques, —
Not I, indeed; wee are very merry, very merry.

ISA. How? be merry here? be merry here?

Is not this the place, and this the very tree, 60
Where my Horatio died? where hee was murdered?

HIER. Was — do not say vvhath. Let her weep it out.
This was the tree; I set it of a kinnell;
And, when our hote Spaine could not let it grow,
But that the infant and the humane sappe 65
Began to wither, duely twice a morning
Would I be sprinkling it with fountaine water.

¹ 1633, murderers.

Per scelus semper tutum est sceleribus iter :

Strike, and strike home, where wrong is offred thee ;

At last it grew and grew, and bore and bore,
Till, at the length, it grew a gallows and did beare our son, —
It bore thy fruit and mine! O wicked, wicked plant!

70

One knocks within at the doore.

See who knocks there.

PED. It is a painter, sir.

HIER. Bid him come in and paint some comfort ;
For surely ther's none lives but painted comfort.
Let him come in. — One knowes not what may chance.
Gods will, that I should set this tree!

75

But even so masters ungrateful servants reare¹ from nought,
And then they hate them that did bring them up.

Enter the PAINTER.

PAINT. God bless you, sir.

HIER. Wherefore? Why, thou scornfull villaine,
How, where or by what meanes should I be blest?

80

ISA. What wouldst thou have, good fellow?

PAINT.

Iustice, madame.

HIER. O ambitious beggar,
Wouldst thou have that that lives not in the world?
Why, all the undelved mines cannot buy
An ounce of justice, 't is a jewell so inestimable.
I tell thee God hath ingrossed all justice in his hands,
And there is none but what comes from him.

85

PA. O then I see that God must right me for my murdred sonne.

HIER. How? was thy sonne murdred?

PAIN. I, sir; no man did hold a sonne so deare.

90

HIER. What, not as thine? That's a lye

As massie as the earth! I had a sonne
Whose least unvalued haire did weigh
A thousand of thy sonnes, and he was murdered.

PAIN. Alas, sir, I had no more but hee.

95

HIER. Nor I, nor I! But this same one of mine
Was worth a legion. But all is one. —

Pedro! Iagues! Goe in a-doores, Isabella, goe,
And this good fellow here and I
Will range this hideous orchard up and downe,
Like to two Lyons reaved of their young.

100

Goe in a-doores, I say.

Exeunt.

¹ 1633 reard, which may be right if masters be vocative, and the construction be loose.

For euils vnto ils conductors be,
And death's the worst of resolution.

The PAINTER and he sits downe.

Come, let's talke wisely now.

Was thy sonne murdered?

PAIN. I, sir.

HIER. So was mine.

How dost thou take it? Art thou not sometime mad?

I[s] there no tricks that comes before thine eyes?

105

PAIN. O Lord, yes; sir!

HIER. Art a painter? canst paint me a teare or a wound,

A groane or a sigh? Canst paint me such a tree as this?

PAIN. Sir, I am sure you have heard of my painting:

110

My name's Bazardo.

HIER. Bazardo? Afore God, an excellent fellow. Looke you, sir,

Doe you see? Ide haue you paint me [in] my gallery

In your oyle-colours matted, and draw me fiew

Yeares younger then I am, — doe you see, sir? let fiew

Yeares goe, — let them goe! — like the marshall of Spaine,

115

My wife Issabella standing by me,

With a speaking looke to my sonne Horatio,

Which should intend to this, or some such like purpose:

"God bless thee, my sweet sonne," and my hand leaning upon

His head, thus, sir; doe you see? May it be done?¹

120

PAIN. Very well, sir.

HIER. Nay, I pray, marke me, sir:

Then, sir, would I haue you paint me this tree,

This very tree. Canst paint a dolefull cry?

PAIN. Seemingly, sir.

HIER. Nay, it should cry. But all is one!

125

Well, sir, paint me a youth run thorow and thorow

With villaines swords, hanging upon this tree.

Canst thou draw a murderer?

PAIN. Ile warrant you, sir;

I haue the patterne of the most notorious villaines

That euer lived in all Spaine.

130

HIER. O, let them be worse, worse! Stretch thine art.

And let their beards be of Iudas his owne colour,

And let their eye-brows jutty over: in any case obserue that!

Then, sir, after some violent noise,

Bring me forth in my shirt, and my gown under mine arme,

135

¹ As this speech is a very rude sort of verse, if indeed it is not, like the other conversations with the PAINTER, prose, I leave the lines as they stand in 1633. The line division is, in general, that of 1633.

For he that thinks with patience to contend 10
To quiet life, his life shall easily end.

Fata si miseros iuuant, habes salutem;

Fata si¹ vitam negant, habes sepulchrum:

If destinie thy miseries doe ease,
Then hast thou health, and happie shalt thou be; 15

With my torch in my hand, and my sword reared up, thus!
And with these words:

“What noise is this? Who calls Hieronimo?”

May it be done?

PAIN. Yea, sir.

HIER. Well, sir; then bring me foorth, bring me through ally and ally, 140
still with a distracted countenance going along, and let my haire heave up
my night-cap, —

Let the cloudes scowle, make the moone darke, the stars extinct, the
windes blowing, the belles tolling, the owles shriking, the toads crooking, the
minutes jerring, and the clocke striking twelue, — 145

And then, at last, sir, starting, behold a man hanging and tottring and
tottring, as you know the winde will weave a man, and I, with a trice, to
cut him downe, —

And, looking upon him by the advantage of my torch, find it to be my
sonne Horatio. 150

There you may [shew] a passion, there you may shew a passion!

Draw me like old Priam of Troy,

Crying “The house is a-fire! the house is a-fire!”

As the torch over thy head. Make me curse,

Make me rave, make me crie, make me mad! 155

Make me well againe, make me curse hell,

Invoke; and in the end leave me

In a trance, and so foorth.

PAIN. And is this the end?

HIER. O, no! there is no end! The end is death and madnes; 160

As I am never better then when I am mad;

Then me thinkes I am a brave fellow,

Then I doe wonders, — but reason abuseth me;

And there’s the torment, there’s the hell!

At the last, sir, bring me to one of the murderers: 165

Were he as strong as Hector, thus would I

Teare, and dragge him up and downe!

He beats the PAINTER in; then comes out againe with a booke in his hand.

[Line 1 follows.]

¹ 1633, Futasi.

If destinie denie thee life, Hieronimo,
 Yet shalt thou be assured of a tombe ;
 If neither, yet let this thy comfort be :
 Heauen couereth him that hath no buriall.
 And, to conclude, I will reuenge his death! 20
 But how? Not as the vulgare wits of men,
 With open, but ineuitable ils ;
 As by a secret, yet a certain meane,
 Which vnder kindeship wilbe cloked best.
 Wise men will take their oportunitie, 25
 Closely and safely fitting things to time ;
 But in extreames aduantage hath no time :
 And therefore all times fit not for reuenge.
 Thus, therefore, will I rest me in unrest,
 Dissembling quiet in vnquietnes, 30
 Not seeming that I know their villanies,
 That my simplicitie may make them think
 That ignorantly I will let all slip ;
 For ignorance, I wot, and well they know,
*Remedium malorum iners*¹ est. 35
 Nor ought auailles it me to menace them,
 Who, as a wintrie storme vpon a plaine,
 Will beare me downe with their nobilitie.
 No, no, Hieronimo, thou must enioyne
 Thine eies to obseruation, and thy tung 40
 To milder speeches then thy spirit affoord,
 Thy hart to patience, and thy hands to rest,
 Thy cappe to curtesie,² and thy knee to bow,
 Till to reuenge thou know when, where and how.
 How now? what noise, what coile is that you keepe? 45

A noise within.

Enter a SERUANT.

SER. Heere are a sort of poore petitioners
 That are importunate, and it shall please you, sir,

¹ So A. ; 1633, Haw. mors ; but Sarrazin, Anglia, XIII, 127, *points out that A. is right.*

² A. cuttesie.

That you should plead their cases to the king.

HIERO. That I should plead their seuerall actions?
Why, let them enter, and let me see them. 50

Enter three CITTIZENS and an OLDE MAN.

I CIT.¹ So I tell you this : for learning and for law
There is² not any aduocate in Spaine
That can preuaile or will take halfe the paine
That he will in pursuite of equitie.

HIERO. Come neere, you men, that thus importune me ! 55
[*Aside*] Now must I beare a face of grauitie,
For thus I vsde, before my marshalship,
To pleade in causes as corrigedor. —
Come on, sirs, whats the matter?

II CIT. Sir, an action.

HIERO. Of batterie?

I CIT. Mine of debt.

HIERO. Giue place. 60

II CIT. No, sir, mine is an action of the case.

III. CIT. Mine an *eiectione firmæ*³ by a⁴ lease.

HIERO. Content you, sirs ; are you determined
That I should plead your seuerall actions?

I CIT. I, sir ; and heeres my declaration. 65

II CIT. And heere is my band.

III CIT. And heere is my lease.

*They giue him papers.*⁵

HIERO. But wherefore stands yon silly man so mute,
With mournfull eyes and hands to heauen vprearde?
Come hether, father ; let me know thy cause.

SENEX. O worthy sir, my cause but slightly knowne 70
May mooue the harts of warlike Myrmydons,
And melt the Corsicke rockes with ruthfull teares!

HIERO. Say, father ; tell me whats thy sute!

¹ Here and below A. has only 1, 2, 3.

² A. Theres ; *corr. silently by Haw.*

³ A. 1633, Haw. *eiectione firma* ; Sarrazin, Engl. Stud., XV, 258, *ejectio firma*.

⁴ 1633 omits a.

⁵ A. paper ; *corr. silently by Haw.*

SENEX. No, sir, could my woes
Giue way vnto my most distresfull words, 75
Then should I not in paper, as you see,
With incke bewray what blood began in me.

HIERO. Whats heere? "The Humble Supplication
Of Don Bazulto for his Murdered Sonne."

SENEX. I, sir.

HIERO. No, sir, it was my murdred sonne! 80
Oh, my sonne, my sonne! oh, my sonne Horatio!
But mine or thine, Bazulto, be content;
Heere, take my hand-kercher and wipe thine eies,
Whiles wretched I in thy mishaps may see
The liuely portraict of my dying selfe. 85

He draweth out a bloudie napkin.

O, no; not this! Horatio, this was thine!
And when I dyde it in thy deerest blood,
This was a token twixt thy soule and me
That of thy death reuenged I should be.
But heere: take this, and this! what? my purse? 90
I, this and that and all of them are thine;
For all as one are our extremeties.

I CIT. Oh, see the kindenes of Hieronimo!

II CIT. This gentlenes shewes him a gentleman.

HIERO. See, see, oh, see thy shame, Hieronimo! 95
See heere a louing father to his sonne:
Beholde the sorrowes and the sad laments
That he deliuereth¹ for his sonnes dicease.
If loues² effects so striues in lesser things,
If loue enforce such moodes in meaner wits, 100
If loue expresse³ such power in poore estates,
Hieronimo, as when⁴ a raging sea,
Tost with the winde and tide, ore-turneth⁵ then
The vpper billowes, course of waues to keep,

¹ 1618, '23, '33, deliuered.

² 1618, loue.

³ 1618, '23, '33, enforce.

⁴ Edd. when as; *corr. by Kittredge.*

⁵ A. ore turnest; 1633, oreturnd; Haw. o'erturneth, *without note.*

Whilest lesser waters labour in the deepe, 105
 Then shamest thou not, Hieronimo, to neglect
 The sweet¹ reuenge of thy Horatio?
 Though on this earth iustice will not be found,
 Ile downe to hell and in this passion
 Knock at the dismall gates of Plutos court, 110
 Getting by force, as once Alcides did,
 A troupe of furies and tormenting haggess,
 To torture Don Lorenzo and the rest.
 Yet, least the triple-headed porter should
 Denye my passage to the slimy strond, 115
 The Thracian poet thou shalt counterfeite :
 Come on, olde father, be my Orpheus ;
 And, if thou canst no notes vpon the harpe,
 Then sound the burden of thy sore harts greefe
 Till we do gaine that Proserpine may graunt 120
 Reuenge on them that murd[e]red my sonne.
 Then will I rent and teare them thus and thus,
 Shiuering their limmes in peeces with my teeth !

Teare the papers.

I CIT. Oh, sir, my declaration !

Exit HIERONIMO and they after.

II CIT. Saue my bond!

Enter HIERONIMO.

II CIT. Saue my bond!

III CIT. Alas my lease, it cost me 125
 Ten pound,² and you, my lord, haue torne the same !

HIERO. That can not be, I gaue it neuer a wound ;
 Shew me one drop of bloud fall from the same !
 How is it possible I should slay it then?
 Tush, no ! Run after, catch me if you can ! 130

Exeunt all but the OLDE MAN.

¹ 1618, swift.

² A. 1633, Haw. *haue these two words in l. 125.*

BAZULTO remains till HIERONIMO enters againe, who, staring him in the face, speaks :

HIERO. And art thou come, Horatio, from the depth,
 To aske for iustice in this vpper earth?
 T[o] tell thy father thou art vnreuenged?
 To wring more teares from Isabellas eies,
 Whose lights are dimd with ouer-long laments? 135
 Goe back, my sonne, complaine to Eacus ;
 For heeres no iustice. Gentle boy, begone ;
 For iustice is exiled from the earth.
 H[i]eronimo will beare thee company.
 Thy mother cries on righteous Radamant 140
 For iust reuenge against the murderers.

SENEC. Alas, my l[ord], whence springs this troubled
 speech?

HIERO. But let me looke on my Horatio :
 Sweet boy, how art thou chang'd in deaths black shade !
 Had Proserpine no pittie on thy youth, 145
 But suffered thy fair crimson-colour'd spring
 With withered winter to be blasted thus?
 Horatio, thou art older then thy father :
 Ah, ruthlesse father, that fauour thus transformess.

BA. Ah, my good lord, I am not your yong sonne. 150

HIE. What ! not my sonne? thou then a Furie art
 Sent from the emptie kingdome of blacke night
 To summon me to make appearance
 Before grim Mynos and iust Radamant,
 To plague Hieronimo, that is remisse 155
 And seekes not vengeance for Horatioes death.

BA. I am a greeued man, and not a ghost,
 That came for iustice for my murdered sonne.

HIE. I, now I know thee, now thou namest thy¹
 sonne;
 Thou art the liuely image of my grieffe : 160
 Within thy face my sorrowes I may see ;

¹ So 1633, Haw. ; A. my.

Thy eyes are gum'd¹ with teares, thy cheekes are wan,
 Thy forehead troubled, and thy muttring lips
 Murmure sad words abruptly broken off
 By force of windie sighes thy spirit breathes ; 165
 And all this sorrow riseth for thy sonne,
 And selfe-same sorrow feele I for my sonne.
 Come in, old man ; thou shalt to Izabell.
 Leane on my arme ; I thee, thou me shalt stay ;
 And thou and I and she will sing a song, 170
 Three parts in one, but all of discords fram'd, —
 Talke not of cords ! — but let vs now be gone, —
 For with a cord Horatio was slaine. *Exeunt.*

[Act Third. Scene Fourteenth.]

[*The Spanish court.*]

*Enter KING OF SPAINE, the DUKE, VICE-ROY, and LORENZO, BALTHAZAR,
 DON PEDRO, and BELIMPERIA.*

KING. Go, brother, it is the Duke of Castiles cause ;
 Salute the vice-roy in our name.²

CASTILE. I go.

VICE. Go forth, Don Pedro, for thy nephews sake,
 And greet the Duke of Castile.

PEDRO. It shall be so.

KING. And now to meet these Portugaize ; 5
 For, as we now are, so sometimes were these,
 Kings and commanders of the westerne Indies.
 Welcome, braue vice-roy, to the court of Spaine!
 And welcome, all his honorable traine !
 Tis not vnknowne to vs for why you come, 10
 Or haue so kingly crost the seas.
 Suffiseth it, in this we note the troth
 And more then common loue you lend to vs.
 So is it that mine honorable neece,

¹ 1618, '23, '33, dim'd.

² *One long line in A.*

For it beseemes vs now that it be knowne, 15
 Already is betroth'd to Balthazar ;
 And, by appointment and our condiscent,
 To-morrow are they to be married.
 To this intent we entertaine thy-selfe,
 Thy followers, their pleasure, and our peace. 20
 Speak, men of Portingale, shall it be so?
 If I, say so ; if not, say flatly no.

VICE. Renowned king, I come not, as thou thinkst,
 With doubtfull followers, vnresolved men,
 But such as haue vpon thine articles 25
 Confirmed thy motion and contented me.
 Know, soueraigne, I come to solemnize
 The marriage of thy beloued neece,
 Faire Bel-imperia, with my Balthazar, —
 With thee, my sonne, whom sith I liue to see, 30
 Heere, take my crowne, I giue it her and thee,
 And let me liue a solitarie life,
 In ceaselesse praiers,
 To think how strangely heauen hath thee preserued.

KING. See, brother, see, how nature striues in him! 35
 Come, worthy vice-roy, and accompany
 Thy freend, [to strive] with thine extremities :
 A place more priuate fits this princely mood.

VICE. Or heere or where your Highnes thinks it good.

Exeunt all but CAS[TILE] and LOR[ENZO].

CAS. Nay, stay, Lorenzo ; let me talke with you. 40
 Seest thou this entertainment of these kings?

LOR. I doe, my lord, and ioy to see the same.

CAS. And knowest thou why ¹ this meeting is?

LOR. For her, my lord, whom Balthazar doth loue,
 And to confirme their promised marriage: 45

CAS. She is thy sister.

LOR. Who? Bel-imperia?

I, my gracious lord, and this is the day

¹ *Qy.* for whom, or wherefore, for metre.

That I haue longd so happily to see.¹

CAS. Thou wouldst be loath that any fault of thine
Should intercept her in her happines? 50

LOR. Heauens will not let Lorenzo erre so much.

CAS. Why then, Lorenzo, listen to my words :
It is suspected, and reported too,
That thou, Lorenzo, wrongst Hieronimo,
And in his sutes towards his Maiestie 55
Still keepst him back and seeks ² to crosse his sute.

LOR. That I, my lord?

CAS. I tell thee, sonne, my-selfe haue heard it said,
When to my sorrow I haue beene ashamed
To answeere for thee, though thou art ³ my sonne. 60
Lorenzo, knowest thou not the common loue
And kindenes that Hieronimo hath wone
By his deserts within the court of Spaine?
Or seest thou not the k[ing] my brothers care
In his behalfe and to procure his health? 65
Lorenzo, shouldst thou thwart his passions,
And hee exclaime against thee to the king,
What honour wert in this assembly,
Or what a scandale wert among the kings,
To heare Hieronimo exclaime on thee! 70

Tell me, — and looke thou tell me truely too, —
Whence growes the ground of this report in court?

LOR. My l[ord], it lyes not in Lorenzos power
To stop the vulgar liberall of their tongues : 75
A small aduantage makes a water-breach ;
And no man liues that long contenteth all.

CAS. My-selfe haue seene thee busie to keep back
Him and his supplications from the king.

LOR. Your-selfe, my l[ord], hath seene his passions,
That ill beseemde the presence of a king ; 80
And, for I pittied him in his distresse,

¹ *This speech as two lines in edd., ending lord, see.*

² *Haw. seek'st, without note.*

³ 1618, '23, '33, wert.

I helde him thence with kinde and curteous words,
As free from malice to Hieronimo
As to my soule, my lord.

CAS. Hieronimo, my sonne, mistakes thee then. 85

LOR. My gracious father, beleue me, so he doth ;
But whats a silly man, distract in minde
To think vpon the murder of his sonne?
Alas, how easie is it for him to erre !
But, for his satisfaction and the worlds, 90
Twere good, my l[ord], that ¹ Hieronimo and I
Were reconcilde, if he misconster me.

CAS. Lorenzo, thou hast said ; it shalbe so !
Goe, one of you, and call Hieronimo.

Enter BALTHAZAR and BEL-IMPERIA.²

BAL. Come, Bel-imperia,³ Balthazars content, 95
My sorrowes ease, and soueraigne of my blisse, —
Sith heauen hath ordainde thee ⁴ to be mine,
Disperce those cloudes and melanchollie lookes,
And cleere ⁵ them vp with those thy sunne-bright eies,
Wherein my hope and heauens faire ⁶ beautie lies! 100

BEL. My lookes, my lord, are fitting for my loue,
Which, new begun, can shew no ⁷ brighter yet.

BAL. New kindled flames should burne as morning sun.

BEL. But not too fast, least heate and all be done.
I see my lord my father.

BAL. True,⁸ my loue ; 105

I will goe salute him.⁹

CAS. Welcome, Balthazar,
Welcome, braue prince, the pledge of Castiles peace !¹⁰
And welcome Bel-imperia ! How now, girle?
Why comdest thou sadly to salute vs thus?
Content thy-selfe, for I am satisfied. 110

¹ 1623, '33 omit that.

² A. BEL-IMPERIA.

³ A. Bel-imperie.

⁴ 1623, '33, thee ordained.

⁵ 1618, '23, '33, cheare.

⁶ *Misprinted faite in A.*

⁷ A. omits no.

⁸ A. Truce ; so Haw., *without note.*

⁹ *This speech as one line in edd.*

¹⁰ *Two lines in edd., ending prince, peace.*

It is not now as when Andrea liu'd ;
 We haue forgotten and forgiuen that,
 And thou art graced with a happier loue.
 But, Balthazar, heere comes Hieronimo ;
 Ile haue a word with him.

Enter HIERONIMO and a SERUANT.

HIERO. And wheres the duke? 115

SER. Yonder.

HIERO. Euen so.¹

[*Aside*] What new deuce haue they deuised, tro?

Pocas palabras! Milde as the lambe !

Ist² I will be reueng'd? No, I am not the man.

CAS. Welcome; Hieronimo ! 120

LOR. Welcome, Hieronimo !

BAL. Welcome, Hieronimo !

HIERO. My lords, I thank you for Horatio.

CAS. Hieronimo, the reason that I sent

To speak with you is this —

HIERO. What? so short? 125

Then Ile be gone ; I thank you fort !

CAS. Nay, stay, Hieronimo ; goe call him, sonne.

LOR.³ Hieronimo, my father craues a word with you.

HIERO. With me, sir? Why, my l[ord], I thought you
 had done.

LOR. [*aside*] No ; would he had !

CAS. Hieronimo, I hear⁴ 130

You finde your-selfe agreeued at my sonne,
 Because you haue not accesse vnto the king,
 And say tis he that intercepts your sutes.

HIERO. Why, is not this a miserable thing, my lord?

CAS. Hieronimo, I hope you haue no cause, 135

And would be loth that one of your deserts,
 Should once haue reason to suspect my sonne,
 Considering how I think of you my-selfe.

¹ Part of l. 117 in edd.

³ A. omits LOR.

² 1633, Hist.

⁴ Part of l. 131 in edd.

HIERO. Your sonne Lorenzo? whome, my noble
lord?
The hope of Spaine? mine honourable freend? 140
Graunt me the combat of them, if they dare!

Drawes out his sword.

Ile meet him face-to-face to tell me so!
These be the scandalous reports of such
As loues¹ not me, and hate my lord too much.
Should I suspect Lorenzo would preuent 145
Or crosse my sute, that loued my sonne so well?
My lord, I am ashamed it should be said.

LOR. Hieronimo, I neuer gaue you cause.

H[I]ERO. My good lord, I know you did not.

CAS. There then pause,²

And, for the satisfaction of the world, 150
Hieronimo, frequent my homely house,
The Duke of Castile Ciprians ancient seat;
And when thou wilt, vse me, my sonne, and it.
But heere before Prince Balthazar and me
Embrace each other, and be perfect freends. 155

HIERO. I, marry, my lord, and shall!
Freends, quoth he? See, Ile be freends with you all!
Especially³ with you, my louely lord;
For diuers causes it is fit for vs
That we be freends. The world is suspitious, 160
And men may think what we imagine not.

BAL. Why this is freendly doone, Hieronimo.

LOR. And that I hope olde grudges are forgot.

HIERO. What els? it were a shame it should not
be so!

CAS. Come on, Hieronimo, at my request; 165
Let vs entreat your company to-day!

Exeunt.

¹ Haw. love, *without note.*

² *Part of l. 150 in edd.*

³ A. 1633, Specially; *corr. silently by Haw.*

HIERO. Yo[u]r lordships to commaund ! Pha !¹ keep your way !²

*Chi mi fa più carezze che non suole
Tradito mi ha o tradir mi vuole.*³

Exit.

[CHORUS.]

Enter GHOAST and REUENGE.

GHOST. Awake Erictho !⁴ Cerberus, awake !
⁵ Sollicite Pluto, gentle Proserpine !
To combat, Achinon and Ericus⁶ in hell !
For neere by Stix and Phlegeton :⁷

¹ 1633 omits Pha.

² Two lines in A. 1633 ; perhaps because half is spoken before the others go out and half after.

³ A. has :

Mi. Chi mi fa ? Pui Correzza Che no fule
Tradito viha otrade vule.

1633 has :

Mi, chi mifa ? Pui Correzza Che non fult
Tradito niha otrade vel.

The text follows Haw., except that he retains Mi as the first word ; it appears in no version of the proverb that I have seen.

⁴ A. Erictha ; Hazlitt, Alecto.

⁵ Hazlitt prints :

Solicit Pluto, gentle Proserpine,
To combat Acheron and Erebus in hell ;
Or near-by Styx and Phlegethon ;
Nor ferried Charon to the fiery lakes
Such fearful sights as poor Andrea sees.

This is certainly not right. Kittredge suggests as barely possible :

Solicit Pluto, gentle Proserpine !
To combat, Acheron and Erebus !
For neere did Stix and Phlegeton in hell
Nor Carons ferrie to the fierie lakes
Such fearfull sights as poore Andrea see.

⁶ So A. ; 1633, Achmon and Erichus ; Haw. Acheron and Erebus ; Ericus suggests also Orcus ; but the whole speech seems hopelessly corrupt.

⁷ Qy. For neere by Stix and Phlegeton there came.

Nor ferried Caron to the fierie lakes, 5
Such fearfull sights, as poore Andrea see?¹
Reuenge awake!

REUENGE. Awake? for-why?²

GHOST. Awake, Reuenge! for thou art ill aduisde
To³ sleepe away⁴ what thou⁵ art warnd to watch!

REUENGE. Content thy-selfe, and doe not trouble me. 10

GHOST. Awake, Reuenge, if loue, as loue hath had,
Haue yet the power or preuailance in hell!
Hieronimo with Lorenzo is ioynde in league,
And intercepts our passage to reuenge.

Awake, Reuenge, or we are woe-begone!⁶ 15

REUENGE. Thus worldlings ground what they haue
dreamd vpon!

Content thy-selfe, Andrea; though I sleepe,
Yet is⁷ my mood soliciting their soules.

Sufficeth thee that poore Hieronimo
Cannot forget his sonne Horatio. 20

Nor dies Reuenge although he sleepe a-while;
For in vnquiet, quietnes is faind,⁸

And slumbring is a common worldly wile.

Beholde, Andrea, for an instance how
Reuenge hath slept; and then imagine thou 25

What tis to be subiect to destinie.

Enter a Dumme-shew.

GHOST. Awake, Reuenge! reueale this misterie!

REUENGE. The two first [do] the nuptiall torches beare,⁹
As brightly burning as the mid-daies sunne;

But after them doth Himen hie as fast, 30
Clothed in sable and a saffron robe,

¹ So A.; 1633, sees. In ll. 4-6 I retain the punctuation of A.

² 1618, '23, '33 omit this half-line, apparently by mistake.

³ A. Th.; 1633, Haw. To.

⁴ 1633, Haw. awake.

⁷ 1618, '23, '33, in.

⁵ 1618, '23, '33, omit thou.

⁸ 1618, '23, '33, found.

⁶ A. degone.

⁹ 1633, Haw. bore.

And blowes them out and quencheth them with blood,
As discontent that things continue so.

GHOST. Sufficeth me ; thy meanings vnderstood,
And thanks to thee and those infernall powers 35
That will not tollerate a louers woe.
Rest thee ; for I will sit to see the rest.

REUENGE. Then argue not ; for thou hast thy request.

Exeunt.

Actus Quartus. [Scene First.]

[*The Duke's castle.*]

Enter BEL-IMPERIA and HIERONIMO.

BEL-IMPERIA. Is this the loue thou bearest Horatio?
Is this the kindnes that thou counterfeitst,¹
Are these the fruits of thine incessant teares?
Hieronimo, are these thy passions,
Thy protestations and thy deepe laments, 5
That thou wert wont to wearie men withall?
O vnkind father ! O deceitfull world !
With what excuses canst thou shew thy-selfe, —
With what dishonour, and the hate of men, —
From this dishonour and the hate of men,² 10
Thus to neglect the losse and life of him
Whom both my letters and thine owne beliefe
Assures thee to be causles slaughtered?
Hieronimo ! for shame, Hieronimo,
Be not a history to after times 15
Of such ingratitude vnto thy sonne!
Vnhappy mothers of such children then !
But monstrous fathers, to forget so soone
The death of those whom they with care and cost
Haue tendred so, thus careles should be lost !³ 20

¹ So A. 1633; Haw. counterfeit'st, *without note.*

² Hazlitt says *this line is a mistake, and should be omitted.*

³ *Confusion of two constructions is probably responsible for the queer syntax.*

My-selfe, a stranger in respect of thee,
 So loued his life as still I wish their deathes.
 Nor shall his death be vnreuegd by me,
 Although I beare it out for fashions sake ;
 For heere I sweare in sight of heauen and earth, 25
 Shouldst thou neglect the loue thou shouldst retaine
 And giue it ouer and deuise no more,
 My-selfe should send their hatefull soules to hel
 That wrought his downfall with extreamest death !

HIE. But may it be that Bel-imperia 30
 Vowes such reuenge as she hath dain'd to say?
 Why then, I see that heauen applies our drift,
 And all the saints doe sit solliciting
 For vengeance on those cursed murderers.
 Madame, tis true, and now I find it so. 35
 I found a letter, written in your name,
 And in that letter, how Horatio died.
 Pardon, O pardon, Bel-imperia,
 My feare and care in not beleeuing it!
 Nor thinke I thoughtles thinke vpon a meane 40
 To let his death be vnreuegd at full.
 And heere I vow, so you but giue consent
 And will conceale my resolution,
 I will ere long determine of their deathes
 That causles thus haue murderd my sonne. 45

BEL. Hieronimo, I will consent, conceale,
 And ought that may effect for thine auaille,
 Ioyne with thee to reuenge Horatioes death.

HIER. On¹ then, [and] whatsoeuer I deuise,
 Let me entreat you grace my practises, 50
 For-why the plots already in mine head. —
 Heere they are !

Enter BALTHAZAR and LORENZO.

BAL. How now, Hieronimo?
 What, courting Bel-imperia? ²

¹ 1618, '23, '33, O.

² One line in edd.

- HIERO. I, my lord,
Such courting as, I promise you,¹
She hath my hart, but you, my lord, haue hers. 55
- LOR. But now, Hieronimo, or neuer we are to intreate
your helpe.
- HIE. My help? why, my good lords, assure your-selues
of me;
For you haue giuen me cause, — I, by my faith, haue you!
- BAL. It pleasee you at the entertainment of the em-
bassadour,
To grace the King so much as with a shew : 60
Now were your studie so well furnished
As, for the passing of the first nights sport,
To entertaine my father with the like,
Or any such like pleasing motion,
Assure yourselfe it would content them well. 65
- HIERO. Is this all?
- BAL. I, this is all.
- HIERO. Why then ile fit you; say no more.
When I was yong I gaue my minde
And plide my-selfe to fruitles poetrie, 70
Which, though it profite the professor naught,
Yet is it passing pleasing to the world.
- LOR. And how for that?
- HIERO. Marrie, my good lord, thus. —
And yet, me thinks, you are too quick with vs! —
When in Tolledo there I studied, 75
It was my chaunce to write a tragedie, —
See heere, my lords, — *He shewes them a booke.*
Which, long forgot, I found this other day.
Now would your lordships fauour me so much
As but to grace me with your acting it, 80
I meane each one of you to play a part.
Assure you it will proue most passing strange
And wondrous plausible to that assembly.
- BAL. What, would you haue vs play a tragedie?

¹ One line in edd.

HIERO. Why, Nero thought it no disparagement,
And kings and emperours haue tane delight
To make experience of their wits in plaies!

LOR. Nay, be not angry, good Hieronimo;
The prince but asked a question.

BAL. In faith, Hieronimo, and you be in earnest,
Ile make one. 90

LOR. And I another.

HIERO. Now, my good lord, could you intreat,
Your sister, Bel-imperia, to make one, —
For whats a play without a woman in it?

BEL. Little intreaty shall serue me, Hieronimo,
For I must needs be employed in your play. 95

HIERO. Why, this is well! I tell you, lordings,
It was determined to haue beene acted,
By gentlemen and schollers too,
Such as could tell what to speak. 100

BAL. And now it shall be plaide by princes and courtiers,
Such as can tell how to speak,¹
If, as it is our country manner,
You will but let vs know the argument.

HIERO. That shall I roundly. The cronicles of Spaine 105
Reorde this written of a knight of Rodes :²
He was betrothed, and wedded at the length,
To one Perseda, an Italian dame,
Whose beauty rauished all that her behelde,
Especially the soule of Soliman, 110
Who at the marriage was³ the cheefest guest.
By sundry meanes sought Soliman to winne
Persedas loue, and could not gaine the same.
Then gan he break his passions to a freend,
One of his bashawes whom he held full deere. 115
Her had this bashaw long solicited,
And saw she was not otherwise to be wonne
But by her husbands death, this knight of Rodes,

¹ Lines 101, 102 as *prose* in A. *The metre is often imperfect in this scene.*

² 1618, of the Rhodes.

³ *Misprinted way in A.*

Whome presently by trecherie he slew.
 She, stirde with an exceeding hate therefore, 120
 As cause of this, slew [Sultan] Soliman,
 And, to escape the bashawes tirannie,
 Did stab her-selfe. And this¹ the tragedie.

LOR. O, excellent!

BEL. But say, Hieronimo:
 What then became of him that was the bashaw?² 125

HIERO. Marrie thus: moued with remorse of his misdeeds,
 Ran to a mountain top and hung³ himselfe.

BAL. But which of vs is to performe that parte?

HIERO. O, that will I, my lords; make no doubt of it;
 Ile play the murderer, I warrant you; 130
 For I already haue conceited that.

BAL. And what shall I?

HIERO. Great Soliman, the Turkish emperour.

LOR. And I?

HIERO. Erastus, the knight of Rhodes.

BEL. And I?

HIERO. Perseda, chaste and resolute. 135
 And heere, my lords, are seuerall abstracts drawne,
 For eache of you to note your [seuerall]⁴ partes,
 And act it as occasion's offred you.
 You must prouide [you with]⁴ a Turkish cappe,
 A black mustacio and a fauchion. 140

Giues paper to BAL[THAZAR].

You with a crosse, like to a knight of Rhodes.

Giues another to LOR[ENZO].

And, madame, you must [then] attire your-selfe

He giueth BEL[-IMPERIA] another.

Like Phœbe, Flora, or the huntresse [Dian],⁴
 Which⁵ to your discretion shall seeme best.
 And as for me, my lords, Ile looke to one, 145

¹ 1618, '23, '33, this is.

⁴ *Supplied by Kittredge.*

² *This speech as two lines in edd., ending him, bashaw.*

³ 1618, '23, '33, hang'd.

⁵ *Qy. insert e'er or read unto for to.*

And with the raunsome that the vice-roy sent
 So furnish and performe this tragedie
 As all the world shall say Hieronimo
 Was liberall in gracing of it so.

BAL. Hieronimo, me thinks a comedie were better. 150

HIERO. A comedie? fie! comedies are fit for common
 wits;

But to present a kingly troupe withall,
 Giue me a stately-written tragedie, —
Tragedia cothurnata,¹ fitting kings,
 Containing matter, and not common things! 155

My lords, all this [our sport] must be performd,
 As fitting, for the first nights reuelling.
 The Italian tragedians were so sharpe
 Of wit² that in one houres meditation
 They would performe any-thing in action. 160

LOR. And well it may, for I haue seene the like
 In Paris, mongst the French tragedians.

HIERO. In Paris? mas, and well remembred! —
 Theres one thing more that rests for vs to doo.

BAL. Whats that, Hieronimo? 165
 Forget not any-thing.³

HIERO. Each one of vs
 Must act his parte in vnknowne languages,⁴
 That it may breede the more varietie:
 As you, my lord, in Latin, I in Greeke,
 You in Italian, and, for-because I know 170
 That Bel-imperia hath practised the French,
 In courtly French shall all her phraises be.

BEL. You meane to try my cunning then, Hieronimo!

BAL. But this will be a meere confusion,
 And hardly shall we all be vnderstoode. 175

HIERO. It must be so; for the conclusion

¹ A. cother nato; *corr. silently by Haw.*

² Part of l. 157 in edd.

³ This speech as one line in edd.

⁴ As two lines in edd., ending part, languages.

Shall proue the inuention and all was good ;
 And I my-selfe in an oration,
 That I will haue there behinde a curtaine,
 And with a strange and wondrous shew besides, 180
 Assure your-selfe, shall make the matter knowne.
 And all shalbe concluded in one scene,
 For theres no pleasure tane in tediousnes.

BAL. [*to* LOR.] How like you this?

LOR. Why thus, my lord, we must resoluē,
 To soothe his humors vp. 185

BAL. On then, Hieronimo ; farewell till soone!

HIERO. Youle plie this geere?

LOR. I warrant you. *Exeunt all but HIERO.*

HIERO. Why, so! now shall I see the fall of Babilon 190
 Wrought by the heauens in this confusion.
 And, if the world like not this tragedie,
 Hard is the hap of olde Hieronimo. *Exit.*

[Act Fourth. Scene Second.]

[HIERONIMO'S garden.]

Enter ISABELLA with a weapon.

Tell me no more! O monstrous homicides!
 Since neither pietie nor pittie moues
 The king to iustice or compassion,
 I will reuenge my-selfe vpon this place,
 Where thus they murdered my beloued sonne. 5

She cuts downe the arbour.

Downe with these branches and these loathsome bowes
 Of this vnfortunate and fatall pine!
 Downe with them, Isabella ; rent them vp,
 And burne the roots from whence the rest is sprung!
 I will not leaue a root, a stalke, a tree, 10
 A bowe, a branch, a blossome, nor a leafe, —
 No, not a hearb within this garden plot,

Accursed complot of my miserie !
 Fruitlesse for-euer may this garden be,
 Barren the earth, and blislesse whosoever 15
 Immagines not to keep it vnmanurde !
 An easterne winde comixt with noisome aires
 Shall blast the plants and the yong saplings [here],
 The earth with serpents shalbe pestered,
 And passengers, for feare to be infect, 20
 Shall stand aloofe, and, looking at it, tell
 There murdred dide the sonne of Isabell.
 I, heere he dide, and heere I him imbrace!
 See where his ghoast solicités with his wounds
 Reuenge on her that should reuenge his death ! 25
 Hieronimo, make haste to see thy sonne,
 For Sorrow and Dispaire hath scited me
 To heare Horatio plead with Radamant.
 Make haste, Hieronimo, to holde excusde
 Thy negligence in pursute of their deaths 30
 Whose hatefull wrath bereu'd him of his breath.
 Ah, nay ; thou dost delay their deaths,
 Forgiues ¹ the murderers of thy noble sonne ;
 And none but I bestirre me, — to no end !
 And, as I curse this tree from further fruit, 35
 So shall my wombe be cursed for his sake ;
 And with this weapon will I wound the brest, —
 That haples brest that gaue Horatio suck !

She stabs her-selfe.

[Act Fourth. Scene Third.]

[*The Duke's castle.*]

Enter HIERONIMO; he knocks vp the curtaine.

Enter the DUKE OF CASTILE.

CAS. How now, Hieronimo? wheres your fellows,
 That you take all this paine?

¹ Haw. Forgiv'st, *without note.*

HIERO. O sir, it is for the authors credit
To look that all things may goe well.
But, good my lord, let me intreat your Grace 5
To giue the king the coppie of the plaie:
This is the argument of what we shew.

CAS. I will, Hieronimo.

HIERO. One thing more, my good lord.¹

CAS. Whats that?

HIERO. Let me intreat your Grace 10
That, when the traine are past into the gallerie,
You would vouchsafe to throwe me downe the key.

CAS. I will Hieronimo. *Exit CAS[TILE].*

HIERO. What, are you ready, Balthazar?
Bring a chaire and a cushion for the king. 15

Enter BALTHAZAR with a chaire.

Well doon, Balthazar; hang vp the title:
Our scene is Rhodes. What, is your beard on?

BAL. Halfe on, the other is in my hand.

HIERO. Dispatch, for shame! are you so long?

Exit BALTHAZAR.

Bethink thy-selfe, Hieronimo, 20
Recall thy wits, recompt thy former wrongs
Thou hast receiued by murder of thy sonne,
And lastly, [but] not least, how Isabell,
Once his mother and thy² deerest wife,
All woe-begone for him, hath slaine her-selfe. 25
Behoues thee then, Hieronimo, to be
Reueng'd!³ The plot is laide of dire reuenge:
On then,⁴ Hieronimo; pursue reuenge,
For nothing wants but acting of reuenge! *Exit HIERONIMO.*

*Enter SPANISH KING, VICE-ROY, the DUKE OF CASTILE, and their traine,
[to the gallery].*

KING. Now, viceroy, shall we see the tragedie 30
Of Soliman, the Turkish emperour,

¹ 1633, good my lord.

³ *In l. 26 in edd.*

² 1623, '33, my.

⁴ 1618, '23, '33, On them.

Performde of pleasure by your sonne the prince,
My nephew Don Lorenzo, and my neece.

VICE. Who? Bel-imperia?

KING. I; and Hiéronimo our marshall, 35
At whose request they deine to doo 't themselues.
These be our pastimes in the court of Spaine.
Heere, brother, you shall be the booke-keeper :
This is the argument of that they shew.

He giueth him a booke.

Gentlemen, this play of HIERONIMO in sundrie languages
was thought good to be set downe in English more
largely, for the easier vnderstanding to euery
publique reader.

Enter BALTHAZAR, BEL-IMPERIA, and HIERONIMO.

BALTHAZAR. Bashaw, that Rhodes is ours yeeld Heau-
ens the honor 40
And holy Mahomet, our sacred prophet !
And be thou grac't with euery excelence
That Soliman can giue or thou desire !
But thy desert in conquering Rhodes is lesse
Then in reseruing this faire Christian ¹ nimph, 45
Perseda, blisfull lamp of excellence,
Whose eies compell, like powerfull adamant,
The warlike heart of Soliman to wait.

KING. See, vice-roy, that is Balthazar your sonne,
That represents the Emperour Solyman : 50
How well he acts his amorous passion !

VICE. I; Bel-imperia hath taught him that.

CASTILE. That's because his mind runnes all on Bel-
imperia.

HIERO. What-euer ioy earth yeelds betide your Maies-
tie!²

BALT. Earth yeelds no ioy without Persedaes loue. 55

HIERO. Let then Perseda on your Grace attend.

BALT. She shall not wait on me, but I on her !
Drawne by the influence of her lights, I yeeld.

¹ 1633 omits Christian.

² Misprinted Meiestie in A.

But let my friend, the Rhodian knight, come foorth, —
 Erasto, dearer then my life to me, — 60
 That he may see Perseda, my beloued.

Enter ERASTO.

KING. Heere comes Lorenzo : looke vpon the plot
 And tell me, brother, what part plaies he.

BEL. Ah, my Erasto ! Welcome to Perseda !

LO. Thrice happie is Erasto that thou liuest ! 65
 Rhodes losse is nothing to Erastoes ioy ;
 Sith his Perseda liues, his life suruiues.

BALT. Ah, bashaw, heere is loue betweene Erasto
 And faire Perseda, soueraigne of my soule !

HIERO. Remooue Erasto, mighty Solyman, 70
 And then Perseda will be quickly wonne.

BALT. Erasto is my friend ; and, while he liues,
 Perseda neuer will remooue her loue.

HIERO. Let not Erasto liue to greeue great Soliman !

BALT. Deare is Erasto in our princly eye. 75

HIERO. But, if he be your riuall, let him die !

BALT. Why, let him die ! so loue commaundeth me.
 Yet greeue I that Erasto should so die.

HIERO. Erasto, Soliman saluteth thee,
 And lets thee wit by me his Highnes will, 80
 Which is, thou shouldst be thus imploid. *Stab him.*

BEL. Ay, me, Erasto ! See, Solyman, Erastoes slaine !

BALT. Yet liueth Solyman to comfort thee.
 Faire queene of beautie, let not fauour die,
 But with a gracious eye beholde his griefe, 85
 That with Persedaes beautie is encreast,
 If by Perseda¹ griefe be not releast.

BEL. Tyrant, desist solliciting vaine sutes ;
 Relentles are mine eares to thy laments
 As thy butcher is pittillesse and base 90
 Which seazd on my Erasto, harmelesse knight.
 Yet by thy power thou thinkest to commaund,
 And to thy power Perseda doth obey ;
 But, were she able, thus she would reuenge

¹ A. Persedaes ; 1633, Haw. Persedas.

Thy treacheries on thee, ignoble prince ; *Stab him.* 95
 And on herselfe she would be thus reuengd. *Stab herselfe.*

KING. Well said, olde marshall ! this was brauely done !

HIERO. But Bel-imperia plaies Perseda well.

VICE. Were this in earnest, Bel-imperia,
 You would be better to my sonne then so. 100

KING. But now what followes for ¹ Hieronimo ?

HIERO. Marrie, this followes for Hieronimo !

Heere breake we off our sundrie languages,
 And thus conclude I in our vulgare tung :
 Happely you think — but bootles are your thoughts — 105

That this ² is fabulously counterfeit,
 And that we doo as all tragedians doo, —
 To die to-day, for fashioning our scene,
 The death of Ajax, or some Romaine peere,
 And, in a minute starting vp againe, 110
 Reuiue to please to-morrowes audience.

No, princes ; know I am Hieronimo,
 The hopeles father of a haples sonne,
 Whose tung is tun'd to tell his latest tale,
 Not to excuse grosse errors in the play. 115

I see your lookes vrge instance of these words :

Beholde the reason vrging me to this !

Shewes his dead sonne.

See heere my shew ; look on this spectacle !
 Heere lay my hope, and heere my hope hath end ;
 Heere lay my hart, and heere my hart was slaine ; 120
 Heere lay my treasure, heere my treasure lost ;
 Heere lay my blisse, and heere my blisse bereft.

But hope, hart, treasure, ioy and blisse, —
 All fled, faild, died, yea, all decaide with this.
 From forth these wounds came breath that gaue me life ; 125
 They mured me that made these fatall markes.

The cause was loue whence grew this mortall hate :

¹ 1618, '23, '33 omit for.

² A. thus ; 1633, this.

The hate, Lorenzo and yong Balthazar ;
 The loue, my sonne to Bel-imperia.
 But night, the couerer of accursed crimes, 130
 With pitchie silence husht these traitors harmes,
 And lent them leaue — for they had sorted leasure —
 To take aduantage in my garden-plot
 Vpon my sonne, my deere Horatio.
 There mercilesse they butcherd vp my boy, 135
 In black, darke night, to pale, dim, cruell death !
 He shrikes ; I heard — and yet, me thinks, I heare —
 His dismall out-cry eccho in the aire ;
 With soonest speed I hasted to the noise,
 Where, hanging on a tree, I found my sonne . 140
 Through-girt with wounds and slaughtred, as you see.
 And greeued I, think you, at this spectacle?
 Speak, Portuguise, whose losse resembles mine!
 If thou canst weep vpon thy Balthazar,
 Tis like I wailde for my Horatio. 145
 And you, my l[ord], whose reconciled sonne
 Marcht in a net and thought him selfe vnseene,
 And rated me for brainsicke lunacie,
 With¹ “ God amend that mad Hieronimo! ” —
 How can you brook our plaies catastrophe? 150
 And heere beholde this bloudie hand-kercher,
 Which at Horatio's death I weeping dipt
 Within the riuer of his bleeding wounds !
 It as propitious, see, I haue reserued,
 And neuer hath it left my bloody² hart, 155
 Soliciting remembrance of my vow
 With these, O these accursed murderers !
 Which now perform'd, my hart is satisfied.
 And to this end the bashaw I became,
 That might reuenge me on Lorenzos life, 160
 Who therefore was appointed to the part
 And was to represent the knight of Rhodes,

¹ 1618, '23, '33, which.

² 1618, '23, '33, bleeding.

That I might kill him more conueniently.
 So, vice-roy, was this Balthazar thy sonne —
 That Soliman which Bel-imperia 165
 In person of Perseda murdered, —
 So[le]lie appointed to that tragicke part,
 That she might slay him that offended her.
 Poore Bel-imperia mist her part in this :
 For, though the story saith she should haue died, 170
 Yet I, of kindenes and of care to her,
 Did otherwise determine of her end.
 But loue of him whom they did hate too much
 Did vrge her resolution to be such.
 And, princes, now beholde Hieronimo, 175
 Author and actor in this tragedie,
 Bearing his latest fortune in his fist ;
 And will as resolute conclude his parte
 As any of the actors gone before.
 And, gentles,¹ thus I end my play ! 180
 Vrge no more words, I haue no more to say.

He runs to hang himselfe.

KING. O hearken, vice-roy ; holde Hieronimo !
 Brother, my nephew and thy sonne are² slaine !
 VICE. We are betraide ! my Balthazar is slaine !
 Breake ope the doores ; runne saue Hieronimo ! 185
 Hieronimo, doe but enforme the king of these euent ;
 Vpon³ mine honour, thou shalt haue no harme.
 HIERO. Vice-roy, I will not trust thee with my life,
 Which I this day haue offered to my sonne :
 Accursed wretch, why staiest thou him that was resolved to
 die? 190
 KING. Speak, traitor ! damned, bloody murderer, speak !—
 For, now I haue thee, I will make thee speak !
 Why hast thou done this vnderseuing deed ?
 VICE. Why hast thou murdered my Balthazar ?

¹ 1633, gentiles.

³ Misprinted Ypon in A.

² All edd. *appear to have are.*

CAS. Why hast thou butchered both my children thus?¹ 195

HIERO. O good words! As deare to me was my Horatio
As yours, or yours, my I[ord], to you.

My guiltles sonne was by Lorenzo slaine;

And by Lorenzo and that Balthazar

Am I at last reuenged thorowly, —

200

Vpon whose soules may Heauens be yet auenged

With greater far then these afflictions!²

CAS. But who were thy confederates in this?

¹ Between this line and the next 1618, '23, '33 insert the following passage:

HIER. But are you sure that they are dead?

CAST. I, slaine too sure!

HIER. What! and yours too?

VICE. I, all are dead; not one of them survive!

HIER. Nay, then, I care not; come, and we shall be friends:

Let us lay our heads together!

5

See, heere 's a goodly nooze will hold them all!

VICE. O, damned devill, how secure he is!

HIER. Secure? Why dost thou wonder at it?

I tell thee, vice-roy, this day I have seene reveng'd,³

And in that sight am growne a prouder monarch

10

Then ever sate under the crowne of Spaine.

Had I as many lives as there be starres,

As many heavens to goe to as those lives,

Ide give them all, — I, and my soule to boot, —

But I would see thee ride in this red poole!

15

CAST. Speake: who were thy confederates in this?

VICE. That was thy daughter Belimperia;

For by her hand my Balthazar was slaine, —

I saw her stab him.

² In 1618, '23, '33 ll. 203–218 are replaced by the following:

Me thinkes, since I grew inward with Revenge,

I cannot looke with scorne enough on Death.

KING. What! dost mock us, slave? Bring tortures forth!

HIER. Doe, doe, doe! and meane-time Ile torture you:

You had a sonne, as I take it; and your sonne

5

Should have bin married to your daughter, — ha! wast not so?

You had a sonne too; he was my lieges nephew;

He was proud and politike; had he lived,

³ Dodsley, revenge.

VICE. That was thy daughter Bel-imperia;
For by her hand my Balthazar was slaine,— 205
I saw her stab him.

KING. Why speakest thou not?

HIERO. What lesser libertie can kings afford
Then harmeles silence? Then afford it me!
Sufficeth I may not nor I will not tell thee.

KING. Fetch forth the tortures! Traitor as thou art, 210
Ile make thee tell!¹

HIERO. Indeed?²

Thou maiest torment me as his wretched sonne
Hath done in murdring my Horatio;
But neuer shalt thou force me to reueale
The thing which I haue vowd inuiolate. 215
And therefore, in despight of all thy threats,
Pleasde with their deaths, and easde with their reuenge,
First take my tung, and afterwards my hart!

He bites out his tongue.³

KING. O monstrous resolution of a wretch!
See, Vice-roy, hee hath bitten foorth his tung 220

He might a come to weare the crowne of Spaine,—
I thinke twas so. Twas I that killed him,— 10
Looke you, this same hand was it that stab'd
His heart,— doe you see this hand?—
For one Horatio, if you ever knew him,
A youth, one that they hanged up in his fathers garden,—
One that did force your valiant sonne to yeeld 15
While your valiant sonne did take him prisoner.

VICE. Be deafe, my senses, I can heare no more!

KING. Fal, heaven, and cover us with thy sad ruines!

CAST. Rowvle all the world vwithin thy pitchie cloud!

HIER. Now doe I applaud vwhat I haue acted! 20

Nunc, mors,⁴ cedo manus!

Now, to expresse the rupture of my part,
First take my tongue, and afterward my heart!

¹ This speech as two lines in edd., ending tortures, tell.

² Part of l. 212 in edd. ³ So 1633; not in A.

⁴ 1618, mers caeae; 1623, '33, mens caeae; Haw. mors caede; Hazlitt, mors, [nunc] caede.

Rather then to reueale what we requirde.

CAS. Yet can he write.

KING. And if in this he satisfie vs not,
We will deuise the'xtreamest kinde of death
That euer was inuented for a wretch.

225

Then he makes signes for a knife to mend his pen.

CAS. O, he would haue a knife to mend his pen.

VICE. Heere ; and aduise thee that thou write the troth, —
Looke to my brother ! saue Hieronimo !

He with a knife stabs the DUKE and himselfe.

KING. What age hath euer heard such monstrous deeds?

My brother and the whole succeeding hope

230

That Spaine expected after my discease!

Go beare his body hence, that we may mourne

The losse of our beloued brothers death,

That he may be entom'd, what-ere befall.

I am the next, the neerest, last of all.

235

VICE. And thou, Don Pedro, do the like for vs :

Take vp our haples sonne vntimely slaine ;

Set me with him, and he with wofull me,

Vpon the maine-mast of a ship vnmand,

And let the winde and tide hall¹ me along

240

To Sillas barking and vntamed gulfe²

Or to the lothsome poole of Acheron,

To weepe my want for my sweet Balthazar.

Spaine hath no refuge for a Portingale!

The trumpets sound a dead march, the KING OF SPAINE mourning after his brothers body, and the KING OF PORTINGALE bearing the body of his sonne.

[CHORUS.]

Enter GHOAST and REUENGE.

GHOAST. I ; now my hopes haue end in their effects,

When blood and sorrow finish my desires :

Horatio murdered in his Fathers bower,

¹ 1633, hale.

² So 1633 ; A. grieve ; Haw. gulph, without note.

Vilde Serberine by Pedringano slaine,
 False Pedringano hang'd by quaint deuice, 5
 Faire Isabella by her-selfe misdome,
 Prince Balthazar by Bel-imperia stabd,
 The Duke of Castile and his wicked sonne
 Both done to death by olde Hieronimo,
 My Bel-imperia falne as Dido fell, 10
 And good Hieronimo slaine by himselfe!
 I, these were spectacles to please my soule.
 Now will I beg at louely Proserpine
 That, by the vertue of her princely doome,
 I may consort my freends in pleasing sort, 15
 And on my foes work iust and sharpe reuenge.
 Ile lead my freend Horatio through those feeldes
 Where neuer-dying warres are still inurde ;
 Ile lead faire Isabella to that traine
 Where pittie weepes but neuer feeleth paine ; 20
 Ile lead my Bel-imperia to those ioyes
 That vestal virgins and faire queenes possess ;
 Ile lead Hieronimo where Orpheus plaies,
 Adding sweet pleasure to eternall daies.
 But say, Reuenge, — for thou must helpe or none, — 25
 Against the rest¹ how shall my hate be showne?

REUENGE. This hand shall hale them down to deepest
 hell,

Where none but furies, bugs and tortures dwell.

GHOAST. Then, sweet Reuenge, doo this at my request :
 Let me be iudge and doome them to vnrest ; 30
 Let loose poore Titius from the vultures gripe,
 And let Don Ciprian supply his roome ;
 Place Don Lorenzo on Ixions wheele,
 And let the louers endles paines surcease,
 Iuno forget² olde wrath and graunt² him ease ; 35
 Hang Balthazar about Chimeras³ neck,
 And let him there bewaile his bloody loue,

¹ A. therest.

³ A. Chimeras.

² All edd., forgets . . . graunts.

Repining at our ioyes that are aboue ;
 Let Serberine goe roule the fatall stone
 And take from Siciphus his endles mone ; 40
 False Pedringano,¹ for his trecherie,
 Let him be dragde through boyling Acheron,
 And there liue dying still in endles flames,
 Blaspheming gods and all their holy names.

REUENGE. Then haste we downe to meet thy freends and
 foes ; 45
 To place thy freends in ease, the rest in woes.
 For heere though death hath² end their miserie,
 Ile there begin their endles tragedie. *Exeunt.*

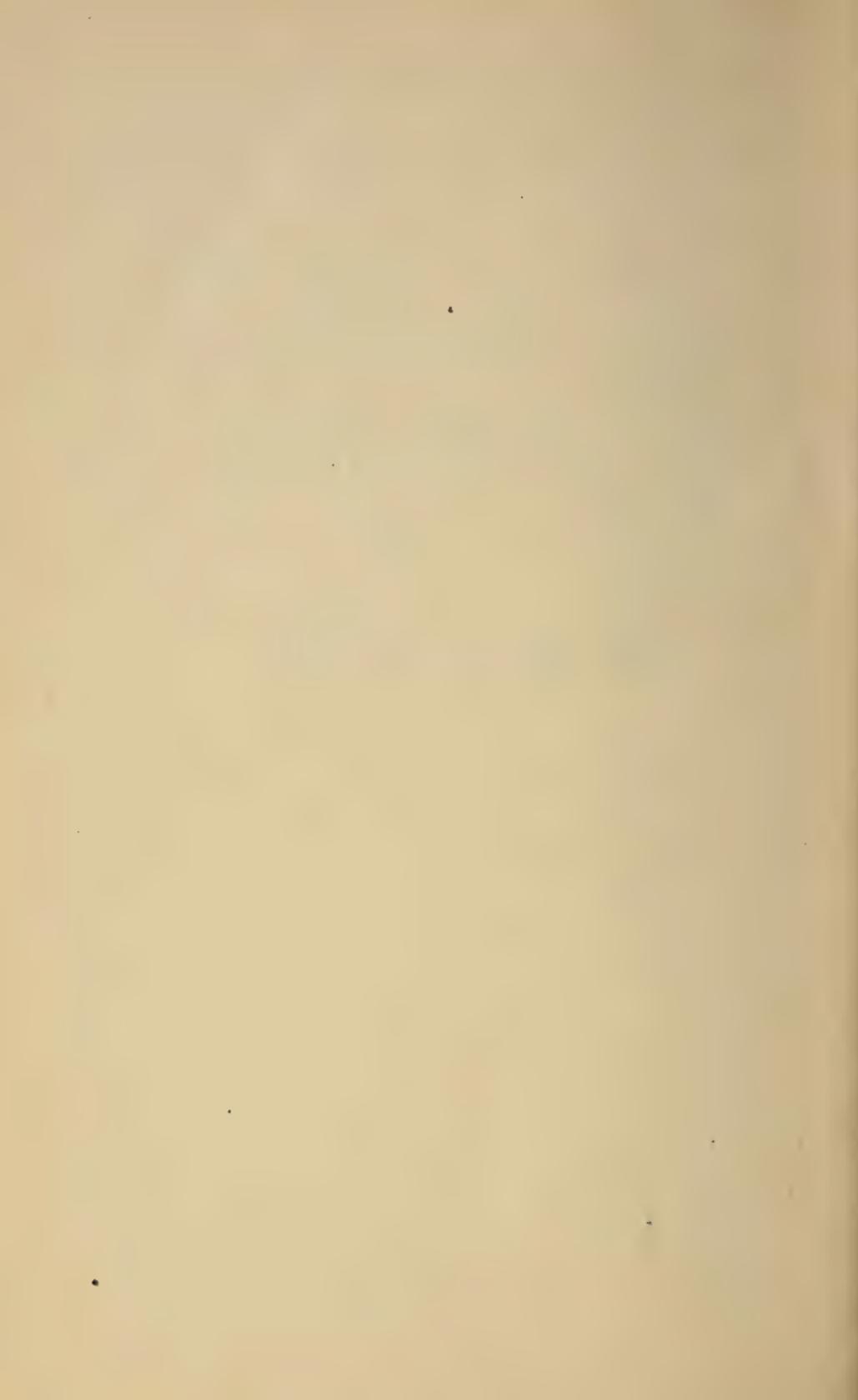
FINIS.

¹ *Misprinted* Pedringaco in A.

² 1623, '33, doth.

END OF VOL. II.

ANNOUNCEMENTS



THE ATHENÆUM PRESS SERIES

Issued under the general editorship of

Professor GEORGE LYMAN KITTREDGE of Harvard University, and

Professor C. T. WINCHESTER of Wesleyan University

	<i>List price</i>	<i>Mailing price</i>
Addison, Joseph: Selections. (Wendell and Greenough) .		
Burke's Speech on Conciliation with America. (Lamont) .	\$0.50	\$0.60
Burns: Selections. (Dow) . . . . .	.70	.80
Carlyle's Heroes, Hero-Worship, and the Heroic in His- tory. (MacMechan) . . . . .	.80	.90
Carlyle's Sartor Resartus. (MacMechan) . . . . .	.80	.90
Collins, Poems of. (Bronson) . . . . .	.60	.70
Cowper: Selections. (Murray) . . . . .	.60	.70
De Quincey: Selections. (Turk) . . . . .	.90	1.05
Elizabethan Lyrics. (Schelling) . . . . .	.75	.85
Gibbon's Memoirs. (Emerson) . . . . .	.75	.85
Gray: Selections. (Phelps) . . . . .	.60	.70
Herrick: Selections from the Hesperides and the Noble Numbers. (Hale) . . . . .	.60	.70
Jeffrey: Selections. (Gates) . . . . .	.60	.70
Jonson's Timber; or Discoveries. (Schelling) . . . . .	.80	.90
Keats: Selections. (Bates) . . . . .	.60	.70
Landor: Selections. (Clymer) . . . . .	.60	.70
Malory's Morte D'Arthur: Selections. (Mead) . . . . .	.80	.90
Old English Ballads. (Gummere) . . . . .	.80	.90
Pre-Shaksperean Drama, Specimens of. (Manly.) <i>In three volumes. Vols. I and II now ready</i> each	1.25	1.40
Seventeenth Century Lyrics. (Schelling) . . . . .	.75	.85
Shakespeare, Sonnets of. (Beeching)		
Shelley: Selections. (Alexander) . . . . .	.80	.90
Sidney's Defense of Poesy. (Cook) . . . . .	.65	.75
Steele: Selections. (Carpenter) . . . . .	.60	.70
Tennyson: Selections. (Van Dyke) . . . . .	.90	1.00
Wordsworth: Selections. (Dowden) . . . . .	.90	1.00

GINN & COMPANY PUBLISHERS

HUDSON'S SCHOOL SHAKESPEARE

For School and Home Use

By HENRY N. HUDSON

Author of "Life, Art, and Characters of Shakespeare"

Editor of "The Harvard Shakespeare," etc.

Revised and enlarged editions of twenty-three plays. Carefully expurgated, with explanatory notes at the bottom of the page, and critical notes at the end of each volume. One play in each volume. Square 16mo. Varying in size from 128 to 253 pages. List price of each: cloth, 45 cents; paper, 30 cents. Mailing price of each: cloth, 50 cents; paper, 35 cents. Per set, \$10.00.

AS an interpreter of Shakespeare and his works Dr. Henry N. Hudson occupies an important place in the first rank of Shakespearean scholars. He not only made a close study of the text, but, what is more important, gave great attention to the poet's thought. A lover of Shakespeare and a firm believer in the educational value of Shakespeare's works, he aimed at making the characters live. His Introductions to the plays are masterpieces of sympathetic and illuminating criticism, well fitted to supplement Shakespeare's own writings.

Many of the best Shakespearean scholars of the last half century have cheerfully acknowledged the eminent ability of Dr. Hudson as an interpreter of Shakespeare. Edwin Booth once said that he got more real help from the original criticisms and suggestive comments given by Dr. Hudson than from any other work on Shakespeare. Sir Henry Irving, too, has stated that Dr. Hudson's criticisms were of greater value to him than were those of any other Shakespearean student. The list of plays is as follows.

<i>A Midsummer Night's Dream</i>	<i>Henry the Fourth, Part I</i>	<i>Macbeth</i>
<i>The Merchant of Venice</i>	<i>Henry the Fourth, Part II</i>	<i>Antony and Cleopatra</i>
<i>Much Ado about Nothing</i>	<i>Henry the Fifth</i>	<i>Othello</i>
<i>As You Like It</i>	<i>Henry the Eighth</i>	<i>Cymbeline</i>
<i>The Tempest</i>	<i>Romeo and Juliet</i>	<i>Coriolanus</i>
<i>King John</i>	<i>Julius Caesar</i>	<i>Twelfth Night</i>
<i>Richard the Second</i>	<i>Hamlet</i>	<i>The Winter's Tale</i>
<i>Richard the Third</i>	<i>King Lear</i>	

OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES: An edition of any play of Shakespeare to which Dr. Hudson's name is affixed does not need a line from anybody to recommend it.

EDWARD DOWDEN, Professor of English Literature and Rhetoric, University of Dublin: Hudson's edition takes its place beside the best work of English Shakespeare students.

GINN & COMPANY PUBLISHERS

HUDSON'S HARVARD SHAKESPEARE

COMPLETE WORKS

By HENRY N. HUDSON, Author of "Life, Art, and Characters of Shakespeare"; Editor of "School Shakespeare," etc.

In twenty volumes, duodecimo, two plays in each volume; also in ten volumes of four plays each. Retail prices: twenty-volume edition: cloth, \$25.00; half morocco, \$55.00; ten-volume edition: cloth, \$20.00; half morocco, \$40.00.

THE Harvard Edition has been undertaken and the plan of it shaped with the special view of making the poet's pages pleasant and attractive to general readers. A history of each play is given in its appropriate volume. The plays are arranged in three distinct series,—comedies, histories, and tragedies,—and the plays of each series presented as nearly as may be in the chronological order of the writing.

A special merit of this edition is that each volume has two sets of Notes,—one mainly devoted to explaining the text and placed at the foot of the page; the other mostly occupied with matters of textual comment and criticism and printed at the end of each play. The edition is thus admirably suited to the uses both of the general reader and of the special student.

HORACE HOWARD FURNESS: A noble edition, with happy mingle of illustration, explanation, and keen, subtle, sympathetic criticism.

LIFE, ART, AND CHARACTERS OF SHAKESPEARE

By HENRY N. HUDSON

In two volumes. 12mo. 1003 pages. Retail prices: cloth, \$4.00; half morocco, \$8.00

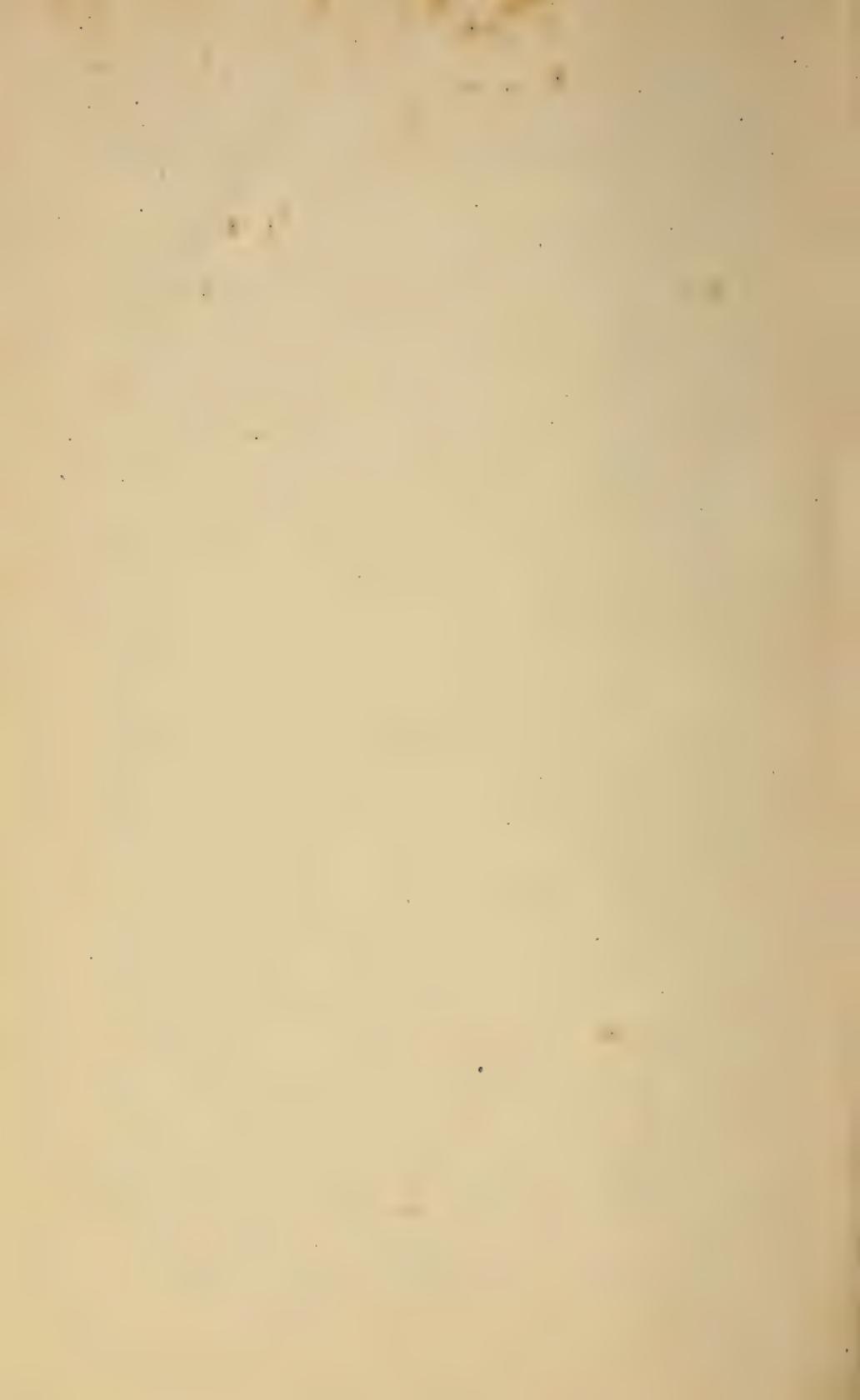
EDWIN BOOTH, the great actor and eminent Shakespearean scholar, once said that he received more real good from the original criticisms and suggestive comments as given by Dr. Hudson in these two books than from any other writer on Shakespeare.

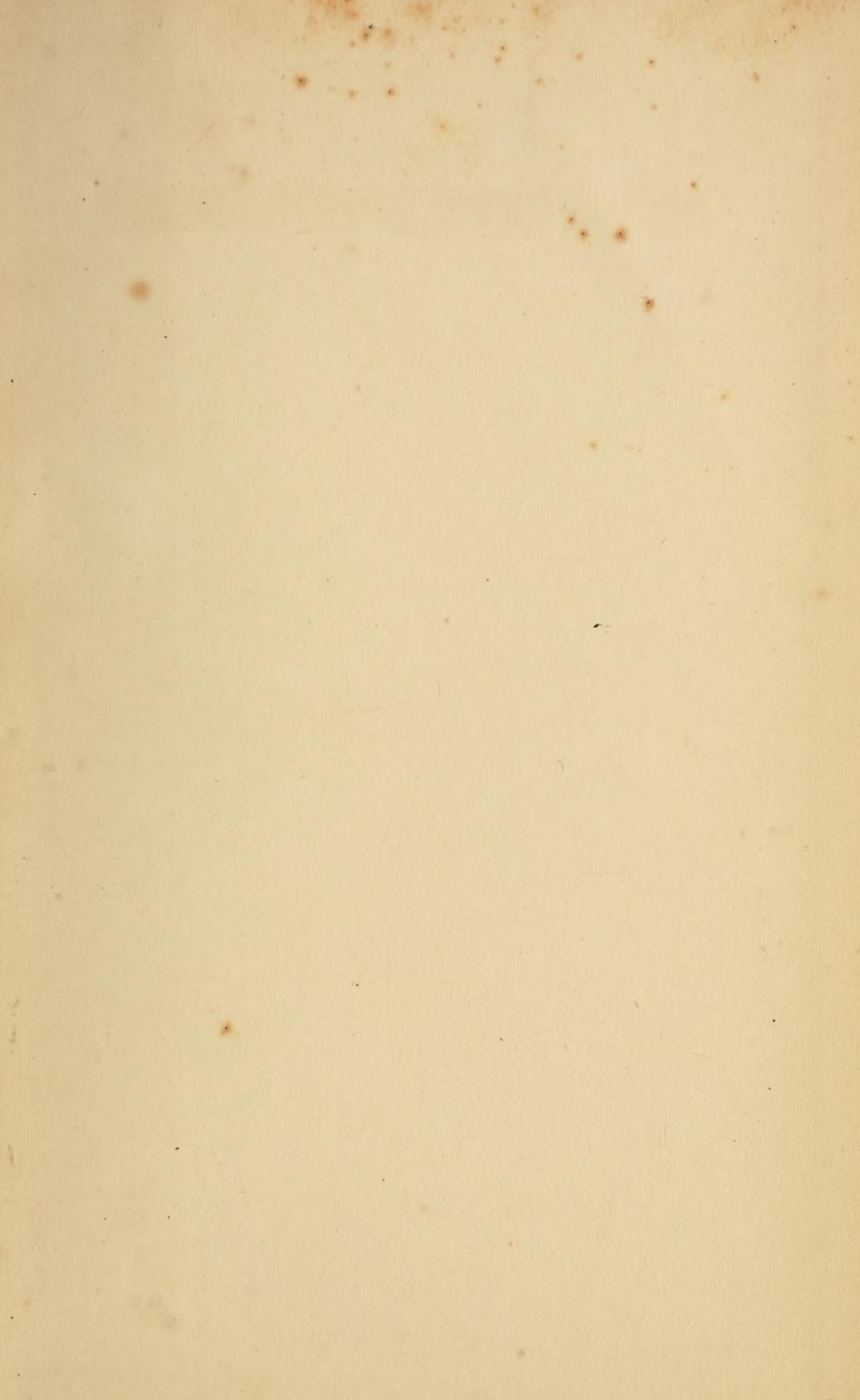
GINN & COMPANY PUBLISHERS

REFERENCE BOOKS ON POETRY

	<i>List price</i>	<i>Mailing price</i>
Alexander's Introduction to the Poetry of Robert Browning. 212 pages	\$1.00	\$1.10
Browne's Shakspeare's Versification . . . . .	.25	
Cook's Addison's Criticisms on Paradise Lost. xxiv + 200 pages	1.00	1.10
Cook's Art of Poetry. The Poetical Treatises of Horace, Vida, and Boileau, with the transla- tions of Howes, Pitt, and Soame. 303 pages .	1.12	1.25
Cook's Cardinal Newman's Essay on Poetry. With reference to Aristotle's Poetics. 36 pages . .	.30	.35
Cook's Sidney's Defense of Poesy. 103 pages . .	.65	.75
Cook's Shelley's Defense of Poetry. 86 pages . .	.50	.60
Cook's What is Poetry? By Leigh Hunt. 98 pages	.50	.60
Corson's Primer of English Verse. 232 pages . .	1.00	1.10
Gummere's Handbook of Poetics. 250 pages . .	1.00	1.10
Gummere's Old English Ballads. 380 pages . .	.80	.90
Hudson's Life, Art, and Characters of Shakespeare. Two volumes. 12mo. 1003 pages. Retail: cloth, \$4.00; half morocco, \$8.00.		
Hudson's Text-Book of Poetry. Selections from Wordsworth, Coleridge, Burns, Beattie, Gold- smith, and Thomson. With Lives and Notes. 704 pages	1.25	1.40
Minto's Characteristics of the English Poets. From Chaucer to Shirley	1.50	1.65
Schelling's Book of Elizabethan Lyrics. 327 pages	.75	.85

GINN & COMPANY PUBLISHERS





NORTHEASTERN UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



3 9358 00694674 0

NORTHEASTERN UNIVERSITY LIBRARIES



3 9358 00694674 0